

Columbia University
in the City of New York

THE LIBRARIES



THE
HISTORY AND CHRONICLES
OF
SCOTLAND.

THE
HISTORY AND CHRONICLES
OF
SCOTLAND :
WRITTEN IN LATIN
BY HECTOR BOECE,
CANON OF ABERDEEN ;
AND TRANSLATED
BY JOHN BELLENDEN,
ARCHDEAN OF MORAY, AND CANON OF ROSS.

VOLUME I.

EDINBURGH :
REPRINTED FOR W. AND C. TAIT.
M.DCCC.XXI.

sionally even in expression, from another copy, in the library of the late Lord Hailes, which has been used in revising the proof-sheets. These copies contain no internal evidence of the precise dates of their publication, which must, however, have been very near to the periods assigned by Herbert. Davidson was appointed Royal Printer in 1540, and the Statutes of James the Fifth, which he printed at the command of that monarch, bear the date of 1541.¹

There is no information to be obtained respecting the engraver of the curious wood-cut which ornaments the last leaf of Bellenden's work, and of which a fac-simile has been executed, for the present reprint, by Mr Lizars. We can scarcely venture to attribute the original to a Scottish, or even to an English artist, among whose works, at this time, we rarely discover either tolerable design or careful execution. It is more than probable that Davidson procured the block from Germany, where the *Formschneiders* had made considerable progress in the art of engraving upon wood, at an early period. The copy of the *Acts of two Parliaments of James the Fifth*, printed upon vellum by him, in 1541, and preserved in the Advocates' Library, contains a fine impression of the same print, to which is subjoined the following monkish distich :

En ego, justicie typus atq. figura, tribunal
Sic ascendo meum : dextra assertoribus alta
Astipulor veri, quibus hec mea lilia merces ;
At si quis contra sentit, demissa sinistra
In stygios jubet ire lacus, gladioq. feriri.

¹ The only copy of this book known to exist, is printed upon vellum, and preserved in the Advocates' Library.

The subject of the print scarcely requires any description. Within a circle of roses are the ordinary emblems of the Trinity; on the right and left appear the Virgin, with an infant Jesus in her arms; Moses, and the Royal Psalmist; St Peter, with the keys of heaven; St Paul, and the Lion of St Mark; with a large assembly of prophets, apostles, martyrs, pilgrims, popes, cardinals, virgins, and matrons. The lower part of the engraving exhibits a scene in purgatory. A more minute description may be found in Herbert's edition of Ames's *Typographical Antiquities*. The general design is full of spirit; and the execution of the engraving has not been surpassed by the most skilful of modern Xylographers.

The original title-page has also been accurately copied upon a reduced scale, for this Work. It exhibits a rude engraving of the Arms of Scotland, a favourite ornament with our early printers. The original may have been executed in Scotland, and its merit is not diminished in the copy by Mr Lizars. The blooming letters used in the course of these volumes were designed and engraved by this ingenious artist. The two small wood-cuts which occur in the fourth and twelfth Books were executed by Mr Bewick.¹

¹ There are in Scotland two copies of Bellenden's Boece, printed upon vellum. One of these is preserved in the library of the Duke of Hamilton; and a more splendid specimen of early typography, and of antique binding, cannot well be imagined. The vellum upon which it is printed is stainless—and the breadth of the margin would satisfy the most fastidious and princely Collector. The boards bear the following inscription, JACOBUS QUINTUS REX SCOTORUM—and on the title-page, the initials J. R^x appear in manuscript. They are, in all probability, in the handwriting of that monarch, to whom the volume appears to have belonged. The

There are several manuscript copies extant of Bellenden's Translation of Boece. The most ancient and authentic of these belongs to Sir Alexander Boswell of Auchinleck. It differs materially from the printed work; and the Editor regrets extremely that the arrangements for the present publication did not admit of collating them. The earlier part, as far as the end of the table to the fourth Book, is wanting. What remains of the table differs in many respects from the printed copy. Then follows the list of Kings, which is a fuller translation of Boece's catalogue. This is succeeded by "Ane Ballat," which is the same with the "Prohem of the History;" but concludes, "Heir endis the ballat, and "beginnis the Preface direkkit to our Soverane Lord "King James the Fyft." The preface occupies four pages and a half of the MS. It is just the Epistle which concludes the printed volume under the title of "The Epistle direkkit be the translatour to the Kingis grace;" but concludes with the following date, which is material, as ascertaining the period at which the translation must have been executed: "At Edinburgh, the last day of August, "the year of God, one thousand five hundredth and "threty-ane yeiris."

It would be vain to attempt an enumeration of the discrepancies that occur in the historical part of the narrative;

other, which is inferior, belongs to the library of the University of Edinburgh. The title-page bears the following quaint inscription: "Thomas Willson Mercator, me Bibliothecæ Edinburgensem dono dedit, A.D.-dom. 1669." This valuable volume seems to have been heedlessly committed to the hands of a tasteless bookbinder, and has, in consequence, suffered much from those operations known by the name of *cobbling*.

but a few of them may be noticed. In the third chapter of the Fourteenth Book, the passage beginning, "It was said
" be thame that followit the opinion of Ballial," runs thus
in the MS.: "It is said that Robert Bruse wes the causs of
" the discomfit of this last feild at Dunbar; for in the be-
" ginning of the battel, he permittit to King Edward to
" come from King Balial, with all his freindis and kynnис-
" men," and then he goes for his reward to the English
monarch. A very remarkable variation occurs in the fifth
chapter of the same Book. In the MS., Wallace's speech
to Bruce is literally translated from Boece; while, in the
printed copy, all his abuse of Bruce is omitted, and an
apology introduced.

In the printed work, the Fifteenth Book commences with an account of the proceedings of Sir James Douglas, which is omitted in the MS., where this Book begins as follows:—

*"And begynis ye xv Buke of ye samyne. How David
" Bruse was maid King of Scotland; and how Erle
" Thomas Randaill was maid Governor yairof. Of his
" gret justice; and of his deith.* Ca. Primo.

" QUHEN King Robert was deceissit in yis maner, his
" sone, David Bruse, was maid king ; and becaus he was
" unable to govern ye realme for his non age, Erle Tho-
" mas Randaill was maid governor ; for nane was yat
" day compair to him in manheid and prudence, except
" Schir James Douglass, quhilk was, as we have schawin,
" yotit to ye Haly Land. Erle Thomas was governour

“ als, iij zeris, during ye infirmite of King Robert ;
“ and becaus ye peple was brokin with lang warris, he
“ thocht best, quhill yai war refreshit, to mak peace
“ with Ingland. Sic thingis done, he set his besiness to
“ governe ye realme in peace, comanding his officiar to
“ do justice in all partis. And yat yai suld not remane
“ unmyndfull of yair warris, he comandit yame to have
“ yair wappynnis & harnes ay reddy to battell ; foryer, to
“ nuriss gud men in justice, and to puniss ewill men,
“ (quhilks repugnant yairto.) He comandit yat saidillis,
“ bridillis, and all uyer instruments pertenand to ye use of
“ husbandry, suld ly yairfurth bayth day and nycht ; and
“ gif ony thing war tane away, yat ye shereff of ye schir
“ suld outhier causs it to be restorit to ye aunaris, or ellis
“ to pay it one his awin burss. Finalie, sic extreme puni-
“ tionis was maid one thevis, yat baith thief and pikry
“ war dantit in all partis ; and mony broken men dantit
“ of yair wild insolence, howbeid yai beleiffit to use sic
“ oppressionis one ye peple in tyme of peace, as yai usit
“ afore, quhen ye cuntry was troublit be civill contentionis.
“ Attour, yat vertue suld be autorist in yis realme, he
“ comandit yat na vagabound peple, menstrualis, nor jug-
“ gillouris, be ressavit in ony touns, without yai had sum
“ craft to debait yair leving, (becaus yai war proffitable
“ allanerlie in tyme of battell.) Be yis way, he purgit ye
“ realme of mony ydill lymaris.”

The corresponding passage in the printed copy is materially different. If Bellenden personally superintended the publication, he must have had some purpose, which cannot now be detected, in garbling his original composition. In the Auchinleck MSS. there is considerably more

of the vernacular language of Scotland than in the printed work.

The Editor is indebted to Sir Alexander Boswell for these collations. He is also indebted to Mr George Chalmers for a variety of particulars relative to Boece and Bellenden; extracted by that gentleman from an unpublished work of his own, on the Printing and Printers of Scotland, which, it is hoped, he will not long withhold from the world.

BIOGRAPHICAL INTRODUCTION.



HE early part of the Literary History of Scotland is involved in much obscurity, and has not been investigated with a due share either of care or of candour. Many eminent writers who adorned the reigns of the Stuarts during the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries, are now in a great measure unknown or forgotten. The difficulties these early writers had to encounter, from the limited sources of information which they possessed,—the absence of authentic records to guide them in their researches,—the romantic and fabulous times of which they wrote,—and the want of science to operate as a check upon credulity, seem entirely to have escaped those critics by whom their labours have been depreciated, and their claims to the gratitude of posterity denied.

JOHN BARBOUR, the father of Scottish Historians, composed his celebrated historical poem upon the exploits of

Robert the Great, about the year 1375 ; and, looking to the remote period at which it was written, it is a work of great merit. The subject is well selected and skilfully managed. *The Bruce* was truly the hero of Scottish chivalry ; and Barbour relates his mighty deeds with all the enthusiasm of a Scottish poet. His narrative is remarkable for simplicity, and his style is by no means deficient in fancy. He appears to have been acquainted with ancient literature ; but it is to be regretted, that the taste of the age should have led him to study Statius and Claudian, rather than Virgil and Horace. He certainly, however, improved the language of his country, “ by a strain of versification, expression, and poetical images, far superior to the age in which he lived.”¹ It is difficult to arrive at any satisfactory conclusion as to the credit due to his historical details, but the researches of Lord Hailes leave a favourable impression of their accuracy.

THE *Scotichronicon*, the earliest general history of Scotland that has reached our time, was compiled during the reign of Robert the Second, by JOHN OF FORDUN,—so named from the supposed place of his birth, a village in Kincardineshire. This venerable Chronicler flourished about the year 1380. His Latinity is barbarous ; but he is admitted to have been *a useful compiler of history*, by a writer² who is never disposed to bestow unmerited commendation upon the early historians of Scotland. Lord Hailes, too, avails himself liberally of the materials fur-

¹ Warton’s *History of English Poetry*, I. 318.

² Pinkerton.

nished by Fordun, and appears to have set considerable value upon them.

THE *Scotichronicon* was continued by WALTER BOWAR, Abbot of St Colm, to the end of the reign of James the First. His materials are valuable and authentic, but they are ill-digested, and his style possesses no attraction.

ANDREW WINTON, Prior of Lochleven, was a contemporary of Bowar. He composed his *Metrical Chronicle* of Scotland about the year 1420, during the regency of Murdoc, Duke of Albany. This curious work remained in manuscript, till that part of it which relates to the affairs of Scotland was introduced to the notice of the world by the late Mr David M'Pherson, in a publication which appeared in 1795. It contains much genealogical information relating to many of the noble families of Scotland.

THE period during which Bowar and Winton flourished, was followed by a long pause in the progress of historical writing in Scotland, while considerable advancement was made in the fine arts. James the First, who had not neglected the culture of his mind during the gloom of his tedious captivity, indulged with great success in poetical composition. His grandson was devoted to architecture and painting ; and the great hall in the Castle of Stirling, with *Roslyn's proud Chapelle*, attest the taste of the monarch and of the age. The unfortunate hero of Flodden Field was fonder of the ways of strife than of the paths of peace ; yet, true to the character of his race, he was not regardless of the interests of literature. His famous

statute relative to Education¹ deserves to be commemo rated, as an enactment worthy of an enlightened legislator. Although it related only to the children of the higher orders, it may be viewed as in some measure the commencement of that system which ultimately resulted in the establishment of Parish Schools, by an act of the Privy Council, in 1616. It was under the auspices of James the Fourth, too, that the typographical art was introduced into Scotland, and that the excellent Bishop Elphinston founded the University of Aberdeen.

WITH the reign of James the Fifth commenced the golden age of the early literature of Scotland. The character of this monarch is familiar to every reader of history. Eminent as a poet, and remarkable for his love of learning, his court was filled with accomplished scholars, and his praises were sung by the poets of his own as well as of foreign lands.

And ye, my soverene, be lyne continuall,
Ay come of kingis your progenitouris,
And writis in ornate style poeticall,
Quick-flowand vers of rhethorik culouris,
Sa freschlie springand in youre lusty flouris,
To the grete conforte of all trew Scottismen—

was the address of a Scottish poet to James ; and it is supposed that Ariosto “ glaunceth at his worth in the person of *Zerbino*, whom he nameth Prince of *Scotland*.”

¹ 1494, c. 54.

² Drummond's *History of Scotland*, Edin. 1682, p. 348.

THE earliest historian during this reign, whose writings have come down to us, is JOHN MAIR. His work, *De Gestis Scotorum*, was written in 1518, and first printed at Paris, in 1521, by Badius Ascensius, with the usual elegance which distinguished his press. Mair was less credulous than the historians who preceded him, and corrected many of the *figments*, as he calls them, of Scottish history. His narrative closes with the marriage of James the Fourth, in 1495. “ He wrote,” says Archbishop Spottiswood, “ howbeit in a *sorbonick* and “ barbarous style, yet very truly, and with a great liberty “ of spirit.”¹ He was followed by a writer of distinguished talents, and unquestionably one of the most accomplished scholars of his age.

HECTOR BOECE²

was descended from an honourable family in the county of Angus, who possessed the barony of Panbride for a long period of years. David the Second, having appointed a council to meet at Perth, commanded the names of all those who had done good service to their country, or whose fathers had been slain at the battles of Duplin and Halydonhill, to be communicated to him, in order that he might have an opportunity of rewarding them. His

¹ *History of Church of Scotland*, p. 68.

² The name is variously written, Boyis, Boyes, Boiss, Boice, and Boece. The last has been adopted as the more usual orthography. It came originally from France, and never appears to have been common in Scotland. It occurs only once in the General Index to the Retours—*Barbareta Boyes incola in Dundee. Inquis. Generales*, 7528.

rewards consisted chiefly of gold, silver, and jewels; but Boece informs us, that the heiress and barony of Panbride, or Balbride, were bestowed upon Hugh Boece, his grandfather, in consequence of his father having fallen at the battle of Duplin. This property still belonged to the family, during the reign of James the Fifth.

Boece was born at Dundee, about the year 1465-6; and hence he assumed the surname of Deidonus. His education commenced at his native place. It was continued at Aberdeen, and afterwards completed at Paris, where, in 1497, he became a Professor of Philosophy in the college of Montacute. During his residence in that university, he had an opportunity of forming an intimacy with many of the most eminent scholars of the time. Among these was Erasmus, with whom, during the after-part of his life, he maintained a regular correspondence. As a mark of his esteem, Erasmus dedicated a Catalogue of his works to Boece, and accompanied the transmission of it with a very eloquent and affectionate letter, in which he reflects, with much complacency, upon his intellectual intercourse with him at Paris, when they were both actively engaged in literary pursuits.¹

¹ This letter was in answer to one which Erasmus had previously received from the Scottish historian, dated at Aberdeen, on the 7th of June 1528. By some accident, it appears not to have reached him till the month of February, 1530. After assigning this circumstance as the cause of his apparent long delay in replying to Boece's communication, Erasmus proceeds,—“Quam, mihi tua consuetudo jucunda fuit HECTOR eruditissime,
“quum ante annos triginta duo Lutetiae in literarum studio pariter cur-
“reremus, licet te pro ingenii tui singulari felicitate multis passibus præ-

In 1500, Boece was invited, by Bishop Elphinston, to become Principal of King's College, Aberdeen, which he had a short time before founded, under the patronage of James the Fourth. This invitation was at first unfavourably received, but, allured by “gifts and promises,”¹ Boece at last yielded to the solicitations of his countryman. He left Paris and his learned friends with regret. Upon returning to his native country, he experienced a kind reception from the Canons of Aberdeen, and immediately entered upon the discharge of his professorial duties. His associate in these was William Hay, a person of whom he speaks with respect and affection. They were both natives of Angus; they had spent their youth together in Dundee; and they had afterwards studied at Paris, under the same masters. By their joint exertions, King's College acquired great celebrity, and became a nursery of excellent scholars. Boece discharged the duties of Principal and Professor with zeal and fidelity. His annual revenue, at this period, amounted to 40 Scottish marks, about L.2, 4s. 6d. of Sterling money,—a sum which, as Dr Johnson observes, was then probably equal, not only to the needs, but to the rank of the President of King's College.²

“currente: tam mihi gratum fuit eam voluptatem ex tanto intervallo
“mihi tuis literis refricari.” At the close of the letter, Erasmus expresses great satisfaction in learning that Scotland was making rapid progress in the liberal arts. For this she was indebted, in no inconsiderable degree, to Hector Boece.

¹ Muneribus et pollicitationibus. *Vitæ Episc. Murth. et Aberd.* fol. 27.

² *Tour to the Hebrides.*

After the death of Bishop Elphinston, in 1514, Boece undertook a work, intended, chiefly, to give an account of the life and character of that excellent Prelate, and which was published at Paris in 1522, in a small quarto volume, now of great rarity, entitled, *Vitæ Episcoporum Murthlaciensium et Aberdonensium*. It begins with the life of Beanus, the first Bishop of Aberdeen, and ends with that of Gawin Dunbar, who filled the See at the time the book was published. Nearly one-third of the whole, however, is occupied with the Memoirs of Boece's patron, which contain an interesting account of his early education, and of his gradual advancement to the high literary and political situations he afterwards filled.

The narrative is particularly minute regarding the foundation and endowment of King's College. The building is described as magnificent in ornament and extent. The Church attached to the College is represented as having been built of hewn stone, and as containing suitable accommodations for Priests and Students. It was richly furnished with marble altars, graven images, pictures, statues, tapestry, garments of gold and purple, candelabras, vases of curious workmanship, vessels for frankincense and holy water, coverings for the altars embroidered with gold, and a chest of cypress-wood, adorned with pearls and gems, in which the relics of the saints were deposited. These were chiefly the gift of Bishop Elphinston. A few of the ornaments were bestowed by Arthur Boece, a brother of our historian,¹ who does not

¹ Boetius (Arthurus) Hectoris frater juris canonici Professor in academia Aberdonensi. Scripsit *Excerpta ex jure Pontificio*, lib. 1. Claruit

himself appear to have been wealthy enough to make donations to the Church of his College ; but it is recorded, that a magnificent altar, with suitable ornaments, was erected by his executors.¹

There were four Professorships in King's College ; the first of Divinity, to which all the others were subordinate,—the second of Canon Law,—the third of Civil Law,—and the fourth of Physic. Ten Bachelors were employed in attending the lectures of the Professors, and in explaining them to the younger students. Similar duties were performed by fourteen students of philosophy ; and there was also a Teacher or Professor, whose duty it was to initiate the members of the college in Grammar, previous to the study of the higher and more important branches of education. In Boece's time, this last department was filled by John Vaux, a scholar of great learning and intense application.²

The endowments of Bishop Elphinston were not confined to his own College and Church. He adorned the original Cathedral of Aberdeen with rich gifts, and completed the great Tower, which Henry Leighton, a former Bishop, had left unfinished. He also commenced rebuilding the choir, in a style of splendour consistent with the other parts of the cathedral ; but this work was

anno MDXX. *Tanner's Bib. Brit. Hib.* The name of Arthur Boyes, the Laird of Balwery, (probably this person,) occurs in the original nomination of the Lords of Session in 1532 ; but it does not appear that he ever acted.—*Acts of Par.* vol. II. 336. Hailes' *Catalogue of Lords of Session*, p. 1.

¹ Orem's *Dis. of King's College*, p. 166.

² *Vite Epis. Murth. et Aber.* folio 29.

not completed at his death. A bridge over the Dee was planned by him ; and he left a large sum for the purpose of carrying it into execution. Nothing can be more delightful than Boece's account of the old age of the Bishop.¹ It was devoted to religion, to learning, and to the pleasures of society. His table, which was splendid, was frequented by the noble and the learned ; and, although abstemious himself, his love of music and of gaiety made him a very agreeable companion. He died, after having filled the See of Aberdeen for 30 years,² full of age and of honour. It is to be regretted that no part of his historical collections has yet been made public. They are preserved among the manuscripts of Sir Thomas Fairfax, in the Bodleian Library.

Boece, as already mentioned, concludes his Lives of the Bishops with a short notice of Gawin Dunbar, to whom he dedicated the book. He urges upon this Prelate the propriety of following out the plans of Elphinstone, for finishing King's College, and for erecting a bridge over the Dee. Dunbar adopted these suggestions, and completed much of what his predecessor had left unfinished. It has been said that Boece prevented him from placing his name and armorial bearings upon a part of King's College, of which he had commenced the building. In consequence of this, the Bishop, in a fit of humour, directed it to be completed, "roughly, without good workmanship or contrivance."³

¹ Senectus ei jucunda et veneranda, non morosa, non anxia, non difficilis, non tristis. *Vitæ Episc. Murth. et Aberd.* fol. 31.

² 1450.

³ Orem's *Dis. of King's College*, p. 175.

During his long residence in King's College, Boece devoted much of his leisure to the composition of a General History of Scotland, which was destined to establish his fame. It was published at Paris, in 1526, in a folio volume, under the title of “*Scotorum Historiae, a prima gentis origine, cum aliarum et rerum et gentium, illustratione non vulgari.*”¹ This edition contains seventeen Books. A second was printed at Lausanne, and published at Paris in 1574, about forty years after the death of Boece. In this, were added the eighteenth, and part of a nineteenth Book, written by himself; and a continuation of the history to the end of the reign of James the Third, by Ferrerius, a learned Piedmontese, who came to Scotland, in 1528, in the train of Robert Reid, Abbot of Kinloss, and afterwards Bishop of Orkney.

Soon after the publication of his History, James the Fifth bestowed upon Boece a pension of L.50 Scots yearly; as appears from the following notices in the Record: “1527, July 14th, Grant to Maister Hector of a pension of L.50 Scots yearly, to be paid him by the sheriff of Aberdeen out of the King's casualties.”² This grant was repeated, two years afterwards, with a variation of the source of payment:—“1529, July 26th, Precept for a let-

¹ The printing was executed, “*Jodoci Badii Ascensii typis et opera, impensis autem nobilis et prædocti viri Hectoris Boethii, Deidonani.*” The title-page contains a curious engraving of the Ascensian Press, within a border of fantastic devices, and surmounted by a medallion figure of a monk, crowned with laurel, and seated at a writing-desk; which Mr Herbert supposes to be a portrait of the author.—*Typographical Antiquities*, vol. III. p. 1471.

² *Privy Seal*, Reg. vi. fol. 70.

“ tre to Mr Hector Boys, professor of theology, of a pension of L.50 Scots yearly, until the King promote him “ to a benefice of 100 marks Scots of yearly value; the “ said pension to be paid him by the customers of Aberdeen.”¹ As the King’s customs of Aberdeen were probably inadequate to answer all the assignments upon them, Boece’s pension was afterwards, in 1533 and 1534, paid, the one-half by the King’s Comptroller, and the other half by the Treasurer. There was paid in this manner one year’s pension, from Whitsunday 1532 to Whitsunday 1533; and another, from Whitsunday 1533 to Whitsunday 1534.

As the payment of the pension does not appear in the Treasurer’s accounts after 1534, it is probable, that, about this period, the King carried into effect his intention, intimated in the grant of 1529, of giving Boece a benefice in lieu of it. The benefice so given, was the Rectory of Tyrie, in Buchan, Aberdeenshire, which he held at his death, in 1536; as appears from the record of the presentation of his successor:—“ 1536, November 22d. The king “ presented Mr John Gardin to the Rectory of Tiry, in “ the diocese of Aberdeen, vacant by the death of the late “ Mr Hector Boiss.”²

No particulars are known respecting the latter years of Boece; but the notice just quoted from the Record, shews that he died in 1536,³ when he must have been about

¹ *Privy Seal*, Reg. viii. 75.

² *Privy Seal*, Reg. x. 177.

³ The authors of the *Biographia Britannica* have erroneously supposed, that Boece died only a short time previous to the year 1550. The only

seventy years of age. According to Gordon of Straloch, this event happened at Aberdeen.

The merits of Boece, as a historian, have been keenly disputed. It was formerly supposed, that the severity of his treatment, by some of the older English writers,¹ originated in passion and malice ; but their example has been followed by two modern critics of his own country, Lord Hailes and Mr Pinkerton. In speaking of our historian, the former seems to lose his usual caution ; and Mr Pinkerton inveighs against him as “ the most egregious historical ‘impostor that ever appeared in any country !’ He would have done well to have recollected an observation of his own, when attempting to justify his favourite hero, James the Fifth, for sanctioning the judicial murder of the young and lovely Lady Glamis upon a charge of witchcraft,— “ that it is no crime not to have been a philosopher before ‘philosophy revived.’”

reason given for this conjecture is, that, in that year, they find his death lamented by Latomus and Wolfius, two learned foreigners, with whom he had been intimately acquainted at the university of Paris.

¹ Lluyd, Lloyd, and Stillingfleet. “ This furious regicide,” says the late Mr David M‘Pherson, in a MS. note on his copy of the *Origines Britannicae*, “ in his hurry to demolish the fictitious kings of the Scots, whom no ‘ sensible Scotsman wishes to rescue out of his hands, sacrifices along with ‘ them all the real and well authenticated sovereigns whose names he does ‘ not find in the genealogy of the direct ancestors of Alexander the Third ; ‘ so that all the branches of the royal family which failed of issue, are, by ‘ this new kind of argument, proven never to have existed.’” It is not to be supposed, that, with such views as these, Stillingfleet could treat Hector Boece with much lenity or candour.

Lord Hailes sarcastically remarks, “ that, although re-formed from Popery, we are not reformed from Boece ;” and it is perhaps true, that the charms of his narrative may have given currency to fables, even after the progress of knowledge, and the light of science, had exposed their absurdity. But what is the conclusion to be drawn from thence ? Certainly not that he is unworthy of all credit, but merely that, in estimating the credit which is due to him, it is necessary to make an allowance for those parts of his works that can be traced to the credulity of the age in which he lived, and of which, with all his learning and accomplishments, it must be admitted that he largely partook.

Anxious to support the claims of his country to a high degree of antiquity, he listened readily to the most extravagant traditions, provided they supported his favourite delusion, and enabled him to add another name to the long line of Scottish monarchs. Many statements were thus hazarded upon authority which modern discrimination would scornfully reject. The dynasty of Scotland was carried far beyond the birth of Christ ; and every reign was full of battles never fought, and of events which never existed, save in the dreams of Monkish tradition.

Boece prefixed to his *Chronicles* a geographical description of Scotland, accompanied by a short account of the manners of the ancient inhabitants. Here, also, we discover symptoms of great credulity, but none whatever of a disposition to deceive. He was fond of Natural History, a science at this period in its infancy. The accuracy which experimental investigation has now acquired was wholly unknown, and many of the great arcana of nature,

which have since been explained, were the subject of ignorant astonishment in the days of Boece. Phenomena which are now common and intelligible, were then viewed as marvellous, and surpassing all comprehension. This may explain the readiness with which Boece, in common with such writers as Herodotus and Livy, lent a willing ear to every report of events deviating from the ordinary course of nature. If an account had been transmitted to him of such a machine, as that invented by Bramah, enabling a single individual to root out a forest-tree, it would have been as difficult for him to believe this as the story told by Sir Duncan Campbell, of the *terrible beist* of Loch Garloll, *futit lik ane ganar*, which was capable of striking down the largest oak with the *dint of her tail*. His account of the sea monks at the isle of Bass, and of the wild men of Norway, with all the accumulation of prodigies which are scattered throughout his History, admit of a similar explanation. We may smile at his simplicity in believing them, but there seems no reason for imputing to him the character of a contriver of fables.

His geographical knowledge appears to have been inconsiderable; and, accordingly, his description of Scotland is inaccurate. It is not surprising that he should give an erroneous account of the boundaries of the Roman provinces; but it does seem remarkable, that he should represent the Clyde and the Forth as rising among the same mountains.

His account of ancient manners is curious and interesting; tinged though it be with the fables of a golden age. Many amiable traits of character are attributed to the ancient inhabitants of Scotland. Every mother nursed

her own child ; and an inability to discharge this maternal duty afforded a presumption of infidelity. The soldier who was found in battle with an unbelted sword, was scourged ; and the warrior who sold his armour, or *laid it to wed*, was degraded. Victory was never sought by treason or falsehood ; and the highest imputation against the character of a chief, was to conquer in any way but by *force of fechting*. The number of stones with which the sepulchre of a warrior was adorned, depended upon the number of enemies he had slain. In peace, justice was strictly administered, and so great a degree of liberality regulated the mercantile transactions of the ancient Scots, that a purchaser was not bound to adhere to his bargain unless the seller gave him something above just measure.

It is generally admitted, that, at a remote period, the Monastery of Iona not only contained a valuable library,¹ but was the general repository of the Scottish records.² Indeed, one of the least enthusiastic of modern writers, has indulged the pleasing reflection, that, from this distant island, the barbarians of the west, in ancient times, “ derived the benefits of knowledge, and the blessings of religion.” The ultimate fate of the literary treasures of Icolmkill is unknown, nor is it now possible to ascertain of what they consisted. Our regret for their loss would be aggravated in no ordinary degree, could we believe that a manuscript of Livy or of Sallust existed among them.

¹ Jamieson's *Culdees*.

² Pennant's *Tour in Scotland*, vol. II. p. 296.

An attempt has been made to convict Boece of deliberate mistatement, by contrasting his account of the removal of the public Records and Manuscripts from Icolmkill to the Priory of Restennet, in Angus, by Alexander the First, with the allegation in a different part of his work, that at a later period a variety of Historical Writings were transmitted to him from Iona. But supposing it to be true, that the Monastery of Saint Columba was pillaged by Alexander, it is not improbable that a *portion* of the manuscripts may have been concealed and retained by the Monks ; and that Boece may have been enabled to avail himself of these remains in compiling his History.

The circumstances connected with the alleged transmission of the Manuscripts to Aberdeen, strongly confirm the accuracy of his statements. A tone of great sincerity distinguishes his narrative. He claims no merit for his investigations, into which indeed he was led, from a desire to follow out an inquiry commenced by a Legate of the Pope, a century before. The tradition of the time was, that Fergus the Second, in assisting Alaric the Goth, in sacking Rome, brought away a chest of books which he presented to the Monastery at Iona. In consequence of a belief in the truth of this story, Æneas Silvius¹ intended, when he was in Scotland, to have visited Icolmkill in search of the lost books of Livy, but was prevented by the death of James the First. His scheme was resumed by Boece, who makes no mystery as to the mode in which he procured access to the Manuscripts. This was effected by the in-

¹ Pius II.

terposition of the Earl of Argyle, and his brother, the King's Treasurer. Boece's History was published while these persons were alive ; and if he referred to unknown or imaginary authorities, he did so before living witnesses, by whom his statements might have been contradicted and refuted.

But the heaviest charge against the veracity of Boece, arises from his reference to the writings of Veremundus, an author whose works are unnoticed by the other ancient Chroniclers of Scotland. Bale, Chambres of Ormond, Paulus Jovius, Buchanan, and Sir Richard Baker, are supposed to quote Veremundus upon the authority of Boece alone, who is thus made answerable for all the fables which have found their way into the early history of Scotland. Now, had it been his deliberate intention to forge an authority, his natural sagacity would have prevented him from adopting the name of an obscure Spaniard, which could carry no weight with it, and could not therefore answer the purpose which he must have had in view. Again, he states that he received the Manuscripts from Iona only in 1525, the year before his History was published ; and hence it has been said that his narrative carries its own refutation with it, because he could not possibly, during this short interval, have made the use which he pretends of the Chronicle of Veremundus. This is no doubt a difficulty, but its existence is much in favour of our author's honesty, who must be *acknowledged to have had a better invention than to have forged so improbable a falsity*, especially in a matter where he was

¹ Mackenzie's *Antiq. of Royal Line*, chap. III.

liable to be contradicted by Argyle, the Treasurer, the whole Monks of Iona, and his cotemporaries in the University of Aberdeen. In short, had the account which he gives of the Manuscripts been fabulous, it is plain that it would have been more skilfully devised, and free from those objections of improbability which have been urged against it, and which are only to be explained upon the supposition that the narrative is true.

It has been inferred that his account of Veremundus is false, because this writer is not quoted by Fordun. But this is really a very lame conclusion. Fordun is not referred to by Boece,¹ and his Chronicle remained in manuscript for about two centuries after the publication of the History of the latter. The silence of Boece, however, would have been a very singular reason for presuming against the existence of Fordun, yet it might have been relied on as leading to this conclusion, with quite as much safety as we can depend upon the silence of the latter in evidence of the inaccuracy of Boece's statements respecting Veremundus. Fordun quotes authors whose writings are no longer extant, yet credit is attached to them, and there is no reason why the positive assertions of Boece should not carry the same weight. It has been suggested by a respectable writer, that Fordun does refer to Veremundus, although under a different name.² The true explanation of the matter seems to be this : Boece suppressed the name of Fordun in order that he might ac-

¹ The various references to the Scotichronicon in the *Croniklis* are introduced by Bellenden.

² Nichol. *His. Lib.* p. 26.

quire the credit of being the earliest general historian of Scotland ; and for the same reason, Fordun did not directly avow the extent to which he transcribed the writings of the earlier Chroniclers.¹

The ingenious author of the *Historical Account of the Ancient Culdees*, hazards a supposition not much to the credit of Boece, that he may have “ destroyed the manuscripts which he had used, that his own history might ‘ be in greater request.’² This notion derives some support from a passage which occurs in the writings of Gordon of Straloch.³ The theory, however, is not very probable in itself, and the motive assigned is scarcely sufficient to account for such an act of treason against the interests of literature, on the part of *the good and the grave* Boece.

It is not at all surprising, that, in transcribing from the Ionian Manuscripts, he should have exercised little of the discrimination necessary for separating truth from falsehood. His anxiety to illustrate the high antiquity, and to perpetuate the fame of his country, made him a ready listener to tales which a writer of a less sanguine temperament would have rejected. But it does appear a harsh inference, that these must have originated en-

¹ *Antiq. of the Royal Line*, chap. III.

² P. 305.

³ Audivi adolescens Abredoniæ ubi Boethius Academiæ prefuit, et fato functus est, illum exemplaria eorum authorum manuscripta delevisse ad conciliandum Historiæ suæ gratiam ut nostræ antiquitates solum inde haurientur, Misellus homo ! Quantum acceperit gratiæ in dubio est.—Nichol. *Hist. Lib.* p. 27.

tirely in his own imagination, or to conclude, with Mr Pinkerton, that he filled up every interval of authentic detail, with an expedition from the isles, headed by a Donald, the “constant ghost of his pages.”

Every person who has looked with any degree of attention into Boece's History, must be satisfied that the narrative is conducted with simplicity, although the statements are enforced with zeal. They obviously come from an author who appears to be not only deeply impressed himself with the truth of what he writes, but anxious to convey the same impression to his readers. There is no apparent exertion of skill in devising incidents. Every circumstance is related as it appears to have been reported to the writer. Many of his statements, too, are made with the hesitation of a man anxious to be accurate. *Quis rem tam vetustam pro certo affirmet*, is an expression we frequently meet with in the course of his History.

These views are strongly supported by the favourable opinion entertained of his moral character by his contemporaries. We have already seen that he was the intimate friend of Erasmus, who had ample opportunities of observing his personal character. They studied long together at Paris, and in after-life maintained a regular correspondence. Such, indeed, was the opinion which this eminent man entertained of the integrity of our historian, that he says of him, he “knew not what it was to make ‘a lie.’¹ His continuator Ferrerius, Buchanan, and Arch-

¹ *General Dictionary*, vol. III. p. 435. Mackenzie's *Defence of Royal Line*.—In the letter formerly referred to, Erasmus, in addressing Boece, takes occasion to remark, *Quod a tuis moribus semper fuit alienissimum mentiri.*

bishop Spottiswood, speak of him in similar terms; yet the wicked wit of an English antiquary has likened the multitude of his falsehoods to the waves of the sea, and the stars of heaven!¹

His intellectual attainments were of a high character. He has been represented as skilled in classical and polite literature, divinity, and philosophy;² and Erasmus invariably speaks of him as a man of an extraordinary and happy genius, and great eloquence.³ He drank deeply from the *well-springs* of ancient learning, and thus acquired a style, which has been said, a little perhaps in the strain of panegyric, to combine the elegance of Livy with the conciseness and simplicity of Cæsar.⁴ His merit as a restorer of classical literature, has been universally admitted; and, from this source, he imbibed a large portion of that fine spirit of independence, which constitutes the great charm of the Greek and Roman writers.

Respecting the opinions of Boece upon matters of government, the Bishop of Carlisle remarks, “That his “principles of polity are no better than those of Buchanan.” That Buchanan should be no favourite with this Prelate, is not wonderful, considering the freedom

¹ Hectoris historici tot quod mendacia quæris
Si vis ut numerem (lector amici) tibi;
Idem me jubeas fluctus numerare marinos
Et liquidi stellas denuumerare poli.

LLUYD.

² Non solum artium liberalium cognitione supra quam illa ferebant tempora insignem; sed humanitate et comitate singulari præditum.—*Buchan. Lib. II.*

³ Vir singularis ingenii, felicitatis, et facundi oris.

⁴ Lesley, Lib. IX.

with which he treats of Kings and of Monarchy. On these topics, however, the older historian writes with more caution than his successor; and it is surely much to his honour, that his History, written at the commencement of the 16th century, and addressed to the reigning Prince, contains not one slavish thought, nor the slightest trace of a servile spirit. He neither disguises the vices nor palliates the profligacy of former Monarchs; but paints them in their most odious colours, as objects of avoidance to succeeding Princes. Indeed, he dwells with perhaps too much satisfaction upon the detail of royal crimes, and the punishments which generally followed them, during the earlier periods of the Scottish dynasty.

In forming a final estimate of the literary character of Boece, we must bear in mind, that when scholar-craft, in this country at least, was rare, he was a scholar, and contributed, by reviving ancient learning, to dispel the gloom of the middle ages;—and that, while the history of his country existed only in the rude page of the Chroniclers who preceded him, or in the fading records of oral tradition, he embodied it in narrative so interesting, and language so beautiful, as to be worthy of a more refined age.

JOHN BELLENDEN.¹

THE accounts given of this accomplished Scholar are very imperfect, and it is doubtful if materials now exist, from which it is possible to extract any satisfactory history of his life.

It has been generally supposed that he was a man of honourable descent, and in some way connected with the ancient family of Achinoul. The authors of the *Biographia Britannica*, upon the authority of Mackenzie, dignify him with the title of *Sir John*; and add, that his father, Mr Thomas Bellenden of Achinoul, was Director to the Chancery in 1540, and Clerk Register in 1541.² There is no sufficient authority, however, for this account of his genealogy. He appears to have been born in the Lothians, towards the close of the 15th century.³ His education was unquestionably liberal; and in 1508, we find his name entered, as follows, in the Records of the University of Saint Andrews: “1508. *Jo. Ballētyn nac “Lau(donice.)”*” It is probable that he remained there for several years, which was necessary before he could be laureated. His education was afterwards completed

¹ This author's name has been variously written, Ballantyne, Ballentyne, Ballendyne, Ballendene, and Bellenden. In the Auchinleck MS. the translator is styled, “Maister John Ballentyne, Channon of Ross.” At the end of the same MS. the name is spelled “Ballantyne.”

² Vol. I. p. 460.

³ Bale says of him, “Ex orientali Scotia oriundus.”

at the University of Paris, where he took the degree of Doctor of Divinity ; and the effects of his residence upon the Continent may be traced both in his idiom and language.

He returned to Scotland during the minority of James the Fifth ; and his writings contain internal evidence of his having been early introduced to the notice of that Monarch. Sir David Lindsay had been his fellow-student at Saint Andrews, and he seems to have been associated with this eminent person in directing the education of his Prince. He addresses James as “ your humyl “ servitor sen your first infance ;” and his remarkable Letter, recommending to the attention of the King his translation of Boece, is written very much in the tone of a zealous preceptor. It explains the kingly duties with a freedom which no other character could have warranted the writer in using.¹

There is some reason to suppose, that, about the year 1528, Bellenden held the situation of Secretary to the Earl of Angus. The circumstances under which James the Fifth was detained at Falkland by that nobleman, with the subsequent escape of the Monarch, are well known. Angus lost no time in pursuing the fugitive, but he was met upon his route to Stirling by a Herald with a royal proclamation, declaring that no member of the family of Douglas should, on pain of treason, approach within six miles of the Court. This order was obeyed by the Earl, and from that hour may be dated the fall of his princely house. He retired to Tantallon, and was soon afterwards, along with his principal adherents, attainted in Parliament.

¹ Croniklis, vol. II. p. 515, 516.

The Rolls exhibit the following entry relative to this subject.

“Quarto, September 1528.

“In presence of the Kingis grace, and Lordes, and the
“estatis of Parliament, comperit *Maister Johnne Ballen-*
“*tyne*, servitour and secretar to Archibald Erle of *Angus*. And gaif in the resonis underwritten. And pro-
“testit efter the forme and tenour of the samin, off the
“quihilk the tenour follows.—Thir are the reasonis that
“we, Archibald Earle of Angus, George Douglas his
“brother, and Archibald Douglas of Kilspindy, allegis for
“us, quhy we suld not be accusit nor compellit to an-
“swer at this time to the summondis of treason made
“on us, at our Soverane Lordis instance.”

There is a subsequent entry on the same day, from which it appears that “*Maister Johnne Ballentyne, Se-*
“*cretar to the Erle of Angus, comperit*,” and gave security, that the Earl should appear and underly the sentence of the Parliament.

It would not, however, have suited the purposes of James, to trust the fate of Douglas to the Great Council of the nation. A jury of his sworn foes was accordingly selected, to which the decision of the question was committed. Forfeiture followed as a matter of course, and the *broad lands of the Douglas* were gifted to those by whom he had been condemned, as the reward of their guilty subservience to the wishes of their Sovereign.

Bellenden, in all likelihood, shared at first in the disgrace of the family of Douglas; and this was probably the dismissal to which he alludes in “*the Proheme of the Cosmographe*.” His poetical talents, however, seem speedily to have restored him to royal favour, and in 1530, he is thus celebrated as a Court poet by Sir David Lindsay,

in his Preface to the *Testament*, and the *Complaint of King James's Papingo* :—

But now of late has start up heastily,
A cunning clerk, which writeth craftily ;
A plant of poets, called *Ballanten*,
Whose ornat writs my wit cannot defyne ;
Get he into the Court authority,
He will precel Quintin and Kenedy.¹

In 1530 and 1531, Bellenden was employed, by the command of the King, in translating Boece's History; and he delivered a manuscript copy of his work to his royal employer, in the summer of 1533. About the same period, he translated a portion of Livy. These dates are ascertained from the following notices in the Treasurer's accounts. In the end of 1530, or beginning of 1531, there is a payment—

- “ To Maister John Ballentyne, be the Kingis precept, for his translating of the *Cronykill*, £30.”
- “ 1531. Oct. 4.—To Maister John Ballentyne, be the Kingis precept, for his translating of the *Croniclis*, £30.”
- “ Item thaireftir to the said Maister Johne, be the Kingis command, £6.”
- “ 1533. July 26.—To Meister Johne Ballantyne, for ane new *Cronikle* gevin to the Kingis Grace, £12.”
- “ Item to him in part payment of the translation of Titus Livius, £8.”
- “ — Aug. 24.—To Maister John Ballentyne, in part payment of the second buke of Titus Livius, £8.”
- “ — Nov. 30.—To Maister John Ballentyne, be the Kingis precept, for his lauboris done in translating of *Livie*, £20.”

¹ Lindsay's Works, 1806. Vol. I. 287.

The literary labours of Bellenden were still farther rewarded by his royal master. The Archdeanery of Moray having become vacant, while the See of Moray was also vacant, the patronage devolved upon the King. Sir John Duncan, parson of Glasgow, Alexander Harvey, a churchman, and Sir Patrick Muir, chaplain, having endeavoured to purchase from the Pope the appointment of Mr James Douglas to the Archdeanery, they were put under prosecution for this misdemeanour, about August 1536. In the subsequent year, Duncan and Harvey were found guilty, and denounced rebels; upon which, the following grant of the Escheat of their benefices for 1536, was given to Bellenden.

1537. Sept. 9.—“ Grant to Maister Johne Bellendene “ of all the fruits of the parsonage and chantory of Glas-
“ gow, and other pensions and benifices, pertaining to Sir
“ John Duncan parson of Glasgow, for the year last past,
“ and of all other property which pertained to the said Sir
“ John, and to Alexander Harvey, with the fruits of the
“ said Alexander’s benefices and pensions for the said year,
“ all escheat to the King, by their being denounced rebels
“ on a decree of the Lords of Council, for having broken
“ the Acts of Parliament, in purchasing and pleying of
“ the Archdenery of Murray, in the Court of Rome, in
“ prejudice of the King’s privilege and patronage of the
“ said Archdenery, the See of Murray being vacant.”¹
Bellenden paid for this grant a composition of 350
merks.

¹ Privy Seal Register, XI. 31.

He got a similar grant of the Escheat of the benefices and pensions of these two persons for the year 1537, and of all their other property, forfeited to the King. This second grant is dated the 8th of April, 1538; and Bellenden paid a composition of £300 Scots for it.¹ He was afterwards presented by the King to the vacant Archdeanery of Moray, and he also got a Prebend in the Cathedral of Ross; but the date of these appointments is uncertain.

Mackenzie, in his Life of John Leslie, Bishop of Ross,² has given a very indistinct and erroneous account of Bellenden, in which he is followed by Goodall.³ These writers confound the translator of the *Chronicles*, with Sir John Bellenden of Achinoul, who was Justice Clerk in the reign of Queen Mary. Mackenzie states that our author was nominated a Senator of the College of Justice in 1554, by the title of Lord Achinoul. Lord Hailes justly remarks, that, laying aside the similitude of names, the only reason for identifying Lord Achinoul with the translator of Boece, arises from the following lines in the “*Proheme of the Cosmography*:”

And fyrst occurit to my remembering,
How that I wes in service with the King,
Put to his Grace in yeris tenderest,
Clerk of his Comptis.

“Dr Mackenzie,” continues Lord Hailes, “gravely

¹ Vol. XI. 69.

² Vol. II. p. 595-600.

³ Scotstarvet’s *Staggering State*, p. 130.

says that *Clerk of the Comptis, is Clerk Register.*¹ Indeed the whole of Mackenzie's account of Bellenden must be received with distrust. It is at variance with that of Dempster, and other writers, who state the period of his death to have been four years before the date of Lord Achinoul's appointment.

Bellenden appears to have enjoyed the royal favour for a longer period than generally falls to the lot of those who devote themselves to the service of Princes. But he at length, excited, and suffered from the envy of his competitors. Subsequent to his disgrace at Court, he became, in conjunction with Dr Laing, an active opponent of the Reformation, and so deeply involved in the disputes to which it led, that he resolved to retire to a country, where his opinions were likely to be more generally popular than they were, at this period, in his native land. The ardent spirits with whom the Reformation in Scotland originated, were unwearied in their exertions ; and the conflict which their opponents had to sustain, was fierce and relentless. To escape from these troubles, Bellenden went to Rome, where he died in 1550. Both Bale and Dempster attest this fact,—the latter, however, who misnames him *James*, with some hesitation : *Obiit Romæ, anno ut puto, 1550.*³

THE writings of Bellenden justify our regret that so little is known of their author. That he was a man of

¹ Catalogue of Lords of Session. Note 16th.

² Coneus, *De Duplici Statu Religionis apud Scotos*, p. 16.

³ P. 107.

genius, and great acquirements, is indubitable. Dempster celebrates him as skilled in every department of divine and human learning. “ Laboriosa cura, et incre-
“ dibili studio artes omnes, humanas atque etiam divinas
“ percepit.” The commendation of the Bishop of Ossory is equally ample ; and there can be no doubt that he was held in respect amongst his contemporaries, as a Poet, a Historian, and a Scholar. The first of these characters recommended him, as we have seen, to James the Fifth, and secured his advancement to situations of honour and emoluments. His poetry abounds in lively sallies of imagination, and discloses the workings of a rich and exuberant fancy. According to his early Biographers,¹ he wrote many poetical pieces, consisting of *Visions* and *Miscellanies*, which are now lost. Those which have reached us, are principally *Proems* prefixed to his prose works. They are generally allegorical, and distinguished rather by incidental beauties, than by the skilful structure of the fable. The story, indeed, is often dull, the allusions obscure, and the general scope of the piece unintelligible. These faults, however, are pretty general characteristics of allegorical poets ; and they are atoned for, in him, by the striking thoughts, and charming descriptions in which he abounds ; and which, “ like the threds of gold, the rich Arras, beautify his works quite thorow.”

The most considerable of his Poems is the *Proheme of the Cosmographe*, which the reader will find reprinted in the present Work. The principal incidents of this piece

¹ Bale and Dempster.

are borrowed from the classical allegory of the *Choice of Hercules*. Its original title was *Vertue and Vyce*, and it was addressed to James the Fifth. The Poet feigns, that worn out with the fatigue of study, he retired to a flowery meadow, to meditate upon the vanity of human pursuits, and upon the vicissitudes of his own fortune. His first disgrace at Court, which, as we have seen, was probably consequent upon the fall of the family of Douglas, is attributed to the baleful and malicious influence of the stars. Wearied, at length, with his melancholy musings, he sinks into a profound slumber, during which, the vision of a young and glorious Monarch, seated upon a throne, rises to his fancy. Two Goddesses appear, sparkling with beauty and rubies, and contending for the favour of the Prince,—the name of the one *Delight*, and of the other *Virtue*. After exhibiting opposite views of the sources of human happiness, and while they are waiting the decision of the Monarch, the Poet awakes, afraid to violate truth, by disclosing the royal selection. The *Choice of Hercules* is not closely followed, and the merit of the poem, as we have it, may be almost entirely attributed to Bellenden. It must have been written between 1528 and 1530, when James the Fifth was in his nineteenth year. The piece is, throughout, full of fancy and poetry, and the metaphors are generally drawn from the most agreeable objects in nature. The transitory character of human happiness is illustrated, by comparing it to the early decay of the rose, the lily, and the violet; and the utter nothingness of an inactive life is likened to the trackless path of a vessel, which leaves no print upon the waves; or of a bird, whose busy wing pierces the air, leaving no

trace of its course. The effect of virtue upon the mind of man, is compared to the healing influence of precious balm upon disease,—to the breath of flowers,—and to the departure of darkness before the resplendent beams of morn.

The *Proheme of the History* is of a graver and less poetical cast. Perhaps the most striking passage it contains is the descent on Nobility. It appears from this piece, that the translation of Boece's history was not intended for general circulation, but for the young nobles, in whose behalf the *Statute of Education* was passed in the previous reign.

Tharefore thow ganis, for na catyve wichtis
Allanerly, bot unto nobyll men.

The *Prolog apoun ye Traduction of Titus Livius*, is of a moral, but not very poetical character. It has been printed in the Dissertation, prefixed to Dr Leyden's edition of the *Complaint of Scotland*. After conciliating Bellona and Apollo, the Poet invokes the accomplished James to be “the Muse and Ledare of his ‘pen;” and perhaps the principal interest of the *Prolog*, consists in representing the Monarch as a patron of literature.

An unpublished Poem of Bellenden's, on the Conception of Christ, is to be found in the Hyndford Manuscript; but the poetical merit of this piece is inconsiderable.¹

¹ This MS., which is preserved in the Advocates' Library, bears the

BELLENDEN'S Chronicle, which closes with the death of James the First, is rather a free version than a literal translation of Boece; and possesses in several respects the character of an original work.¹ Many of the historical errors of the latter are corrected—not a few of his redundancies retrenched—and his more glaring omissions supplied. The general structure of the History, however, remains untouched; and the line of the Kings of Scotland is maintained in all the antiquity and splendour which Boece assigns to it.

Among the more striking passages of the Translation, we may refer to the story of Caractacus. After an interesting detail of his unsuccessful warfare against the Romans, which was closed by the treason of his step-mother Cartumandia, the British Prince appears as a captive at Rome, attended by his wife, and all his kindred. His horses and chariots are exhibited before him, as the

date of 1558; a great part of it, however, has evidently been written at a more recent period.

¹ Bellenden not unfrequently introduces into his narrative passages of considerable length, of which no trace is to be found in the original. Instances of this occur in vol. 2d, pages 297, 299, 373, and 479. The story of the White Hart, which attacked David the First, while hunting on Rude-day; the animadversions on that king's excessive liberality to the church; the remark which it drew from James the First; the defence of Robert Bruce from the suspicion of having occasioned the capture of Dunbar, by withdrawing his vassals from its defence; and the information as to the nickname, and losses of Archibald, Earl of Douglas, are all supplied by the translator. Numerous other instances occur throughout the work. In general, however, Bellenden has rather abridged his author; but he has done it judiciously; the uninteresting passages being those upon which this liberty has been most freely exercised.

monuments of his defeat ; and the spectacle is gazed upon by the Roman people, with a mixture of triumph and of pity. The heart of the warrior is unsubdued even by the presence of the Emperor. He addresses the Roman Potentate with the courage of a patriot King ; and Roman magnanimity immediately rewards him by pardon and freedom.¹

The terror of the Roman army during the first night after their victory over Eugenius, is also powerfully delineated ; and the passage affords an admirable specimen of the force and variety of the ancient language of Scotland.² It has been often quoted. The animating speech too of the Scottish general to his army, on the eve of the conflict with Maximus, is worthy of notice.³

Many characters are described by Bellenden with a vigour and conciseness superior to the original. Of this, his account of Constantine, the third brother of Eugenius, and of “ King Culine and his vicius life,” afford instances.⁴ The unfortunate expedition of the English princes, Osbret and Ella, to the North, with the subsequent terror and desolation of Scotland, exhibits a fine piece of historical painting.

Bellenden is remarkably successful in the translation of Speeches. There are few better specimens of simple and ancient eloquence, than the two orations of Kenneth ;—the first, said to have been delivered to a convention of

¹ B. III. C. xvi.

² B. VI. ch. xvii. ³ Id.

⁴ B. VIII. ch. vii.—B. XI. ch. vi.

his nobles at Scone,¹ for the purpose of procuring their assistance in purging “ his realme of all misdoaris;”—and the second,² delivered in a similar situation, in order to induce his nobles to concur in an alteration of the ancient Scottish law, relative to the succession to the crown. The speech of Bruce to his army previous to the battle of Bannockburn, and that of Alexander Seaton’s wife, “ ane wise woman, above the spreit of man,” are of a different and higher character, and present fine examples of hortatory eloquence.

The wild tale of Macbeth, and the Weird Sisters, to which the genius of Shakespeare has given historical reality,³ does not lose its interest in the translation of the Archdean of Moray.⁴ The tragic poet borrowed liberally from Hollingshed’s English version of the *Croniklis*, adopting, in many instances, not only the thoughts, but the language even of the Scottish historian. This is particularly observable in Malcolm’s feigned account of his own profligacy ; in Macduff’s pathetic valedictory address to Scotland ;⁵ and in the circumstances of that fearful conflict, which terminated in the death of the usurper.⁶ The character of Lady Macbeth, is but obscurely hinted at in the *Croniklis*; and to Shakespeare alone are we indebted for that splendid personification of guilty ambition. In the structure of his drama, the poet avails himself of in-

¹ B. XI. ch. viii.

² B. XI. ch. ix.

³ Lord Hailes.

⁴ B. XII. ch. iii. iv. v. vi. vii.

⁵ Macbeth, Act iv. Sc. 3. Croniklis, B. XII. C. vii.

⁶ Macbeth, Act. v. Sc. 7. Croniklis, Id.

cidents which are to be found in Bellenden's account of the murder of Duffus by Donevald.¹

IT was not till the beginning of the 16th century that the art of printing was introduced into Scotland. In 1507, Chapman and Millar established a press at Edinburgh, under a patent. They printed a variety of Poetical Tracts in 1508; and the first volume of the *Breviary of the Church of Aberdeen* in 1509. The second volume of this work was printed in 1510. Bellenden's *Chronicle* was certainly the next work of any consequence printed in Scotland. It has been already stated, that the precise date of its publication is unknown. Assuming, however, that there were more editions of the work than one, and that they must have been printed previous to 1541, when Davidson obtained the situation of King's Printer; we may safely conclude, that it is one of the earliest and most considerable specimens of Scottish Typography which exists.

It is, besides, the purest specimen we possess of the early prose of Scotland; and it affords a mine, from which the richest ore of the ancient language of the Lowland Scots may be extracted. The invaluable Dictionary of Dr Jamieson has rescued that language from the oblivion into which it was hastening; and, in it, liberal use has been made of the stores of Bellenden. That the Lowland Scotch has claims to a high degree of antiquity, seems now generally admitted. The notion that it is derived

¹ Book XI. chap. iv.

exclusively from the Anglo-Saxon, has been discarded, while its origin has been successfully traced to the ancient Gothic. It is a rich, varied, and powerful dialect. The mixture of French words is easily accounted for, by the early intercourse which existed between the two nations. Indeed, many families of French and Norman extraction, settled in Scotland as early as the reign of Malcolm Canmore ; and at subsequent periods, migrations of this sort became extremely frequent. The natives of France brought their language along with them ; and as the dialect of the court and of the provinces of Scotland was the same, the use of Norman-French became prevalent. The language of the Continent was thus directly imported into Scotland ; and, accordingly, we find many French words and phrases in our early prose writers, which at no period have formed any part of the dialect of England. This subject might be farther illustrated by a reference to the similarity between the early Romances of France and of Scotland. Many of the tales collected in the *Fabliaux* of Le Grand, were familiar to the peasantry of Scotland in the early part of the Sixteenth Century. But what has been already stated, goes far to establish, that we are not indebted to our Southern neighbours for the earlier Continental contributions to our language. These came to us directly from France, while the stock upon which they were grafted, was of Gothic origin.

Among the works of Bellenden, Bale enumerates a tract on the Pythagoric Letter, and a discourse upon Virtue and Pleasure, neither of which are extant. Other writers state that he wrote a Life of Pythagoras. With respect to the discourse upon Virtue and Pleasure, it is not at all improbable, that Bale may refer to the *Pro-*

heme of the Cosmographe, the allegorical character of which has been already explained. The Epistle to James the Fifth, which has also been mentioned as a distinct work, is obviously the letter subjoined to the translation of Boece. This sufficiently appears from the first words of it, as given by Bale, *Erasmus Roterodamus, in libro de*. The epistle “ Direckit be ye translatoure to the kyngis grace,” commences “ Erasmus Roterodamus, in his buke.”

Bale seems to imagine that Bellenden composed a piece, *super quodam somnio*, but it is more than probable that this too refers to the *Proheme of the Cosmographe*, which assumes the form of a vision. The last article in Bale’s Catalogue of the writings of Bellenden, is a book said to contain *Diversi generis Carmina*. This is not extant; nor is there any satisfactory evidence that such a work was ever published. Dr Campbell states that several of Bellenden’s poems were in the possession of Mr Lawrence Dundas, Professor of Humanity in the University of Edinburgh; and others are still supposed to exist in the repositories of private families.¹ Bale mentions it as a report, without, however, giving any opinion as to its truth, that Bellenden continued the History of Boece to the year 1536. This certainly was at one period his intention. After alluding, in the *Proheme of the History*, to what he has already done, he continues,

And yet becaus my time hes bene so schort ;
I think quhen I have opportunitie
To ring thair bell into ane othir sort.

¹ “ It is certain that many of his writings are in the hands of persons of distinction in Scotland, who are careful preservers of such kind of curiosities”—*Biograph. Britan.*

THE classical acquirements of Bellenden are attested by a translation of the First five Books of Livy, executed at the command of James the Fifth. A copy of this manuscript work, which is not noticed by our author's earlier biographers, was presented to the Advocates' Library, by the late Lord Elliock, to whom it appears to have belonged in 1730. It is in excellent order ; and the hand-writing may be attributed to the early part of the Sixteenth Century ; but whether it is that of the Archdean of Moray, must remain a matter of doubt. The notices which have already been quoted from the Treasurer's Accounts, shew that the Translation of Livy was executed in 1533.

The version of the Roman Historian, seems to be rendered with the same freedom and spirit which distinguishes that of Boece ; and it is to be hoped, that at no very distant period, so valuable a relict of our early literature will be rescued from the obscurity in which it at present remains. To the specimens of it which are already before the public in Dr Leyden's *Introduction to the Complaint of Scotland*, may be added, the appeal of the elder Horatius in behalf of his son, which is very happily translated :

“ O Romanis (said he) have ze sa feirs and innative
“ cruelte in zoure hartis, yat ze may se him bound under
“ ye galloas w^t grete torment and punycioun : quhom
“ ze saw laitlie decorit and triumphand, w^t hie victorie of
“ zor inemyies. Ibelief ye Albanis hisunmerciful fais my
“ nocht behald sa terribil sicht and cruelte done to him.
“ Pas yow Burreo, and bynd yai handis, quhilkis latelie
“ quhen yai war armit, conquest sa hie empire to Romane

“ pepill : Pas yow Burreo, and covir ye hede of yat cam-
 “ pioun, quhilk is ye deliverare of yis ciete fra thirldome:
 “ Hing up his body in ane unchancy tre : Skurge him now
 “ within ye Pomerie, amang ye horaciane Pillaris ; and
 “ spulezeis conquest be him of inemyis ; or ellis skurge
 “ him utouth ye Pomerie amang ye sepulcuris of Cura-
 “ cianis. Ze can have him to na maner of placis within
 “ zoure senzeorie ; bot his grete meritis, and glore of vic-
 “ torie, sall ay deliver him fra sic schamefull and vile puny-
 “ tioun.”

It appears from the poetical *Prologue*, that it was Bellenden's original intention to have translated the whole of Livy; but the following verses subjoined to it in a later hand, in the copy already referred to, lead to the inference, that the translator never completed more than five Books of his task :

Fyve buikes ar here by Ballantyne translated ;
 Restis zet ane hundred threttie fyve behind,—
 Quhilkus if ye samyn war alsweill compleated,
 Wald be ane volume of ane monstrous bind.—
 Ilk man perfytes not quhat they aince intend,
 So fraill and brittle ar our wretched dayes :
 Let sume man then begin qr he doeth end,
 Give him ye first, tak yame ye secund praise :
 No, no ! to Titus Livius give all,
 That peerles prince for feattis historicall.

A. HOME, *St Leonardes.*

IN giving to the Public this reprint of the *Croniklis of Scotland*, it may be safely stated, that the lover of antique lore will find it rich in *barbaric pearl and gold*. The former may be rudely set, and the latter coarsely wrought;

but the intrinsic value of the gem and of the metal remains the same. The rust of age has not obscured the fancy and imagery with which the work abounds; and if all the inaccuracies of Boece are not corrected, and all his fables not discarded, it can only be said, in apology for the venerable Archdean, that *some degree of credulity may be excused, in an age when all men were credulous.*



SUBSCRIBERS.

REV. L. ADAMSON, Cupar, Fife.
LIBRARY OF THE FACULTY OF ADVOCATES.
GABRIEL ALEXANDER, Esq. Advocate.
THOMAS ALLAN, Esq.
JOSEPH BAIN, Jun. Esq. Glasgow.
THE HON. LORD BANNATYNE.
ROBERT BELL, Esq. Advocate.
THE MOST NOBLE THE MARQUIS OF BUTE.
ALEXANDER CAMPBELL, Esq.
ELIAS CATHCART, Esq. Advocate.
WILLIAM CATHCART, Esq.
JAMES CHEAPE, Esq. of Stratyrum.
ANDREW CLEPHANE, Esq. Advocate.
JOHN CLERK, Esq. of Eldon, Advocate.
HENRY COCKBURN, Esq. Advocate.
JOHN COCKBURN, Esq.
GEORGE CRANSTOUN, Esq. Advocate.
PATRICK CRICHTON, Esq.
THE HON. JOHN LESLIE CUMING, General.
JOHN CUNNINGHAM, Esq. Advocate.
J. G. DALYELL, Esq. Advocate.
CAPTAIN DAVIDSON.
JAMES DUNDAS, Esq. W.S.
ROBERT DUNDAS, Esq. of Arniston, Advocate.
ALEXANDER DUNLOP, Esq. Advocate.
ROBERT FERGUSON, Esq. of Raith.
THE RIGHT HON. THE EARL OF FIFE.
JOHN FULLERTON, Esq. Advocate.
J. T. GIBSON, Esq.
GEORGE GORDON, Esq. of Hallhead.
ROBERT GRÆME, Esq. Advocate.
PETER HALKERSTON, LL.D.
ALEXANDER HENDERSON, Esq. Surveyor-Gen. of the Post-Office.
THE HON. LORD HERMAND.
LAURENCE HILL, Esq. Glasgow.
DAVID IRVING, LL.D.
HENRY JARDINE, Esq.
FRANCIS JEFFREY, Esq. Advocate.
JAMES KEAY, Esq. Advocate.
VISCOUNT KEITH.
SIR ALEXANDER KEITH, of Ravelston and Dunnottar.
T. F. KENNEDY, Esq. of Dunure, M.P.

SUBSCRIBERS.

JOHN KERR, Esq. Glasgow.
JOHN KIRKPATRICK, Esq. Advocate.
MR DAVID LAING.
SIR THOMAS DICK LAUDER, of Fountainhall, Bart.
MR W. H. LIZARS.
J. G. LOCKHART, Esq. Advocate.
ÆNEAS MACBEAN, Esq. W.S.
WILLIAM M'DOWALL, Esq. of Barr.
WILLIAM M'DOWALL, Esq. Advocate.
J. W. MACKENZIE, Esq. W.S.
J. N. MACLEOD, Esq. of Macleod.
JAMES MAIDMENT, Esq. Advocate.
THOMAS MAITLAND, Esq. yr. of Dundrennan, Advocate.
GILBERT LAING MEASON, Esq. of Lindertis.
MR ALEXANDER MILNE, Forres.
JAMES MONCRIEFF, Esq. Advocate.
J. S. MORE, Esq. Advocate.
J. A. MURRAY, Esq. Advocate.
JAMES NAIRNE, Esq. W.S.
R. A. OSWALD, Esq. of Auchencruive.
ALEXANDER OSWALD, Esq. Advocate.
MESSRS PAYNE & FOSS, Pall Mall, London.
ROBERT PITCAIRN, Esq. W.S.
JAMES RENNIE, Esq. Civil Engineer.
JOHN RICHARDSON, Esq. London.
PATRICK ROBERTSON, Esq. Advocate.
ANDREW RUTHERFURD, Esq. Advocate.
SIR WALTER SCOTT of Abbotsford, Bart.
CHARLES SELKIRK, Esq. Accountant.
SIR SAMUEL SHEPPERD, LORD CHIEF BARON.
THOMAS SIVWRIGHT, Esq. of Meggetland.
ANDREW SKENE, Esq. Advocate.
RIGHT HON. EARL SPENCER, K.G., *Large Paper.*
SIR SAMUEL STIRLING, Bart. Advocate.
WILLIAM STIRLING, Esq.
JAMES TAIT, Esq.
MR A. THOMSON, *Large Paper.*
ALEXANDER THOMSON, Esq. Banchory.
THOMAS THOMSON, Esq. Advocate.
MR ROBERT TRIPHOOK, London—3 Copies.
JAMES TYTLER, Esq. of Woodhouselee, W.S.
P. F. TYTLER, Esq. Advocate.
GEORGE VEITCH, Esq. W.S.
JAMES WEDDERBURN, Esq. His Majesty's Solicitor-General.
ROBERT WHIGHAM, Esq. of Lochpatrick, Advocate.
MR ISAAC WILSON, Hull—3 Copies, *Large Paper.*
THOMAS GUTHRIE WRIGHT, Esq. W.S.
LIBRARY OF WRITERS TO HIS MAJESTY'S SIGNET.

20 Heir beginnis the hystory and
croniklis of Scotland.



¶ The Excusation of the Prentar.



¶ Nygne of man be inclinatioun
In sindry wyle is geuin, as we se.
Sum men ar geuin to detractioun,
Inuy, displesir, or malancolie,
And to thair nychbouris hes no cherite.
Sum ar so nobill and full of gentilnes,
Thay luf no thing bot Joy and merynes.

¶ Sum ar at vndir, and sum maid vp of nocth.
Sum men luffis peace, and sum desiris weir.
Sum is so blyth in to his mery thocht,
He curis nocth; so he may perseueir
In grace and fauour of his lady deir.
Sum boldin at othir in maist cruell feid
With lance and dagar rynnis to the deid.

¶ Ane hes that mycht ane hundreth weil sustene,
And leiffis in wo and pennance at his table.
And of gud fallois comptis nocth ane bene,
His wzechit mynd is so insaciable.
As heuin and hell wer no thing bot ane fable
He birnis ay, but lycht to gud or euil,
And rynnis with all his baggis to the deuil.

¶ And I the prentar that dois considir weil
Thir sindry myndis of men in thair leuing,
Desiris nocth bot on my laubour leil
That I mycht leif, and of my Just wynnyng
Mycht first pleis God, and syne our noble Kyng.
And that ze reders housum and attent
Wer of my laubour and beslynes content.
And in this wark that I haue heic assailzeit
To byng to lycht, maist humely I exhort
Zow nobill reders, quhare that I haue failzeit
In letter, sillabe, poyntis lang, or schort.
That ze will of zour gentrice it support.
And tak the sentence the best wyse ze may,
I fall do better (will God) ane othir day.

¶ Finis.

THE CONTENTIS

OF

THIS BUKE.



N the first, the Proheme apon the Cosmographie; schaw-
and the fine of vicius and virtewis leiffing, and causis
quhy the translatoure tuke this werk on hand.

The discriptioun of Scotland; devidit in rubrikis and
cheptouris.

Ane compendious narratioun of the auld institutionis, maneris,
and leving of Scottis; with ane morall doctrine, deploring sindry re-
cent and evill consuetudis brocht in this realme, to the gret diffor-
mite of the pepill now present in the samin.

Ane schort recapitulation of all kingis of Britane, fra the first be-
ginning thairof, to the empire of King Harry the VIII., regnand now
with gret felicite abone Inglysmen.

The table of the historie; contenand every buke and cheptour
craftely severit be thaimself.

The names of all kingis and governouris of Scotland sen the realme
began; schawing, in quhat bukis and cheptouris of the historie fol-
lowing, thair livis and marciall dedis sal be esalie foundin.

The proheme apon the historie; schawand, breiffelie, the con-
tentis and maist notable thingis in this buke.

The beginning of Scottis, and quhy thay wer callit with that name;
thair happy cuming out of Egipt to Spanye, Ireland, the Ilis of Al-
bion, and to that regioune that wes callit be thaim Scotland.

The vailleant and weirlie dedis of all kingis, princis, governouris,
and chiftanis of Scotland; with maist dangerus and terribil battallis
fochtin, be sindry chancis of fortoun, aganis the Britonis, Pichtis,
Saxonis, Inglysmen, and Danis.

The beginning of Pichtis; thair confideratioun with Scottis in amite, blud, and freindschip; thair weris lang continewing aganis the Romanis, be support of Scottis; thair exterminioun and finall expulsiou out of Albion be the weris of Scottis.

The beginning of Britonis; thair lang weris, persevering aganis the Romanis. How thai wer subdewit, and thair realme maid tributar in forme of province; and, finalie, doung out of Britane in Walis be weris of Saxonis.

The cuming of Saxonis in Britane; thair weris, slichtis, and marciall dedis, wrocht, be sindry chancis, aganis the Britonis, Scottis, and Pichtis.

The weris of Ingismen, eftir the cuming of Saxonis.

Mony uncouth merveillis and wounderfull thingis, schawin ay in the samin season as thay fell; with the names of maist notable Clerkis and Sanctis, levand for the time in the warld.

Mony grave concionis, orisonis, consultationis, and epistillis, contenand richt fructuus and morall doctrinis; with sa resolute and degest responses, that na othir buke sal be foundin mair proffitable nor pleasand to the reders.

Ane epistill, direckit be the translatoure to the Kingis grace, in the letter end of this buke; inducing his Hienes to frequent reding of the historie precedent.

FINIS.

Followis the Proheme apone the Cosmographicie.

THE
PROHEME
OF THE
COSMOGRAPH.



UHEN silvir Diane, ful of bemis bricht,
Fra dirk eclips wes past, this othir nicht,
And in the crab, hir propir mansion, gane ;
Artophilax contending at his micht,
In the gret eist, to set his visage richt ;
I mene, the ledar of the Charle-wane ;
Abone our heid wes the ursis twane :
Quhen sterris small obscuris in our sicht,
And Lucifer left twinkland him allane :

The frosty nicht, with hir prolixit houris,
Hir mantill quhit spred on the tender flouris :
Quhen ardent lauboure hes addressit me
Translait the story of our progenitous,
Thair gret manheid, hie wisdome, and honouris ;
Quhen we may cleir, as in ane mirroure, se
The furius end sum time of tirannie ;
Sum time the glore of prudent governouris :
Ilk stait apprisit in thair faculte.

My wery spreit desiring to repres
My emptive pen of frutles besines,

THE PROHEME

A walkit furth to tak the recent aire ;
 Quhen Priapus, with stormy weid oppres,
 Raqueistit me, in his maist tendernes,
 To rest ane quhile amid his gardingis bare.
 Bot I no maner couth my mind prepare
 To set aside unpleasand hevines,
 On this and that contemplating solitaire.

And first occurrit to my remembiring,
 How that I wes in service with the King ;
 Put to his Grace in yeris tenderest,
 Clerk of his Comptis, thought I wes inding,
 With hart and hand, and every othir thing
 That might him pleis in ony maner best ;
 Quhill hie invy me from his service kest,
 Be thaim that had the Court in governing,
 As bird but plumes heryit of the nest.

Our life, our giding, and our aventuris,
 Dependis from thir hevinlie creaturis
 Apperandlie be sum necessite.
 For thought ane man wald set his besy curis,
 So far as laboure and his wisdome furis,
 To fle hard chance of infortunite ;
 Thought he eschew it with difficulte ;
 The cursit weird yit ithandlie enduris,
 Gevin to him first in his nativite.

Of erdlie stait bewaling thus the chance,
 Of fortoun gud I had na esperance.
 So lang I swomit in hir seis deip,
 That sad avisng with hir thochtful lance,
 Couth find na port to ankir hir firmance ;
 Quhill Morpheus, the drery god of sleip,
 For very reuth did on my curis weip,
 And set his sleuth and deidly contenance
 With snorand vanis throw my body creip.

Me thocht I was in to ane plesand meid,
 Quhare Flora maid the tender blewmis spreid,
 Throw kindlie dew and humouris nutritive ;
 Quhen goldin Titan, with his flammis reid,
 Abone the seis rasit up his heid ;
 Diffounding down his heit restorative
 To every frute that nature maid on live,
 Quhilk wes afore in to the winter deid,
 For stormis cald and frostis penitrive.

Ane silver fontane sprang of watter cleir
 In to that place quhare I approchit neir.
 Quhare I did sone espy ane fellown reird
 Of courtly gallandis in thair best maneir,
 Rejosing thaim in season of the yeir,
 As it had bene of Mayis day the feird.
 Thair gudlie havingis maid me nocht affeird.
 With thaim I saw ane crownit King appear,
 With tendir downnis rising on his beird.

Thir courtlie gallandis settand thair intentis
 To sing, and play on divers instrumentis,
 According to this Princis appetit ;
 Two plesand ladyis come pransand ouir the bentis ;
 Thair costlie clethin schew thair mighty rentis.
 Quhat hart nicht wis, thay wantit nocht ane mit ;
 The rubeis schone apone thair fingeris quhit ;
 And, finalie, I knew, be thair consentis,
 This ane, Virtew ; that othir, hecht Delite.

Thir Goddesses arrayit in this wise,
 As reverence and honoure list devise,
 Afore this Prince, fell down apon thair kneis ;
 Sine dressit thaim in to thair best avise,
 So far as wisdome in thair power lyis,
 To do the thing that nicht him best appleis,
 Quhare he rejosit in his hevinly gleis ;

THE PROHEME

“ Gif thou desiris in the seis fleit
 “ Of hevinly blis, than me thy lady treit ;
 “ For it is said be clerkis of renoun,
 “ Thair is na plesir in this eird so gret
 “ As quhen ane luffar dois his lady meit,
 “ To quikin his life of mony deidly swon.
 “ As hiest plesir but comparison,
 “ I sall the geif, into thy yeris swete,
 “ Ane lusty halk with mony plumis broun ;

 “ Quhilk sal be found so joyus and plesant,
 “ Gif thou unto hir mery flichtis hant,
 “ Of every blis that may in erd appeir,
 “ As hart will think, thou sall no plente want ;
 “ Quhill yeris swift, with quhelis properant,
 “ Consume thy strenth, and all thy bewte cleir.”
 And quhen Delite had said on this maneir,
 As rage of youtheid thocht maist relevant,
 Than Virtew said, as ye sall eftir heir :

 “ My landis braid, with mony plentuus schire,
 “ Sall gif thy Hienes, gif thou list desire,
 “ Triumphant glore, lie honoure, fame devine ;
 “ With sic pissance, that thaim na furius ire,
 “ Nor werand age, nor flame of birnand fire,
 “ Nor bitter deith, may bring unto rewine.
 “ Bot thou mon first insuffer mekill pine,
 “ Abone thy self that thou may have empire :
 “ Than sall thy fame and honoure have na fine.

 “ My realme is set among my fois all ;
 “ Quhilkis hes with me ane weir continewall,
 “ And evir still dois on my bordour ly ;
 “ And, thought they may no wayis me ouirthrall,
 “ Thay ly in wait, gif ony chance may fall
 “ Of me sum time to get the victory.

“ Thus is my life ane ithand chevalry.
 “ Laubour ine haldis strang as ony wall,
 “ And no thing brekis me bot slogardy.

“ Na fortoun may aganis me avail,
 “ Thoacht seho with cludy stormis me assaill.
 “ I brek the streme of scharpe adversete.
 “ In weddir louin and maist tempestius hail,
 “ But ony dreid, I beir ane equall saill ;
 “ My schip so strang that I may nevir de.
 “ Wit, reason, manheid, governis me so hie,
 “ No influence nor sterries may prevaill
 “ To regne on me with infortunite.

“ The rage of youtheid may noct dantit be,
 “ But gret distres and scharpe adversete ;
 “ As be this reason is experience :
 “ The finest gold or silver that we se,
 “ May noct be wrocht to our utilite,
 “ But flammis kene and bitter violence.
 “ The more distres, the more intelligence.
 “ Quhay salis lang in hie prosperite,
 “ Ar sone ouirset be stormy violence.

“ This fragill life, as moment induring,
 “ But dout, sall the and every pepill bring
 “ To sickir blis, or than eternall wo.
 “ Gif thou be honest lauboure dois ane thing,
 “ Thy panefull laubour sall vanes but taryng,
 “ Howbeit thy honest werkis do noct so :
 “ Gif thou be lust dois ony thing also,
 “ The schamefull deid, without dissevering,
 “ Remanis ay, quhen plesair is ago.

“ As carvell ticht fast tending throw the see,
 “ Levis na prent amang the wallis hie ;
 “ As birdis swift, with mony besy plume,

THE PROHEME

" Peirsis the aire, and wait nocht quhare thay fle ;
 " Siclik our life, without activite,
 " Giffis na frut, howbeit ane schado blume.
 " Quhay dois thair life into this erd consume
 " Without virtew, thair faine and memorie
 " Sall vanis soner than the reky fume.

 " As watter purgis and makis bodyis fair ;
 " As fire be nature ascendis in the aire,
 " And purifyis with heitis vehement ;
 " As floure dois smell ; as frute is nurisare ;
 " As precius balme revertis thingis sare,
 " And makis thaim of rot impacent ;
 " As spice, maist swete ; as ros, maist redolent ;
 " As stern of day, be moving circulare,
 " Chasis the nicht with benis resplendent :

 " Siclik my werk perfitis every wicht
 " In fervent luf of maist excellent licht,
 " And makis man into this erd but peir ;
 " And dois the saule fra all corruptioun dicht
 " With odoure dulce, and makis it more bricht
 " Than Diane full, or yit Appollo cleir ;
 " Sine rasis it unto the hiest speir,
 " Immortaly to schine in Goddis sicht,
 " As chosin spous, and creature most deir.

 " This othir wenche, that clepit is Delite,
 " Involvis man, be sensuall appetite,
 " In every kind of vice and miserie ;
 " Becaus na wit nor reason is perfite,
 " Quhare scho is gide, bot skaithis infinite,
 " With doloure, schame, and urgent poverte.
 " For scho wes get of frothis of the see ;
 " Quhilk signifies, hir plesir vennomit
 " Is midlit ay with scharp adversete.

" Duke Hanniball, as mony authouris wrait,
 " Throw Spanye come, be mony passage strait,
 " To Italy in furour bellicall ;
 " Brak doun the wallis, and the montanis slait,
 " And to his army maid ane oppin gait,
 " And victoryis had on the Romanis all :
 " At Capua, be plesair sensuall,
 " This Duk wes maid so soft and deligait,
 " That with his fois he wes sone ouirthrall.

" Of feirs Achill, the weirlie dedis sprang
 " In Troy and Grece, quhill he in virtew rang ;
 " How lust him slew, it is bot reuth to heir.
 " Siclik the Trojanis, with thair knichtis strang,
 " The vailyeant Grekis fra thair roumes dang ;
 " Victoriuslie exercit mony yeir :
 " That nicht thay went to thair lust and plesair,
 " The fatall hors did throw thair wallis fang,
 " Quhais prignant sidis wer full of men of weir.

" Sardanapall, the prince effeminat,
 " Fra knichtlie dedis wes degenerat ;
 " Twinand the thredis of the purpur lint
 " With fingaris soft, amang the ladyis sat ;
 " And with his lust couth nocht be saciat,
 " Quhill of his fois come the bitter dint.
 " Quhat nobill men and ladyis hes bene tint
 " Quheu thay with lustis wer intoxicat,
 " To schaw at lenth, my toun suld nevir stint.

" Thairefore Camil, the vailyeant chevaleir,
 " Quhen he the Gallis had dantit be his weir,
 " Of heritable landis wald have na recompence ;
 " For, gif his barnis and his freindis deir
 " Wer virtewis, thay couth nocht fail ilk yeir
 " To have ineuch be Romane providence ;

THE PROHEME

“ Gif thay wer gevin to vice and insolence,
 “ It wes nocth neidfull for to conques geir,
 “ To be occasioun of thair incontinence.

“ Sum nobill men, as poetis list declare,
 “ Wer deifeit; sum goddis of the aire;
 “ Sum of the hevin: as Eolus, Vulcan,
 “ Saturn, Mercury, Appollo, Jupitare,
 “ Mars, Hercules, and othir men preclare,
 “ That glore immortall in thair livis wan.
 “ Quhy wer thir peple callit goddis than?
 “ Becaus thay had ane virtew singulare,
 “ Excellent, hie abone ingine of man.

“ And otheris ar in reik sulphurius;
 “ As Ixion, and wery Sisiphus,
 “ Eumenides the Furyis richt odibill,
 “ The proud giandis, and thirsty Tantalus;
 “ With huglie drink, and fude most vennomus;
 “ Quhare flammis bald and mirknes ar sensibill.
 “ Quhy ar thir folk in panis so terribill?
 “ Becaus thay wer bot schrewis vicious,
 “ Into thair life, with dedis most horribill.

“ And thought na frute wer efir consequent
 “ Of mortall life, bot for this warld present
 “ Ilk man to have allanerlie respect;
 “ Yit virtew suld fra vice be different,
 “ As quik fra deid, as riche fra indigent.
 “ That ane, to glore and honour ay direct;
 “ This othir, saule and body to neclect:
 “ That ane, of reason most intelligent;
 “ This othir, of beistis following the affect.

“ For he that nold aganis his lustis strive,
 “ Bot leiffis as beist of knawlege sensitive,
 “ Eildis richt fast, and deith him sone ouir halis.

" Thairfore the mule is of ane langar live
 " Than stonit hors ; also the barant wive
 " Apperis young, quhen that the brudie falis.
 " We se also, quhen nature nocth prevalis,
 " The pane and dolour ar sa pungitive,
 " No medicine the pacient avalis.

" Sen thow hes hard baith our intentis thus,
 " Cheis of us two the maist delitius :
 " First to sustene ane scharp adversete,
 " Danting the rage of youtheid furius ;
 " An sine posseid triumphe innumerus,
 " With lang empire, and hie felicite :
 " Or haif, ane moment, sensualite
 " Of fuliche youth, in life voluptuous ;
 " And all thy dayis full of miserie."

Be than, Phebus his firy eart did wry
 Fra south to west, declinand besaly
 To dip his steidis in the oceane ;
 Quhen he began ouirsile his visage dry,
 With vapouris thik, and cloudis full of sky ;
 And Notus brim the wind meridiane,
 With wingis donk, and pennis full of rane,
 Awalkenit me ; that I micht nocth aspy
 Quhilk of thaim two was to his lady tane.

Bot sone I knew thay war the Goddesses
 That come in sleip to vailyeant Hercules,
 Quhen he was young, and fre of every lore
 To lust or honour, poverte or riches ;
 Quhen he contempnuit lust and idilnes,
 That he in virtew micht his life decore ;
 And werkis did of maist excellent glore.
 The more incressit his panefull besines,
 His hie triumphe and loving was the more.

Than, throw this morall eruditiooun
Quhilk come, as said is, in my visioune,
I tuke purpos, or I forthir went,
To write the story of this regioune,
With dedis of mony illuster campioune.
And, thought the pane apperis vehement,
To make the story to the redaris more patent,
I will begin at the discriptioun
Of Albion, in maner subsequent.

FINIS.

HEIR BEGINNIS THE COSMOGRAPHE
AND
DISCRIPTION OF ALBION.

Chap. First.

How all thingis is subdewit to alteratioun and deith ; and na thing permanent in the erd.



TRAIST nane hes sa dirk intelligence, bot knawis Cosmographie maist necessar to the knawlege of historyis ; and yit to discribe the samin, is the office of na smal ingine. Attoure, all the auctouris, that hes writtin apon the discription of the warld, ar patent and knawin to ilk regiouн and pepill ; amang quhome hes bene mony crafty and resolut men, schawing mony gret thingis above ingine of men, with so profound sentence, that the samin is na thing different fra the verite, in discription of mony uncouth and divers thingis succeding continewally, to the gret commodite and plesair of reders. Yit sen the mater that thay treit is not solide nor permanent in the samin forme and image as it was first found, apperis baith to unletterit pepil and utheris quhilkis hes na sicht to the continewal alteration of materis, that the verite is not schawin to thaim in al partis. And sen all thingis quhilkis ar comprehendit within the speir of the mone, ar sa thirlit to deith and alteration, that thay ar othir consumit afore us,

or ellis we afore thame ; apperis na thing mair corruptible, nor yit of mair alteratioun, than the erd and situatioun thairof ; becaus it changis sa mony figuris be lang age and proces of yeris. For we nocht al-lanerly may se presently be our ene, bot findis be mony crafty and profound historianis, that quhare sum time bene maist notable cletes, or maist plentious lesuris and medois, now, throw erdquaik and trimbling, or ellis be continewall inundation of watteris, nocht remanis bot othir the huge seis, or ellis unprofitable ground and sandis. Attoure the see, be alluvion and pres of rageand watters, cumis in on sum landis and gangis furth on utheris, as daily occurris be experience ; for baith seis and watteris gevis, be injust merchis, als mekle to sum landis as thay reif fra utheris. Heirfore I belief, be sindry chances and lang proces of time, that every thing sall not be respondent to the samin perfection and knawlege as it was dis-crivit be auld cosmographouris, in the figure and situation of the erd. Thairfore na man suld have admiration, howbeit recent authouris discribe the world in sum uthir figure and sort than it hes bene dis-crivit afore be Pomponius Mela, Ptholome, and othir auld cosmographouris ; for the erd is now mair frequent in pepil than it was in thay dayis, and the passage in al cuntries mair knawin ; throw quhilk the situation of all regionis, be exact and scharp deligence of authouris, is the mair patent. Attoure, gif thir auld cosmographouris war bot men as we ar, followis na admiration, howbeit thay had na sicker cognosance and ful erudition of al thingis ; and, for that caus, thay might not wrt forthir than thay saw be thair awin inquisition, or ellis be experience of utheris authouris past afore thame. For thir reasonis, we think it litil wrang sum times nocht to follow al thair opinionis : for thay had not knawlege nor experience of all materis ; and, thairfore, we dar the mair baldly wrt sum thingis for the com-mon proffet, specially concernyng the figure and situation of Scotland, with the maneris of the pepill thairof, in sum uthir sort than hes bene schawin afore be uthir authouris : for we have not onely sene the samyn, bot hes knawlege thairof be lang experience and use ; throw quhilk, this our quhatsumevir werk sal not be unprof-tabil nor yit unpleasand to the reders, for in it sal be schawin the maneris and conditioun of the pepill of Scotland, with the situation thairof. Attoure, to mak the reders more bowsum and attent, we

promit faithfullie to writ na thing in this werk bot allanerlie sik thing as bene maist patent and knawin to us, othir be our awin exact diligencie and industrie, or ellis be rehers of otheris richt trew and faithful auctouris; and, thairfore, gif this our werk be found ple-sand to the reders; we sall writ sum othir tim mair largelie of othir materis, baith to thair eruditiooun and plesoir.

Chap. Second.

*The Discriptioun of Albion, and quhy it wes callit with that Name.
The beginning of Britonis and Scottis.*

HE hāil Ile of Albion, quhilk contenis baith the realmes of Ingland and Scotland, as is discrivit be the Latine and Greik cosmographouris, is enveronid on every side with the gret oceane; havand on the eist side, the Almane seis; on the south side, the Franche and Britane seis; on the west side, the Ireland seis; and on the north side, the Narroway seis. This Ile is extendit be lang passage fra the south-south-eist to the north-nor-west, and is mair extendit to the lenth than breid, nocht far different fra the figure of ane triangle. This Ile, be auld cosmographouris, wes callit Albion, and remanis yit undir the samin name. Sum auctouris sayis, this Ile wes callit Albion, *ab albis montibus*; that is to say, fra the quhit montanis thairof, full of calk: Utheris allegis, it wes callit Albion, fra ane lady namit Albyne; quhilk history is nocht unlik the fabulis that ar writin of the fiftie douchteris of Danaus, King of Argives. This Albyne, as is allegit, with hir fiftie sisteris, eftir that they had slane al thair husbandis, pullit up salis, and come out of Grece throw the seis of Hercules to Spanye; and, fra Spanye, come throw the Franche and Almane seis but ony impediment to the said Ile; and, eftir hir arriving in the samin, namit it Albion fra hir name. This Albyne, with hir fiftie sisteris, eftir thair cuming in the said Ile, conversit with devillis in forme of men, and consavit childrin be naturall commixtion. Thir childrin

increscit of sa huge stature and pissance, that thay wer callit be the peple giandis ; and inhabit the said regiou恩 continewallie to the time of Brutus, the first beginner of Britonis. This Brutus wes nepot, or ellis pronepot, to the gret Trojane Eneas ; and, becaus he wes exilit and banist for slauchter and othir gret offendis done be him in Italie, he wes constrainit to depart with the residew of Trojanis, his fallois, to serche sum new dwelling. Eftir lang travell be tempestious and storme seis, he arrivit in Albion, fra the beginning of the warlde **MMMM.XXVII** yeris. This Brutus and his fallowis, eftir thair cuming in Albioun, invadit the giandis afore rehersit with sindry chancis of battall ; and, finalie, brocht thaim to sa hie rewine, that baith thair landis and guddis fell in pray to Brutus and his fallowis : and sa the centre wes callit Britane, and the pepill Britonis. Bot the beginning of Scottis wes in ane uthir maner. It is writtin be our anciant historiographouris, that Gathelus, ane richt illuster and vailyeant knicht, discending be lang progressioun and linage of the blud riall of Grece, maryit Scota, doucher to King Pharo of Egipt ; and, thought mony riche landis fell to him, with gret honouris be singulare manheid, in the realme of Egipt, yit he wes so astonist be mony terrible and grevus plagis appering, be prophecy of Moises, in plane eversioun of the realme and peple of Egipt, that he thought na thing sa gud nor proffitable as to be maist remote and distant thairfra. Gathelus, movit for thir causis, come furth of the mouth of Nile, with his wife, his freindis, and servandis, Grekis and Egyp-tianis, throw the seis Mediterrane ; and, finalie, brokin with lang and incredible danger of uncouth chancis, he arrivit in the north part of Spanye : and to conques the more benevolence of his wife, he namit his pepill Scottis, eftir hir name. Thair vulgar langage wes callit Gathelik. Gathelus, eftir his cuming in Spanye, sent ane band of weirmen in Ireland ; quhilkis, be singulare manheid and prudenee, dantit so the pepill thairof, that thay gat the hail empire of the said Ile, and rang in it mony yeris eftir, with gret honoure and glore of armis.

Chap. Third.

How the Scottis and Pichtis come in Alboun. Of thair sindry Linnage and Maneris ; and how the said Ile was inhabit be thre sindry Pepill.



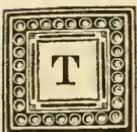
OTHESAY, ane of the kingis sonnis of Ireland, come, schort yeris eftir, with ane cumpany of young and hardy pepill, in the Ilis of Albion ; and, becaus he fand the samin waist and nocht inhabit as than with ony emprise of Britonis, he sat doun with his remanent fallowis, wiffis, and barnis, in the said Ilis, and namit thaim Hebredes, fra the name of Hibernia, or ellis fra the name of Hiber, the first son of Gathelus. This Rothesay come sone eftir, with his freindis out of the said Ilis, in Albion ; and, sa mekil as he gat possessioun of, he callit it Scotland. The day that Scottis come first in Albion, wes fra the beginning of the warld **MMMM.DC.XVII** yeris. Mony yeris eftir thair cumming in Albion, thay wer callit Re-Albinis, that is to say, Kingis of Albioun ; to mak thaim sum thing different fra the remanent kingis that inhabit the said land eftir or afore thair cuming. Forthir, thought the Scottis, be thair singulare manheid and prudence, rang continewallie but ony interruption baith in Spanye and Ireland, yit thair name is perist in thai partis ; othir be thair commixtion with uncouth blud, or ellis be roust and lang proces of yeris : throw quhilk remanis na Scottis in memory, bot thay that inhabitis the last boundis of Albion. Attoure the Spanyeartis, that dwellis yit in the montanis and uthir desertis of Spanye, knawis na thing of the Romane weris ; and ar litill different fra Ireland men, baith in thair maneris, habit, and langage. The Britonis, becaus thay wer mony yeris afore us in Albioun, occupyis the south and maist plentuus boundis thairof : and we inhabit the north partis, full of montanis ; quhilk ar nocht sa fertil and commodius as the said landis occupyit be Britonis. Eftir the cuming of Scottis and Britonis on this maner in Albioun, ane uncouth peple namit Pichtis, uthirwayis

namit Agathirsanis, quhilkis were banist out of Sarmathia, come in Denmark, quhair thay sone eftir gat schippis, with all provisoun effering thairto ; and, eftir thair finall arriving in Albioun, thay sat doun in the waist and middil boundis betwix Britonis and Scottis, and maid wid marchis betwix baith thair realmes. The cuming of Pichtis in Albioun wes eftir the cuming of Scottis in the samin, ccl yeris ; yit amang sum authouris risis ane fuliche dout, quhidder the Scottis or Pichtis come first in this regiou. Sum of thir authouris allegis, that Rewther wes the first beginnar of Scottis in Albioun. Bot this opinioun is far different fra the treuth of our historie ; for five Scottis kingis rang continewallie, ilk ane succeding to uthir, afore Rewther ; as apperis cleirlie in the historie following. And sa this Ile of Albioun wes inhabit, fra the beginning thairof, with thre sindry pepill ; that is to say, Britonis, Scottis, and Pichtis. The first part of this Ile, becaus it wes inhabit be Brutus and his posterite, wes namit Britane ; the secound and mid part, becaus it wes inhabit be Pichtis, wes namit Penthland ; and the remanent boundis thairof wer inhabit be Scottis, and namit Scotland. Yit the Romane historianis and Ptolome, quhen thay treit ony thing concerning this Ile of Albioun, callit the hail ile, Britane ; and all the peple thairof, Britonis. Thir thre peple, namit all under ane name Albianis, inhabit the said Ile ; yit the Romanis, in all partis quhare thay come within this Ile, namit the peple thairof with sindry names : for thay namit the men of Walis, Tegenianis, fra Tegenia ; the men of Angus, Horrestianis, fra Horrestia ; the men of Cauder and Callender wod, Calidonianis, fra Calidonia ; the men of Galloway, Brigandis, fra Brigantia ; as apperis be Cornelius Tacitus, quhilk writis, that beyound the Britonis dwellis in Allbion, to the gret north, two peple richt different fra uther in maneris and nature ; that ane, for thair yallo hair, callit Pichtis, discending of Albianis ; and this uthir, for thair blak and curland hair, callit Scottis, na thing different fra Spanyeartis in nature and conditionis. This Ile, in our dayis, is inhabit allanerlie be two peple, Inglismen and Scottis ; the south partis ar inhabit be Inglismen, and the north part be Scottis. Now have we schawin the causis quhy the Britonis wer callit with that name, and the maner of thair cumming in Albioun ; and we sall schaw, in

the end of this cosmographie, with quhat peple the realme of Britane
hes bene inhabit continewallie, unto the time of King Hary the VIII.,
regnand now with gret felicite abone Inglismen.

Chap. Fourth.

The Boundis of Alboun ; with the sindry Commoditeis thairof in generall. Of the gret infirmiteis that fallis to the Peple thairof, for thair intemperance ; and of the Religion usit be thaim in auld times.



HE Ile of Alboun contenis, in the hail circumference and compas circular, MM milis; havand in lenth DCC milis, and in breid CCCL miles; as apperis weill be the fute thairof fornence the Franche seis. And fra the fute thairof it procedis ay the more small, quhill it come to the ute marchis and last boundis baith of Ingland and Scotland: for betwix the Mule of Galloway, fornence the Ireland seis, to Sanct Ebbis Heid, fornence the Almiane seis, ar skars CLX milis in breid; and fra thens it gaderis ay mair small, quhill it be cumin to the last boundis thairof, quhare it hes skarslie xxx milis in breid. It is ane richt profitable Ile; full of peple; and noct onlie richt plentuus of store and bestiall, bot of all kind of cornis in every boundis thairof, saiffing allanerlie thay boundis quhair God, of his singulare gudnes, hes ordanit maist riche minis of gold, silver, tinne, bras, copper, and quiksilver, with sic fouth and abundance of metallis, that the samin ar noct onlie sufficient for all maner of necessaris to the peple of the said Ile, bot ar sufficient to all uthir oure nichbouris that dwellis about us, gif our peple had perfite craft and industrie to win the samin. Bot the superfew abundance of all uthir thingis necessar to the use of man, quhilk nature hes producit in oure regioune, makis the peple the les industrius and crafty, deliting ay mair in sleuth than ony exercitoun; for beside the gret fouth of gers, cornis, and bestiall in our landis, beside the gret abundance of fowlis in the air, sa gret plente is of fische in all partis of our seis, specially toward the

north, that the samin is sufficient ineuch to nuris all our peple, howbeit thair wer na frutis growand on oure land; as apperis be experience: for all landis that lyis about us, as France, Flanderis, Zeland, Holland, and mekill of Almany, cumis with sindry flotis, sekand fische yeirlie in our seis; and nocth allanerlie, be thair prudent industry, winnis fische sufficient to sustene thaimself, bot, be generall marchandise of thir fische, thay sustene the peple of all uthir cuntrieis; passand, in the time of Lentroun, throw the seis Mediterrane, ay selland thair fische, to thair gret proffet and winning. Mony uthir riche and precius thingis ar to be gottin in the said Ile, haldin in gret delit to the eist peple of the wold. Quhat may be said of our wol? quhilk is sa quhit and small, that the samin is desirit be all peple, and coft with gret price, speciallie with marchandis quhair it is best knawin. Of this woll is maid the fine skarlettis, with mony uthir granit and deligat clathis. Heirfore I dar baldlie affirme, gif the Albianis had sic grace that thay micht leif with concord amang thaimself, or gif thair realmes, be ony honest way, micht cumi under the empire and senyorie of ane king; thay micht nocth allanerlie haif all necessaris within thaimself, uncoft; bot, with small difficultie, micht dant all nichtbouris and cuntrieis liand thaim about, quhen ony externe or uncouth weris hapnit to invaid thaim. Thay have sa elegant stature, sa fair and lusty bodyis, that na uthir peple may be preferrit to thaim. Thay ar richt ingenius and abill, als well to letteris as uthir virtewis and corporall exercitioun of the handis; richt hardy and reddy to all jeopardyis baith in weir and peace, in sic maner that na thing may be difficill to thaim, gif thay leiffit temperatlie. Thairfore the provident Beginnar of the wold hes nocth but gret resoun maid thair region nakit and bair of winis; knawing, be his eterne wisdome, that winis, howbeit the samin ar richt necessar to all uthir peple, ar richt skaithfull to the nature of Albianis: for thay ar gevin to sic unnaturall voracite and desire of uncouth metis and drinkis, that thay can nocth refrene thaimself fra immoderat excesse, as apperis weill be experience; for, throw thair crapulus and schamfull glutone, thay ar strikin oftimes with sa dangerus and irremediable infirmiteis, that howbeit thow wer accompanit with thaim all thair tender age, thow sall find thaim, throw thair intemperance and surfeit diet, sa fowsumlie growin in thair mid or latter age, that

thay sall appeir als uncouth to thy sicht as thow had never knownin thaim in thair tender age; quhairthrow thay sal appeir erar misfassonit monstouris than ony naturall peple. Sindry of thaim, throw surfet diet, growis furius in thair latter age, with mony sorrowfull maledeis following thaim; for, as the proverbe sayis, sendill ar men of gret glutonie sene have lang dayis, or agit with proces of yeris, becaus thair excessive and intemperat diet consumis al the substanciall humouris of thair bodyis. Bot we wil return to our purpos. The Albianis, as writis Cesar, in his Commentaris, and Cornelius Tacitus, wer richt religious, eftir the rite that wes in thay dayis; for in thay dayis wer the preistis of Britane, namit Driades, richt expert baith in naturall and morall philosophie. Be thair doctrine, come the first sculis of thair sect and opinion in France. The principall sect of thir preistis wes in the Ile of Man, quhilk wes in that time the spectacle and fontane of all honest eruditiooun and letteris; and, fra thir preistis wer anis profest in Catholik faith, thay perseverit with gret constance in it, but ony spot of herise.

Chap. Fifth.

*The Discriptioun of Est, West, and Middill Bordouris of Scotland;
with the maist notable Townis and Fludis thairof.*



HE Pichtis had sum time the principall and maist plenteus boundis of al the landis that ar now under the emprise of Scottis; eftir that thay had rongin in the samin, M.CLI yeris, under ane blude, amite, and freindschip with Scottis; concurrand with thaim equalie in every danger and jeoperde of battall aganis the Romanis and Britonis; and sum times fecht and aganis the Scottis, thair awin confederat freindis, be unprudence of young and suspect personis: quhil at last, be outragius and exorbitant haitrent, rais sic slauchter and murdir on all sidis, that thay wer brocht to ute rewine, and doung out of Albion, be the weris of

Scottis. And thocht the Scottis hes bene oftimes brokin with maist terrible and dangerus weris of mony scharp ennimes, yit, be divine be-nevolence, thay fluris hail unto thir dayis, and hes dantit al thair ennimes. Thir commodities, quhilkis ar now schawin generalie of Albion, ar patent, with mony uthir singulare prerogativis, speciallie amang the Scottis in the Hieland : for the peple thairof hes na repair with marchandis of uncouth realmes ; and, becaus thay ar nocht corruptit, nor mingit with uncouth blude, thay ar the more strang and rude, and may suffir mair hungir, walking, and distres, than ony uthir peple of Albion ; maist hardy at jeopardyis ; richt agill and deliver of bodyis ; richt ingenius to every new inventioun ; maist sichty in craft of chevalrie ; and kepis thair faith and promes with maist severite and constance. Scotland hes the Mers, quhilk wes sum time the maist plenteus regiouen of Pichtis, for thair marche, fornence the Almane seis. This regiouen, sa lang as it wes inhabit be Pichtis, wes namit Deere ; and, eftir the expulsioun of Pichtis, it wes namit the Mers, that is to say, the marchis ; for the Scottis, eftir the expulsioun of Pichtis, ekit thair marchis to Tweid, quhilk devides Northumbirland fra the Mers. On the tothir side, sindry small burnis discendis fra the hillis of Cheviot, and uthir montanis liand thair about, deviding Cumbir fra Annandail, and fallis in the watter of Sulway. This watter of Sulway rinnis in the Ireland seis, and is the marche of Scotland, fornence the west bourdouris. The hillis of Cheviot, fra quhilk springis mony small burnis on ilk side, makis the middil marche of Scotland. The Mers hes sindry marchis at sindry partis quhair it is extendit. Sum time it hes the Almane seis ; sunn time, Eist Louthiane ; sunn time, Tweid ; and sunn time, Forth, for the marchis. Amang mony strang castellis in the Mers is the town and castell of Berwik, sum time namit Ordolutium, and the inhabitantis thairof namit Ordoluce. Tweid first springis fra ane small fontane, and, be agmentation of uthir watteris that fallis in it, it discendis with braid stremes in the Almane seis. Beyound Tweid, to the middill marche under Cheviot, lyis Tevidale, that is to say, the vale of Tyf. Beyound it lyis Esdail, the vale of Esk ; for Esk rinnis throw the middis thairof. Fornens Esdail, on the tothir side, lyis Eusdail, namit fra the watter of Eus, and fallis in the watter of Annand : bot Tyf and Esk fallis in Tweid. On the

tothir side, fornce the Ireland seis, lyis Annandail, fra the watter of Annand. It marchis sum times with the out boundis of Nidis-dail, quhair all thir thre rivers forsaid, Eus, Annand, and Sulway, descendis togidder, under ane streme, in the Ireland seis. In Annandail is ane loch namit Lochmaben, five milis of lenth, and foure of breid, full of uncouth fische. Beside this loch is ane castell, under the same name, maid to dant the incursion of thevis. For nocht al-lanerlie in Annandail, bot in all the dalis afore rehersit, ar mony strang and wekit thevis, invading the cuntry with perpetuall thief, reif, and slaughter, quhen they se ony trublus time. Thir thevis, becaus they have Inglyssmen thair perpetuall ennimes, liand dry marche apon thair nixt bordour, invadis Ingland with continewal weris, or ellis with quiet thief; and leiffis ay ane pure and miserabill life. In the time of peace, they ar so accustomit with thief that they can nocht desist, bot invadis the cuntry, (howbeit they ar ay miserabilie put doun,) with ithand heirschippis. Mony riche and plentuus boundis of Scotland lyis waist, for feir of thair invasion. Nocht far fra Sulway ar mony sinkand sandis, sa perilus, that na peple may transport thaim self throw the samin, but gret difficulte and danger of thair livis. This vale of Annand wes sum time namit Ordovitia, and the pepill namit Ordovices; quhais cruelteis wes sa gret, that they abhorrit nocht to eit the flesche of yoldin prisoneris. The wivis usit to slay thair husbandis, quhen they wer found cowartis, or dis-comfist be thair ennimes; to gif occasioun to otheris to be more bald and hardy quhen danger occurrit: Quhill at last they wer finallie distroyit be the weris of Romanis. On the west borduris, to the gret north, lyis Nidis-dail, namit fra the water of Nith. It beginnis with ane narow and strait hals, and incressis mair braid, quhair it lyis to the middil marchis of Scotland. In Nidis-dail is the toun of Dunfreis, quhair mony small and deligat quhitis ar maid, haldin in gret dainte to marchandis of uncouth realms.

Chap. Sixth.

*The Discription of Galloway, Kyle, Carrick, and Cunninghamhe; with
the notabill Townis, Lochis, and Revers in the samin.*



BONE Nidisdaill is Galloway, namit sum time, Brigantia, and the peple thairof namit Brigandis. This region is devidit be the watter of Cre in two partis: the part that lyis nerest to Nidisdaill, is callit Nethir Galloway; the tothir part, that lyis abone Cre, is callit Uvir Galloway. In Nethir Galloway is Kirkcoubrie, ane riche toun, full of marchandise. In Uver Galloway is the abbay of Quhittern, dedicat to the haly bischop Sanct Niniane; quhair his blisst body restis in gret veneratioun of peple. Abone Quhittern is the toun of Wigtown; and nocht far fra it, is the loch of Myrtoun. The half of this loch fresis be natnrall congelatioun, as utheris lochis dois; the tothir half fresis nevir. In Galloway ar two uthir lochis, Salset and Newtramen, of sik like lenth and breid as Loch Myrtoun. Galloway rinnis, with ane gret snout of craggis, be lang passage, in the Ireland seis. This snout is callit be the peple, the Mulis Nuk; and, be the erukin of it in the seis, it makis two gret lochis, namit be the pepil, Loch Reane, and Lowis. Sum of thir lochis ar xxx, and sum xvi, milis of lenth. Thay ar baith ful of ostreis, hering, conger ellis, mussillis, and coklis, with mony uthir fische. Sum men haldis, that Brigance wes the samin regioune of Ingland that is now callit Walis, quhair the Britonis leifft mony yeris eftir that thay wer doung out of Britane: bot this opinion is vane; for the Romane auctouris sayis, the Ile of Man lyis fornence Brigance, and is mid passage betwix it and Ireland, as yit apperis be experience. And howbeit the brayis, be alluvion and flux of seis, ar worne, and mair distant fra uthir than thay wer afore, yit the samin latitude and elevatioun of the pole that Ptolome assignis to Brigance, correspondis weil to the elevatioun of the pole abone Galloway, quhilk is distant and severit be lang jurnay fra Walis; for the Ile of Man lyis thre hundredth milis fra Walis, in the

sicht of Galloway. Attoure, be testimoniall of sindry auctouris, we say, that out of Brigance, the toun of Spanye quhilke is now namit Compostella, come ane new cumpany of peple in Ireland, and wer namit Spanyeartis; and out of Ireland come ane gret cumpany of the same pepill, with King Fergus, in Albioun; and, in remembrance of the ciete of Brigance, quhilke wes sum time be thaim inhabit in Spanye, thai war all callit Brigandis. To this opinion applaudis Cornelius Tacitus, saying, the Brigandis wer discendit of the Spanyeartis, and dwellis in the remot and last boundis of Britane; for he callis Britane the hail Ile of Albioun. Thir regionis afore rehersit, that is to say, Annandail, Nidisdail, and Galloway, nocht allanerlie aboundis in fine woll and store of bestiall, bot ar richt profitable in all maner of cornis, except quhiet. Abone Galloway is Carrik, ane part of Silurie; for Silurie is devidit in thre partis, that is to say, Carrik, Kyle, and Cunninghamame. In Carrik wes sum time ane riche ciete under the same name; quhais ruinus wallis schawis the gret magnificence thairof. In this cuntry ar mony strang castellis, richt strenthy baith be nature and craft of men. In this region ar mony fair ky and oxin, of quhilke the flesche is richt delicius and tender; the talloun of thair wambis is sa sappy, that it fresis nevir, bot flowis ay, be nature of the self, in maner of oulie. Beyond Carrik is Kyle, namit fra Coyll, King of Britonis, quhilke wes slane in the said regioune. In Kyle is ane stane, nocht xii milis fra the toun of Air, xxx fut of hicht, and thre ellis of breid, callit be the peple the Deif Stane; for quhen ane man is at the fut of it, he may nothir heir quhat is said nor done on the tothir side, howbeit ane cannon wer schot at it; nochtheles, ay the more he standis a dreich fra it, he heris ay the better. Nixt Kyle is Cunninghamame, the thrid part of Silurie; quhais peple wer maist noisum to Romanis. In Kyle is ane loch namit Doune, fra quhilke discendis the watter under the same name, and rinnis in the Ireland seis. In Cunninghamame is ane loch namit Garnoth, nocht unlike to Loch Doun, full of fische; and nocht far fra it is the toun of Largis, quhare sum time faucht King Alexander the Thrid, with gret glore of victorie, aganis the Danis.

Chap. Seventh.

The Description of Renfrew, Clyddisdail, Lennox, Lowmond, Argyle, Louchquahabir, Lorne, and Kintyre; with all notabill thingis contenit in the same.



HE watter of Clyde devides the Lennox, on the north side, fra the barony of Renfrew; and risis out of the samin montane within the wod of Calidone, fra quhilk risis Annand; and descendis with lang passage in the Ireland seis. Not far fra the fontanis of Clyde springis the fontanis of Forth, quhilk descendis, with ample and braid boundis, in the Almane seis. On the tothir side, the watter of Clyde, eftir that it hes roun lang toward the north, crukis ay inward, quhill it come to the montanis of Granyebane; sine descendis with lang passage to the south, quhill it fall in the Ireland seis. The cuntry, quhair it rinnis, is callit Clyddisdail. Betwix Clyde and Lennox lyis the baronie of Renfrew; in the quhilk ar twa lochis, namit Quhynsouth and Leboth, sum xx and sum xii milis of lenth, richt plentuous and full of fische. Abone Renfrew, to the Oceane seis, lyis the Lennox, namit, be Ptolome, Lelgonia; in quhilk is ane gret loch namit Lochmond, xxiv milis of lenth, and viii milis of breid. Within this loch ar xxx Ilis, weil biggit with kirkis, templis, and housis: and in this loch ar thre notable thingis; fische swomand but ony fin; ane richt dangerus and storme wal, but ony wind; and ane Ile that fletis heir and thair as the wind servis. This loch standis at the fute of the montanis of Granyebene, quhilkis wer sum time the gret marchis betwix the Scottis and Pichtis, and gangis fra Lochlowmond to the mouth of Dee. The Pichtis had na landis beyound the montanis of Granyebene, nor yit liand to the Ireland seis; for thir boundis wer ay inhabit be Scottis. viii milis fra Lochlowmond is the castell of Dunbritane, namit sum time, Acleuch; quhair the watter of Levin fallis in Clyde. Beyound Lochlowmond is Argyle, ane cuntry ful of rochis, craggis, and montanis.

In it ar twa lochis, Lochfine and Lochquho. The land is devidit in thre partis; the land that lyis in middis thairof is callit Knapdail. In Lochfine is mair plente of hering than is in ony seis of Albion. In Lochquho ar mony fische, sik as leiffis on fresch watter. In Argyle ar twa castellis, Glennunquhart and Enconell; and in it ar xii Ilis: bot thay ar mair proffitable in store of bestial, than ony cornis. In Argyle ar mony riche minis, full of metall; bot ye pepill thairof hes na craft nor industry to win the samin. It is said, in this cuntri is ane stane of sic nature, that it kendlis cauld stra, or hardis in fire, quhen it is involvit thairwith. In Argyle ar viii uthir lochis; sum xxx milis in lenth and breid, and sum les. It wes said be Schir Duncane Campbell to us, that out of Garloll, ane loch of Argyle, the yeir of God m.dx yeris, come ane terrible beist, als mekil as ane grew-hound, fuit lik ane ganar, and straik doun gret treis with the dint of hir tail; and slew thre men quhilkis wer at thair hountis with thre straikis of hir tail: and wer not the remenant huntaris clam up in strang aikis, thay had bene all slane in the samin maner. Ef-
ter the slaughter of thir men, scho fled speidle to the loch. Sindry prudent men belevit gret trubill to follow in Scotland, be appering of this beist; for scho was sene afore, and ay trubil following thair-
after. Marcheand with Argyle lyis Lorn, quhilk wes sum time bot ane part thairof; for it lyis in maner of ane toung within the Ireland seis, with ane lang hals, lx milis of lenth and breid. This toung, that rinnis sa far within the seis, wes sum time namit Novantia; bot now is it callit Kintyre, that is to say, the Heid of Lorn. The outmaist part of this toung is not xvii milis fra Ireland. Sum auctouris sayis, baith Argyle and Kintyre wer namit Novantia; for Ptolome makis na mention of Argyle in his cosmographie. In Lorn growis beir with gret plente. Beyound Lorne is Lochquhabir, quhilk wes sum time ane part of Murrayland. It is full of minis, sic as irne and leid, and richt proffittabill in store of bestiall. In it ar mony woddis, lochis, and rivers, full of salmond and uthir fische, swomand sa plenteuslie, that the samin is tane but ony craft. The principall rivers of Lochquhabir ar Lochtie and Spanye; howbeit the cause thairof be uncertane. Lochtie risis nocth viii milis fra Lochness, and fallis, under the same name, in the Almane seis. Beside it is ane roche crag, dippand with ane lang hals in the seis, namit Hardnomorth.

In the mouth of Lochtie wes ane riche toun namit Inverlochtie, quhair sum time wes gret change, be repair of uncouth marchandis; quhill at last it wes sa uterlie destroyit be weris of Danis, that it come nevir to the honour and magnificence as it had afore: and quhiddir the samin procedis be sleuth of our pepill, or be invy of limmers, quhilks may suffir na wallit tounis in this cuntry, it is uncertaine. Beyound Lochtie is the castell of Dunstafage, sum time namit Evonium. Beyound Dunstafage is the mouth of the watter of Spanye, quhair it fallis in the Almane seis.

Chap. Eighth.

The Description of Ros, Stranavern, and Murrayland; with the Louchis, Fludis, and Notable Townis thairof.

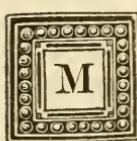
BEYOND the watter of Spanye lyis Ros, sum time namit Lugia; rising with ane strait narow hals, and thaireftir is cassin furth, with mair braid lesuris, valis, and montanis; circulit, baith on the ta syde and the tothir, with the occeane. This cuntry, quhair it lyis maist approchand to the Ireland seis, hes richt difficill passage, and ganis mair for store of bestiall than ony habitatioun of man. It is best manurit fornence the Almane seis: richt plentuous baith of gers and corn; for thir hailsum valis, quhare the rivers discendis, makis the herbis richt delicius and nurisand. In Ros ar sindry lochis, bot Lochbroun is maist. Mony rivers ar in Ros, full of fische. In Ros is Cromarte, ane firth and sieker port to all shippis, to saif thame fra danger of tempest, namit be the peple, the Heil of Schipmen. In Ros is the toun of Thane, quhair the blissit banis of Sanct Dutho restis in gret veneratioun of peple. In ane vale of Ros ar twa housis, round in forme of ane bell; and ar saiffit to our dayis in memory of sum antiquitezis of our eldaris. Merchant with Ros lyis Stranavern, the outmaist boundis of Scotland; of quhilk the se cost lyis north-north-west, and crukis in agane sum time fornens the Almane seis, havand for-

nens it, on the gret north, Cathnes; on the gret eist, Sutherland; on the gret south, Ros; and, on the gret west, the north-nor-west seis. Thre gret craggis lyis on the outmaist side of Stranavern, namit Hoy, Howbroun, and Downisbie; and becaus thir thre rochis schutis far in the see, thay mak twa gret firthis and lochis, severit fra uthir. Merchand with Cathnes lyis Sutherland, ane proffitable cuntry baith for store and cornis. On the yond side of it lyis Murray, sum time namit Vararis. Bot it hes nocht the samin marchis now as it had than; for all the boundis betwix Spay and Nes to the Ireland seis, wer namit Murray: bot now it lyis sum time beyound the watter of Spay and Kissok, quhil it cum to the Ireland seis. Betwix Ros and Murray, the land crukis in with ane gret discens and vale, in quhilk fallis five rivers, Nes, Nardyn, Findorn, Los, and Spay. Spay rinnis with sa feirs and violent streme, that the see tide, quhen it cumis in maist swiftlie, may nocht resist the violent discens and streme of this watter, bot is, with the preis and streme thairof, born doun per force to the scis. Nes risis fra ane loch under the same name, nocht viii milis fra the samin loch that Lochtie cumis fra, and rinnis in the Ireland seis. Nothir fresis the water of Lochtie, nor yit the loch that it cumis fra, in ony storme of winter; and, to the greter admiratioun, ony frosin thing that is cassin in it, meltis and resolvis hastelie: it is, thairfore, richt proffitable to al frosin beistis. In the mouth of Nes standis the toun of Innernes; quhare sum time wes gret plente and tak of heryng, howbeit thay be now evanist, for offence that is maid aganis sum Sanct. Treuth is, quhen ony avaricius and unhappy men fechitis for the fische that God sendis, be his infinit gudnes, to the sustentatioun of the peple, and diffoulis the see be thair blude; mony yeris eftir, na fische swomis in that place. Beside Lochnes, quhilk is xxiv milis of lenth, and xii of breid, ar mony wild hors; and, amang thame, ar mony martrikis, bevers, quhitredis, and toddis; the furringis and skinnis of thaim ar coft with gret price amang uncouth marchandis. In Murray is nocht allanerlie gret abundance and fouth of quheit, heir, aitis, and siclik cornis, with gret plente of nutis and appillis, hot in it ar gret fouth of fische, and speciallie salmond. In this cuntry is ane uncouth maner of fisching: for the peple makis ane lang mand,

narow halsit, and wyid mouthit, with mony stobis inouth, maid with sik craft, that the fische thrawis thameself in it, and can nocht get furth agane; and als sone as the see ebbis, the fische ar tane dry in the crelis. In Murray is ane loch namit Spynee, quhair gret plente is of swannis. The cause quhy the swannis multiplyis sa fast in this loch, is throw ane herbe namit Olour, quhilk burgeonis with gret fertilite in the said loch, and the seid of it is richt nurisand and delicius to swannis. This herbe is sa brudy, that quhair it is anis sawin or plantit, it can nevir be distroyit; as may be provin be experience: for, thought this loch be v. milis lang, and wes sum time, as the memorie of man yit beris, full of salmond and uthir gret fische, yit, fra this herbe began to burgeon in it, the watter is growin sa schaud, that ane man may waid throw the maist partis thairof; and, thairfore, all maner of gret fische is quit evanist out of it. In Murray land is the Kirk of Pette, quhare the banis of Litill Johne remanis, in gret admiratioun of pepill. He hes bene fourtene fut of hicht, with square membris effering thairto. Vr yeris afore the cuming of this werk to licht, we saw his hanche bane, als mekill as the haill bane of ane man; for we schot our arme in the mouth thairof: be quhilk apperis how strang and square pepill grew in our regioune, afore thay wer effeminat with lust and intemperance of mouth. In Murray is the toun of Elgin, nocht far fra the mouth of Spay; in qnhilk is the nobill cathedrall kirk of Murray, decorit richelie with the college of Channonis. Sindry riche abbayis ar in Murray: as Killos, of the ordoure of Cestuuſ; and Pluscardie, of the ordoure Clunacensis.

Chap. Ninth.

The Discriptioun of Boene, Anye, Buchquahane, Mar, Mernis, Fiffe, and Angus; with the Lochis, Fludis, Abbayis, Tounis, and uthir notable thingis thairof.



ARCHEAND with Murray, lyis Boene and Anye; twa plentuus regionis in store of bestiall, liand, with ample and roume boundis, to the seis. Thir regionis ar full of scheip and nolt, for the sindry lesuris and woddis in the samin; and throw the middis thairof rinnis the watter of Dovern. In the mouth of this watter standis the toun of Bamf. Under thir two regionis afore namit, lyis Buchquahane, ane proffitable land for scheip; for it passis all cuntrieis, liand about it, in riches of quhit and deligat woll. Mony watteris ar in Buchquahane; all full of salmond, except Rattrra, in quhilkis ar nane. In Buchquahane is the castell of Slanis, the Constablis hous, of Scotland: beside quhilk is ane mervellus cove; for the watter that droppis in it, growis, within schort time, in maner of ane hard quhit stane; and, wer nocht the cove is oft temit, it wald be fillit sone with stanis. Na rattonis ar sene in this cuntrie; and, als sone as thay ar brocht thair, thay de. In Buchquahane growis aitis but ony tilth or seid. Quhen the peple passis with set purpos to scheir thir aitis, thay find nocht but tume hullis; yit quhen thay pas but ony premiditatioun, thay find thir aitis ful and weil ripit. Thir thingis cumis nocht be nature, but erar be illusioun of devillis, to the dissait of blind and supersticius pepill. Under Buchquahane lyis Mar; ane plentuus region in store of bestiall, LX milis in length and breid, fra the Almane seis to Badyenoch. In it is the ciete of Abirdene, the bischoppis seit; with generall Universite, flurising in all science; and wes foundit, be the nobill Bischop William Elphinstoun, with ane riche and magnificent college. This ciete lyis betwix two riche rivers, Done and Dee; in quhilkis ar mair fouth of salmond, than in ony part of Albion. Marchand with Mar lyis the Mernis, to the see; ane riche cuntrie for store of

bestiall : in it is Dunnothir, the Marschel of Scotlandis hous. In the Mernis is the toun of Fordoun ; quhare the blissit banis of Sanct Paladie restis, in gret veneration of peple. On the out-marchis of Mernis rinnis the watter of Esk, uthirwayis namit Northesk ; ane dangerus watter, quhare mony passengeris perisis for falt of ane brig. Bordorand with the Mernis lyis Angus ; quhilk wes sum time ane part of Horrestia, and is dividit with thre rivers, Northesk, Southesk, and Tay. In Angus is ane hie montane, dippand in the Almane seis, callit the Reid Brayis. Tay risis, far beyond the montanis of Granyebene, fra Loch Tay, quhilk is xxiv milis of lenth, and x milis of breid ; and discendis, with gret plente of fische, quhill it cum in the Almane seis, beside Dunde, the toun quhair we wer born ; quhair mony virtewus and lauborius pepill ar in, making of clraith. In Angus ar mony uthir gud townis, as Montroys, Brechin, and Forfair ; with sa gret noumer of castellis, that it wer ouir tedious laubour to writ thaim all. In Angus ar mony lochis, full of fische : and in it ar mony abbayis ; as Resteneth, of Channons regulare, effir the ordour of Augustine ; Aberbrothak, and Coupar : the first, of the ordour of Turonen ; and the nixt, of the ordour of Cistuns. In the vale of Esk is sa quhit and small wol, that it hes na compair in Albioun. Beside Tay is Fiffe, sum time ane part of Octolyne. In it growis all maner of cornis, with als gret plente as dois in ony part of Albioun ; and, quhare na cornis ar, it is richt proffitable in store of bestial. In Fiffe ar won blak stanis, quhilk hes sa intolleable heit, quhen thay ar kendillit, that thay resolve and meltis irne, and ar thairfore richt proffitable for operation of smithis. This kind of blak stanis ar won in na part of Albion, bot allanerlie betwix Tay and Tyne. In Fiffe is maid gret plente of quhit salt. In Fiffe ar mony noble townis ; as Sanct Androis, the archebisshopis seit of Scotland, Kirkeawde, Disart, Kingorne, Cowpar, and Dunfermeling ; quhare ane riche abbay is decorit with generall sepulturis of kingis. Mony uthir abbayis ar in Fiffe, dedicat to the Blissit Virgine : as Culros, Bawmerinoch, Petmoyg, and Pettinweme. In Fiffe ar sindry lochis ; as Loch Torre, Lochlevin. In Lochlevin is ane castell, with mony ilis ; and in ane of thaim is the kirk of Sanct Phillane. Fiffe is devidit fra Louthiane be the reveir of Forth, quhilk rinnis, with ane braid firth, in the Almane seis. This firth

is richt plentuous of coclis, osteris, muschellis, selch, pellok, mer-swine, and quhalis; with gret plente of quhit fische. Amang mony uthir ilis in this frith is the Ile of May, decorit with the blude and martirdome of Sanct Adriane and his fallowis. In the middis of this Ile, springis ane fontane of fresche and purifyit watter outhrow ane roche crag; to the gret admiratioun of peple, considerin it lyis in the middis of the seis. Beside this Ile is ane wounderful crag, risand within the see, with sa narro and strait hals, that na schip nor bait may arrive bot allanerlie at ane part of it. This crag is callit the Bas; unwinnabill be ingine of man. In it ar coves, als proffitable for defence of men, as thay wer biggit be crafty industry. Every thing that is in that crag is ful of admiration and wounder. In it ar incredibl noumer of Soland Geis; nocth unlik to thir fowlis, that Plineus callis See Ernis; and ar sene in na part of Albion, bot in this crag and Ailsay. At thair first cumin, quhilk is in the spring of the yeir, thay gadder sa gret noumer of treis and stikkis to big thair nestis, that the samin micht be sufficient fewell to the keparis of the castell, howbeit thay had na uthir provision; and thocht the keparis tak fra thir fowlis thir stikkis and treis, yit thay tak litil indingnation thairof, bot bringis haistelie agane als mony fra uthir placis quhair thay fle. Thay nuris thair birdis with maist deligat fische; for, thocht thay have ane fische in thair mouth abone the seis, quhair thay fle, yit gif thay se ane uthir bettir, thay lat the first fal, and doukis, with ane felon stoure, in the see, and bringis haistelie up the fische that thay last saw; and thought this fische be reft fra hir be the keparis of the castell, scho takkis litill indingnation, bot fleis incontinent for ane uthir. Thir keparis, of the castell for-said, takis the young geis fra thaim with litill impediment; thus cumis gret proffet yeirlie to the lord of the said castell. Within the bowellis of thir geis, is ane fatnes of singulare medicin; for it helis mony infirmiteis, speciaillie sik as cumis be gut and eater disceding in the hanches or lethes of men and wemen. In this crag growis ane richt delicius herbe; and, quhen it is transportit or plantit in ony othir part, it is of litill sapor or gust. In this crag wes sum time ane stane, full of ene and holis, like ane watter spoung, holkit in the middis; of sik nature, that all salt watter that is waschin thair-with, becumis incontinent fresche and delicius to the mouth. We

heir, now, that this stane is in Fast Castell. In ane Ile of Forth, is the abbay of Sanct Colme, of Channons regulare, eftir the ordour of Sanct Augustine. Mony othir Ilis ar in this firth, full of cunningis. Oftimes are sene in this firth uncouth and wunderfull fische, with coulis hinging ouir their hedis, like monkis; and signifyis ay mortalite of men and beistis quhare thay ar sene.

Chap. Tenth.

The Discriptioun of Louthiane, Striveling, Menteith, Calidone Wod, Bowgewall, Gareoth; with the notable Cieteis, Castellis, and Fludis, thairof.



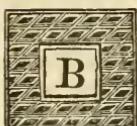
N the south side of Forth lyis Louthiane; callit, with that name, fra Loth, ane of the principall kingis of Pichtis. Louthiane is maist plentuus ground of Scotland. In it ar mony abbayis, castellis, and tounis; as Hadingtoun, Dunbar, North Berwik, Leith: bot Edinburgh passis thaim all, baith in polese, reparation, wisdome, and riches: and abone it is the castell undir the same name, sum time callit The Madin Castell, and yit remanis undir the same name. Nocht two milis fra Edinburgh is ane fontane, dedicat to Sanct Katrine, quhair sternis of oulie springis ithandlie with sic abundance, that, howbeit the samin be gaderit away, it springis incontinent with gret abundance. This fontane rais throw ane drop of Sanct Katrinis oulie, quhilk wes brocht out of Mont Sinai, fra hir sepulture, to Sanct Margaret, the blisst Quene of Scotland. Als sone as Sanct Margaret saw the oulie spring ithandlie, be divine miracle, in the said place, scho gart big ane chapell thair, in the honour of Sanct Katherine. This oulie hes ane singulare virtew aganis all maner of cankir and skawis. Nocht far fra the mouth of Forth is the castel of Dunbar; quhilk, be nature and crafty industre of man, is the strenthiest hous, this day, of Albion. Dunbar wes sum time the cheif chemis of the Erlis of Marche. Nocht far fra it is ane toun undir the same name, with

ane magnificent and riche college of Channons, foundit and honorably dotat be the said Erlis. On the eist side of Louthiane lyis the Mers; the cuntre quhilk by us is first discrivit. Under the Mers lyis Tevidail; and abone it lyis Twedail. Under Twedail lyis Dry-isdail, Waulcopdail, Douglasdail, and Clydisdail. All thir dalis beris the name of that rever that descendis throw thaim. The principall toun of Clydisdail is Glasqu, the archebischoppis seit; quhare ane nobill kirk is dotat richelie in the honour of Sanct Mungow, and biggit with gret magnificence. In Glasqu is ane generall Universite, and study of all liberall science. In Clydisdail is ane riche mine of gold and asure, won but ony laubour: sum times ar won in it, sindry precious stonis of variant hewis. This goldin mine wes found in the time of King James the Feird; quhilk had so mony singulare virtewis, that he had decorit his realme with infinite riches be this mine, gif God had fortunit him to have had dayis. Now, be sleuth and negligence of uncrafty peple, this mine dois small proffet. Fra Glasqu, north, lyis Menteith, and Strivelingshire, marcheand with Argyle and Lennox. In Strivelingshire is the toun of Striving; and abone it standis the castel under the samin name, sum time namit the Dolorus Montane. At this toun began the gret wod of Calidon. This wod of Calidon ran fra Striveling throw Menteith and Stratherne to Atholl and Lochquhabir; as Ptolome writtis, in his first table. In this wod wes sum time quhit bullis, with crisp and curland mane, like feirs lionis; and, thought thay semit meik and tame in the remanent figure of thair bodyis, thay wer mair wild than ony uthir beistis, and had sic hatrent aganis the societe and company of men, that thay come nevir in the woddis nor lesuris quhair thay fand ony feit or haind thaifrof; and, mony dayis eftir, thay eit nocht of the herbis that wer twichit or handillitt be men. Thir bullis wer sa wild, that thay wer nevir tane but slight and crafty laubour; and sa impacient, that, eftir thair taking, thay deit for importable doloure. Als sone as ony man invadit thir bullis, thay ruschit with so terrible preis on him, that thay dang him to the eird; takand na feir of houndis, scharp lancis, nor uthir maist penitrive wappinnis. It is said, King Robert Bruce, eftir his coronatioun, went to ane hunting in this wod, havand bot ane quiet cumpanie with him, and eschapt narowlie of his lief; for ane of the bullis, ef-

tir that he wes sair woundit be the huntaris, ruschit feirslic on the king, howbeit he had na wapinnis in his hand to debait himself fra the dint thairof: Incontinent, ane man of gret spreit, quhilk wes standing neir by, lap afore the king; and nocht allanerlie kest the bull be manifest force to the erd, bot held him, quhill the remanent huntaris slew him with thair wappinnis. This man, that rescoursit the king, wes callit Turnbull, and wes rewardlit with riche landis be the king. And thought thir bullis wer bred in sindry boundis of the Callidon Wod, now, be continewal hunting and lust of insolent men, thay ar distroyit in all partis of Scotland, and nane of thaim left bot allanerlie in Cumarnald. On the eist side of Menteith lyis Strathern; and marchis on the samin side with Fiffe. Out throw the valis of this regioun rinnis the watter of Ern, and fallis in Tay. And, nocht four milis fra the place quhare Ern fallis in Tay, is ane stanc of small quantite, howbeit it be of mervellus nature; for thair is nothir preis nor ingine of man that may transport it out of the place quhair it lyis: attoure ane man, and ane hundred, movis it elik. On the tothir side of Tay, beyound Angus and Gowrie, lyis Stermond; ane plentuus regioun, baith of gers and cornis. Nocht far fra Stermond lyis Athole; in quhilkis ar mony lusty valis, and fludis, ful of fische; and the ground sa riche, that it beris cornis but ony lauboure. In it is ane toun namit Lud; of quhilk the land is sa plentuus, that, gif it be weil manurit, it beris gud beir but ony seid. In Athole ar uthir landis, of mair contrariis nature; the quhheit that is sawin in it degeneris, and turnis in ry. Under Buchquhanc and Boene, to the west, lyis Bostgewell, and Gareoth; richt plentuus regionis, baith in gres and cornis. In Gareoth is ane hill namit Doundore, that is to say, the Goldin Montane. The scheip that gangis on this montane ar yallo; thair teeth ar hewit like gold; thair flesche reid, as it wer littit with safron; thair woll is on the same maner. In this regioun is ane carnell of stanis, liand togidder, in maner of ane croun; and ringis, quhen thay ar doung, as ane bell. Ane temple wes biggit, as sum men belevis, in the said place, quhare mony auld ritis and superstitionis wer maid to evill spretis. Mony uthir regionis ar in Scotland; as Bradalbane, Strabraun, and Bad-yenoth, with sindry uthir small landis and fludis; howbeit thay ar nocht sa notable as thir landis that we have schawin.

Chap. Eleventh.

Of the gret plente of Haris, Hartis, and uthir wild Bestiall in Scotland. Of the mervellus nature of sindry Scottis Doggis; and, Of the nature of Salmond.



ECAUS we have discrivit all regionis of Scotland in speciall, we will schaw sum thing concerning thaim in general. And, first, we say, that in all boundis of Scotland, except thay partis quhair continewall habitatioun of peple makis impediment thairto, is gret plente of haris, hartis, hindis, dayis, rais, wolffis, wild hors, and toddis. Thir wild hors ar not tane but crafty slight: for, in time of winter, the landwart peple puttis certane tame cursouris and meris amang thir wild hors; and, be thair commixtioun and frequent cumpanie, makis thaim so tame, that thay may be handillit. The wolffis ar richt noisum to the tame bestiall, in all partis of Scotland, except ane part thairof namit Glenmores, in quhilk the tame bestiall gettis litill dammage of wild bestiall, specialie of toddis; for ilk hous of this cuntry, nurisis ane young tod certane dayis, and mengis the flesche thairof, eftir that it be slane, with sic meit as thay gif to thair fowlis, or uthir smal beistis; and sa mony as etis of this meit ar preservit twa monethis eftir fra ony dammage of toddis: for toddis will eit na flesche that gustis of thair awin kind; and, be thair bot ane beist or fowl that hes nocti gustit of this meit, the tod will cheis it out amang ane thousand. In Scotland ar doggis of mervellus nature: for abone the commoun nature and conditioun of doggis, quhilkis ar sene in all partis, ar thre maner of doggis in Scotland, quhilk ar sene in na uthir partis of the warld. The first is ane hound, baith wicht, hardy, and swift. Thir houndis ar nocti allanerlie feirs and cruell on all wild beistis, bot on thevis and ennimes to thair maister, on the same maner. The seconde kind is ane rache, that sekis thair pray, baith of fowlis, beistis, and fische, be sent and smell of thair neis. The thrid kind is na

mair than ony rache; reid hewit, or ellis blak, with small spraingis of spottis; and ar callit be the peple, Sleuthoundis. Thir doggis hes sa mervellus wit, that thay serche thevis, and followis on thaim allanerlie be sent of the guddis that ar tane away; and noctt allanerlie findis the theif, bot invadis him with gret cruelte: and, thought the thevis oftimes cors the watter, quhair thay pas, to caus the hound to tine the sent of thaim and the guddis, yit he serchis heir and thair with sic diligence, that, be his fut, he findis baith the trace of the theif and the guddis. The mervellus nature of thir houndis wil have na faith with uncouth peple; howbeit the samin ar richt frequent and rife on the bordouris of Ingland and Scotland: attour it is statute, be the lawis of the Bordouris, he that denyis entres to the sleuthound, in time of chace and serching of guddis, sal be haldin participant with the crime and thift committit. Of fowlis, sic as leiffis of reif, ar sindry kindis in Scotland; as ernis, falconis, gois-halkis, sparhalkis, marlyonis, and sik like fowlis. Of watter fowlis is sa gret noumer, that it is wonder to heir. Mony uthir fowlis ar in Scotland, quhilikis ar sene in na uthir partis of the wrold; as capercailye, ane foul mair than ane ravin, quhilk leiffis allanerlie of barkis of treis. In Scotland ar mony mure cokis and hennis, quhilik etis noctt bot seid, or croppis of hadder. Sic like ar gret noumer of blak cokis and hennis, noctt unlike to ane fasiane, baith in quan-tite and sapoure of thair flesche; bot thay have blak fedderis and reid ee-breis. And beside thir thre uncouth kind of fowlis, is ane uthir kind of fowlis in the Mers, mair uncouth, namit gustardis, als mekle as ane swan; bot in the colour of thair fedderis, and gust of thair flesche, thay ar litil different fra ane pertrik. Thir last fowlis ar not frequent, bot in few noumer; and sa far haitis the cumpany of man, that gif thay find thair eggis aindit or twichit be men, thay leif thaim, and layis eggis in ane othir place. Thay lay thair eggis in the bair erd. All othir kind of fowlis ar in Scotland, on the same maner as thay ar in ony othir realmes. Of fische is mair plente in Scotland, speciallie of salmond, than is in ony uthir partis of the wrold. And, becaus the procreation and nature of salmond is uncouth and strange, we have inserit the maner thairof in this buke. Thir salmond, in the time of hervist, cumis up throw the smal watteris, speciallie quhare the watter is maist schauld and loun, and

spawnnis, with thair wamis plet to uthir. The hie fische spawnnis his meltis, and the scho fische hir rounis, and incontinent coveris thaim ouir with sand in the reveir; and, eftir thair spawning, thay grow sa lene and small, that na thing apperis on thaim bot skin and bane; and hes sa warsche gust, that thay ar unprofitable to eit. Sum men sayis, all othir salmond that metis thaim eftir thair spawning growis lene on the same maner as thay ar; for sindry of thaim ar found lene on the ta side, and fat on the tothir. Forthir, of thir rounis and meltis, quhilkis ar hid, as said is, under the sandis, growis, at the spring of the nixt yeir, small tender fische, na gretar than ane mannis thoume; and, gif thay be handillit, thay melt away like ane blob of watter. Alwayis, at the first streme of watter that risis, thay descend to the see; and, within xx dayis eftir, thay grow in mervellus quantite, and, with maist fervent desire and appetite, returnis to the samin placis quhair thay wer generit. Forthir, becaus mony of the watteris of Scotland ar full of linnis, als sone as thir salmond cumis to the lin, thay leip; and sa mony as ar wicht, or lepis weil, thay get up throw the lin, and returnis to the place quhair thay wer bred, and abidis thair quhil the season cum of thair generatioun. Utheris, quhilkis lepis nocth cleirlie ouir the lin, brekis thaimself be thair fall, and growis mesall. Utheris ar keppit in cawdrounis; for the landwart peple settis oftimes cawdrounis, playand with hait watter, at the cheik of the lin. Thus, quhen the salmondis faillis thair loup, thay fall callour in the said caldrounis, and ar than maist delitius to the mouth. It is defendit be our lawis, ta sla ony salmond fra the viii day of September, to the xv day of Novembre. Na man knawis quhair on thir fische leiffis; for na thing is found in thair wambe, quhen thay ar oppinnit, bot ane thik grosse humour.

Chap. Twelfth.

Of the sindry kindis of Mussillis and Cocolis in Scotland. Of the Perlis that ar gottin in thame. Of sindry uncouth and strange Fische. Of the nature of Hadder.



Ow we will schaw the nature of mussillis and cocolis, of quhilkis mony kindis ar amang us. Sum ar small, with the meit thairof richt delicius to the mouth: utheris ar mair, nocht unlike, in forme and quantite, to the samin mussillis that hes the purpere; and, howbeit thay have na thing thairof, thay ar yit richt delicius to the mouth: utheris ar lang and greter, callit Hors Mussillis, and ar gottin in sindry reveris, specialie in De and Done; and in thir mussillis ar generit the perlis. Thir mussillis, airlie in the morning, quhen the lift is cleir and temperat, opnis thair mouthis a litill abone the watter, and maist gredelie swellis the dew of the hevin; and, eftir the mesure and quantite of the dew that thay swellie, thay consave and bredis the perle. Thir mussillis ar sa doyn gleg of twiche and hering, that howbeit the voce be nevir so small that is maid on the bra beside thaim, or the stane be nevir sa small that is cassin in the watter, thay douk haistelie at anis, and gangis to the ground, knawing weil in quhat estimatioun and price the frute of thair wambe is to al peple. Als sone as the fischaris findis thir mussillis, thay thirst thaim fast togidder. The maner of thair taking followis: First, four or five personis passis in the rever togidder, and standis in maner of ane round cirkill within the watter to thair schulderis. Ilk ane of thaim hes ane staffe in thair hand, that thay soll nocht slide; and sinc thay luke and viseis throwe the cleir and purifyit watter, quhill thay se the mussillis; and, becaus thay may nocht tak thaim up with thair handis, thay cleik thaim up with thair tayis, and slingis thaim to the nixt brayis. The perlis that ar gottin in Scotland ar nocht of littill valoure; for thay have ane cleir schinand quhitnes, round and licht; and sum times ar als mekle as the naill of ane mannis fingar: of quhilkis we have

had part. It wes schawin to us, be thaim that come fra Sanct James, that thair is siclike mussillis in Spanye; bot thay have na perle, for thay leif in salt watter. In all the see-costis of Scotland ar coelis and mussillis on the same maner; thought tha be mair proffitable to the mouth, than ony procreatioun of perlis. Mony uncouth forme and figuris of fische ar in Scotland: sum of thaim armit with schellis; sum with hard skalis; and sum of thaim ar round as ane ball, bakkit like ane hurcheon, havand bot ane conduct baith to purge thair wambe and ressave thair meit. To schaw every kind of fische that is in Scotland, it wer bot ane faschious and vane lauboure; for the samin ar knawin to al cuntrieis. Of al othir kindis of fische is sa gret plente throw all partis of our seis, that, howbeit infinit noumer of thaim wer tane away on the ta day, na thing thairof sal be mist on the morow. Attoure ane thing is, that cumis not but singulare providence of God; for ay the mair derth and penurite of vittallis is in Scotland, the fische swoumis with the more abundance and plente. Attoure in all the desertis and muris of this realme growis ane herbe, namit hadder, but ony seid, richt nutritive baith to beistis and fowlis; specialie to beis. This herbe, in the moneth of July, hes ane floure of purpure hew, als sweit as huny. The Pichtis maid of this herbe, sum time, ane richt delicius and hailsum drink. Nnochtheless, the maner of the making of it is perist, be extermenioun of the said Pichtis out of Scotland; for thay schew nevir the craft of the making of this drink bot to thair awin blud. Attoure thair is na part of Scotland sa unprofitable, bot it producis othir irne, or ellis sum othir profitabile kind of metal; as may be notabilly provin throw all the Ilis of Scotland.

Chap. Thirteenth.

The Discriptioun of the Ilis of Scotland; and of the maist notabill thingis thairof.



EN we ar now falling in commoning of the Ilis, we will discribe the same, in maner and forme as followis. Fornens Scotland, to the Ireland seis, lyis XLIII Ilis; of quhilkis sum ar xxx milis lang, utheris XII milis, utheris mair, and utheris les. Thir Ilis wer callit be sum auctouris, Ebonie; and be utheris ar callit Hebredes. The principall Ile is the Ile of Man, quhilk lyis fornens Galloway, and wes sum time the principall seit of the preistis namit Driades; as Cornelius Tacitus, Cesar, in his Commentaris, and mony othir Romane auctouris testifyis. North fra the Ile of Man lyis Arrane, uthirwayis namit Botha. This seound name wes gevin to it be Sanct Brandane; for he biggit sum time ane hous in it, namit Both. Fra Arrane lyis Helaw, and Rothesay, namit fra the first Scot that brocht the Scottis out of Ireland in Albioun. Nocht far fra thir Ilis is Ailsay; quhair siclik plente of soland geis is, as we schew afore in the Bas. Fra Ailsay lyis mony uthir Ilis, devidit and severit be thair awin names, full of minis; sik as irne, tin, leid, and uthir metallis: Yit the maist notable Ile of Scotland is Ila, quhilk lyis, beyound the toung of Lorne, in the sicht of Lochquhabir; ane riche cuntre, xxx milis of lenth, richt plentuous of corne, and full of metallis, gif thair wer ony crafty and industrius peple to win the samin. Nocht far fra Ila lyis Cumbra, and Mula, als mekill as Ila, baith in lenth and breid. In this Ile of Mula is ane cleir fontane, two milis fra the see: fra this fontane discendis ane litil burne, or strip, rinnand ful of rounis to the seis. Thir rounis ar round and quhit, schinand like perle, full of thik humour; and, within two houris eftir that thay come to see, thay grow in gret cocles. Schort gait fra thir Ilis is Iona, uthirwayis namit Colmekill; in quhilk is ane abbay, full of devot religius men. This abbay wes the commoun sepulture of all Scottis kingis,

fra the time of King Fergus the Secound, to the time of King Malcolme Canmore, quhilk biggit the abbay of Dunfermling ; quhair the maist part of our kingis lyis, sen the fundatioun thairof. Passand forthwart to the north-nor-west seis, fornens Ros, is ane Ile namit Lewis, LX milis of lenth. In this Ile is bot ane revere. It is said, gif ony woman waid throw this watter at the spring of the yeir, thair sall na salmond be sene for that yeir in the said watter : otherwayis, it sall abound in gret plente. Beyound the Lewis lyis two Ilis, namit Sky and Rona. In this last Ile is incredible noumer of selch, pellok, and meirswine, na thing astonis for the sicht of men. The last and outmaist Ile is namit Hirtha ; quhare the elevatioun of the pole is LXIII greis. And, sen the elevatioun of the pole abone the Ile of Man is LVII greis, ilk gre extending to LXII milis and ane half in distance, as Ptolome and uthir astronomeris nowmeris, I conclude, that fra the Ile of Man, the first Ile of Albion, to Hirtha, the last Ile thairof, ar CCCLXXVII milis. This last Ile is namit Hirtha, quhilk, in Irsche, is callit ane scheip ; for in this Ile is gret nowmer of scheip, ilk ane gretar than ony gait buk, with hornis lang and thikkar than ony horne of ane bewgill, and hes lang talis hingand down to the erd. This Ile is circulit on every side with roche craggis ; and na baitis may land at it bot allanerly at ane place, in quhilk is ane strait and narow entres. Sum time thair might na pepill pas to this Ile but extreme dangeir of thair livis ; and yit thair is na passage to it bot quhen the seis ar cawme but ony tempest. In the moneth of Juny, ane preist cumis out of the Lewis in ane bait to this Ile, and ministeris the sacrament of baptisme to all the barnis that hes bene borne in the yeir afore. Als sone as this preist hes done his office, with certane messis, he ressavis the tindis of all thair commodityis, and returnis hame the same gait he come. In the Ile of Lewis ar two kirkis ; ane dedicat to Sanct Peter, and the tother dedicat to Sanct Clement. The fame is, als sone as the fire gangis furth in this Ile, the man that is haldin of maist clene and innocent life layis ane wosp of stra on the alter ; and, when the pepill are gevin maist devoutly to thair praers, the wosp kindellis in ane bleis. Beyound thir Ilis is yit ane uthir Ile, bot it is not inhabit with ony pepill. In it ar certane beistis, nocht far different fra the figure of schiep, sa wild that thay can nocht be tane but girnis : the hair of

thaim is lang and tattie, nothir like the woll of scheip nor gait. Betwix thir Ilis is oftmes richt dangerus passage : for the see, be contrarius stremes, makis collision ; sum times yettand out the tid, and sum times swelleand and soukand it in agane, with sa forcey violence, that quhen the schippis ar saland throw thir dangerus veilis, oftmes thay ar othir drownit, or ellis brokin on craggis. The gretest vele heirof is namit Corbrek ; for it will othir sink, or ellis draw ane schip to it, howbeit it be distant thairfra ane mile.

Chap. Fourteenth.

Of the nature of Claik Geis, and of the sindry maner of thair procreation ; and, Of the Ile of Thule.

ESTIS now to speik of the geis generit of the see, namit Clakis. Sum men belevis, that thir clakis growis on treis be the nebbis ; bot thair opinioun is vane. And, becaus the nature and procreatioun of thir clakis is strange, we have maid na litill lauboure and diligence to serche the treuth and verite thairof. We have salit throw the seis quhare thir clakis ar bred ; and findis, be gret experience, that the nature of the seis is mair relevant caus of thair procreatioun than ony uthir thing. And howbeit thir geis ar bred mony sindry wayis, thay ar bred ay allanerly be nature of the seis : for all treis that ar cassin in the seis, be proces of time apperis first worme-etic, and in the small boris and hollis thairof growis small wormis : first, thay schaw thair heid and feit, and last of all thay schaw thair plumis and wingis ; finaly, quhen thay ar cumin to the just mesure and quantite of geis, thay fle in the aire as othir fowlis dois : as was notably provin, in the yeir of God m.cccc.xc, in sicht of mony pepill, beside the castell of Petsle-go. Ane gret tre was brocht, be alluvion and flux of the see, to land. This wonderfull tre was brocht to the Lard of the ground, quhilk sone efter gart devide it be ane saw. Apperit than ane multitude of wormis thrrawing thaim self out of sindry hollis and boris of this tre.

Sum of thaim war rude, as thay war bot new schapin ; sum had baith heid, feit, and wingis, bot thay had na fedderis ; sum of thaim war perfit schapin fowlis. At last the pepill, havand ilk day this tre in mair admiration, brocht it to the kirk of Sanct Androis, beside the town of Tyre, quhare it remanis yit to our dayis. And, within two yeris efter, hapnit sic ane lik tre to cum in the firth of Tay, beside Dunde, worme-etin and hollit, full of young geis in the samin manner. Siclike, in the port of Leith, beside Edinburgh, within few yeris efter, hapnit sic ane like cais. Ane schip, namit the Cristofir, efter that scho had lyin IIII yeris at ane ankir in ane of thir Ilis, wes brocht to Leith ; and becaus hir timmer, as apperit, failyeit, scho was brokin down : incontinent apperit, as afore, al the inward partis of hir worme-etin, and all the hollis thairof full of geis, on the samin maner as we have schawin. Attoure, gif ony man wald allege, be vane argument, that this Cristofir was maid of sic treis as grew allanerly in the Ilis, and that all the rutis and treis that growis in the said Ilis, ar of that nature to be finaly, be nature of the seis, resolvit in geis ; we preif the cuntry thairof be ane notable example, schawin afore our ene. Maister Alexander Galloway, Person of Kinkell, was with us in thir Ilis, gevand his mind, with maist ernist besines, to serche the verite of thir obscure and misty dowtis ; and, be adventure, liftet up ane see-tangle, hingand full of mussill schellis fra the rute to the branchis. Sone efter, he opnit ane of thir mussill schellis : bot than he was mair astonis than afore ; for he saw na fische in it, bot ane perfit schapin foule, smal and gret ay offering to the quantite of the schell. This Clerk, knawin us richt desirus of sic uncouth thingis, come haistly with the said tangle, and opnit it to us, with all circumstance afore rehersit. Be thir, and mony othir reasonis and exemplis, we can not beleif that thir clakis ar producit be ony nature of treis or rutis thairof, bot allanerly be the nature of the occeane see, quhilk is the caus and production of mony wonderful thingis. And becaus the rude and ignorant pepil saw oftimes the frutis that fel of the treis, quhilkis stude neir the see, convertit within schort time in geis, thay beleivit that thir geis grew apon the treis, hingand be thair nebbis, siclik as appillis and uthir frutis hingis be thair stalkis. Bot thair opiniouen is nocht to be sustenit ; for, als sone

as thir appillis or frutis fallis of the tre in the see flude, thay grow first worme-eten, and, be schort proces of time, ar alterat in geis.

Now we have schawin sufficientlie ineuch of the Ilis of Scotland, gif we had schawin ane thing; that is to say, nocht allanerlie wes the Ile of Thule, with all the remanent Ilis of Scotland sene by us, bot als wer sene be mony Romane auctouris: for Cornelius Tacitus sayis, the Romane navy, quhilk wes send about the Ilis be command of Julius Agricola, saw this Ile of Thule, with the remanent Ilis liand thairabout. And thought Ptolome writtis, that the Ile of Thule lyis amang the Ilis of Scotland, yit his writing, be provin experience, may have na faith: for Thule is mony milis distant fra Schetland; for Schetland lyis beyound Orknay, approcchand to Noroway. Sum auctouris sayis, that Thule is the samin Ile that we call Island: for thir auctouris sayis, that Thule is the last Ile of the oceane see; and sa is Island; quhilk lyis in the cauld and frosty seis beyound the cirkill artik to the north pole. The peple of Island, becaus na cornis growis in it, leiffis allanerlie of fische. Thay bray dry fische als small as meil, and baikis thaim with watter at the fire, and usis it in maner of breid.

Chap. Fifteenth.

The Discriptionoun of Orknay, Schetland, with sindry uthir small Ilis; and of the maneris and conditionis of the Peple thairof.



EYOUND all the Ilis of Scotland lyis Orknay; sum part to the north-nor-west seis, and sum part to the Almane seis. The principall Ile of Orknay is Pomonia, the bischoppis seit, in quhilk ar two strong castellis. In Orknay growis na quheit; and it is nakit of wod: all othir cornis growis in it with gret plente. Orknay hes na vennomous beistis, more than Ireland; na beist, enmire to the nature of man, may leif in Orknay. And sen we ar now fallin in speking of Ireland, howbeit it pertenis na thing to the purpos we tuke on hand, we will schaw ane wonder thairof, quhilk passis all wonderis that evir we red

afore in ony othir bukis. In Ireland is ane loch, and about the samin, be mony milis, growis nothir herbe nor tre. And, gif ony tre be affixit and set doun in this loch, within the space of ane yeir eftir, this tre alteris: for sa mekle of it as is hid within the erd, turnis in ane hard stane; it that is hid in the watter, turnis in irne; and sa mekle as is abone the watter, kepis the nature of the tre: and so the tre, stane, and irne, ar junit togidder under ane stok. Bot we will returne to Orknay, to schaw litill les wonderis of it. And, first, howbeit the pepill be gevin to excessive drinkin, and, be plente of beir, makis the starker ail of Albioun, yit nane of thaim ar sene wod, daft, or drunkin: als thay come haill and feir in thair bodyis to extreme age, but ony use of medicinary, with strang and fair bodyis. The yowis of this cuntry hes ay two lammis, or ellis thre, at anis; and of wild foul and tame, is mair fouth in Orknay than in ony part of Albioun. Thair hors ar litill mair than asinis; bot thay may indure mair labour than ony othir hors. To speik of fische, thair is mair abundance thairof than ony uncouth peple may beleif. In Orknay is ane gret fische, mair than ony hors, of mervellus and incredible sleip. This fische, quhen scho beginnis to sleip, fesnis hir teith fast on ane crag abone the watter. Als sone as the marineris findis hir on sleip, thay cum with ane stark cabill in ane boit; and, eftir that thay have borit ane gret hole throw hir tale, thay fesne hir be the samin. Als sone as this fische is awalknit, scho makis hir to leip with gret force in the see; and, fra scho find hirself fast, scho writhis hir out of hir awin skin, and deis. Of the fatnes that scho hes, is maid oulie in gret quantite; and of hir skin, becaus it induris lang, is maid strong cabellis. Ane hundred milis beyound Orknay lyis Schetland; of quhilk the riches standis onlie in fische, dryit be son. Mony hidis and skinnis of oxin, scheip, gait, and martrikis, dryit with the sonne, cumis out of this cuntry in Scotland; and, on the same maner, the marchandis of Holland, Zeland, and Almanie, cumis yeirlie to Schetland, to interchange uthir marchandydis with the peple thairof; quhilkis ar of the same nature and conditionis as the peple is of Orknay. Beyound Schetland ar mony Ilis, quhilkis leiffis on the same maner as it dois. And, thought the peple of thir Islis be pure, yit thay leif langer, and ar better content of thair livis, than thay that hes mair welth and riches of the warld.

Na contentioun is amang thaim for singulare proffet. Ilk man providis for sa mekle fische, in the simer, as may sustene his hous agane the winter. Thir peple ar nakit of all ambition and vice, and nevir trublit with uncouth weris. Amang all plesairis, quhilks ar josit be mankind, thay think na thing sa gud, as to leif in concord and peace, havand ane quiet life but ony uthir displesair. This perfection of life cumis to thaim onlie throw thair simplicite; and followis, be the samin, the futsteppis of Crist. Ilk yeir, anis cumis to thaim ane preist out of Orknay, and ministris to thaim the sacrament of baptisme; and, eftir that he haif done his devore, he resavis his teindis justlie, and returnis, the samin gait he come, to Orknay. Forthir, gif ony giftis of nature may be noumerit amang wardly guddis, I say thir Ilis hes may feliciteis and guddis than ony uthir cuntrieis: for the peple thairof ar fair, lusty, and strong of body; dotat with mony giftis of nature; and hes gud heill of body, quhilk may be preferrit to all riches, as weil knawis thir men that hes experiance of lang infirmiteis. Forthir, gif the peple be maist riche, that standis sa content with thair awin guddis, that thay ~~ever~~ vet na utheris, I say thir peple ar als happy as ony uthir peple of the warld. Forthir, gif ony man wald say thir thingis that I writ ar vane, considrin I wes nevir in thir Ilis; I say, I wes weil informit of thame be ane noble man, Edward, sum time Bischop of Orknay: for to this Bischop come ane man out of thir Ilis, and noctt allannerlie schew thir thingis, with all circumstance afore rehersit, bot als verifyit thaim be himself; for he passit the commoun stature of men, and sa wicht, that na man durst contend nor wersle with him; and he wes fairer of visage and hide, than wes ony lady of the warld. Be thir reasonis apperis, that the auctorite of thay auctouris is na worth, that sayis, all peple far fra the sonne ar barbour and miserable; for thair is na happiar creaturis in the warld than thir peple of thir landis forsaid. Amang the rochis and craggis of thir Ilis growis ane maner of electuar and goum, hewit like gold, and sa attractive of nature, that it drawis stra, flox, or hemmis of claithis to it, on the samin maner as dois ane adamont stane. This goume is generat of see froith, quhilks is cassin up be continewal repercussion of craggis aganis the see wallis; and, throw ithand motioun of the see, it growis als teuch as glew, ay mair and mair; quhill, at last, it

fallis doun of the crag in the see. It is said, be thaim that hes experience thairof, that this goum, quhen it lyis on the crag, is like ane froith and blob of watter; becaus it is noct than sufficientlie wrocht be motioun of the see. Oftimes the see tangle is found involvit with this goume; becaus it is doung heir and thair sa mony wayis be alluvion of watter, and, sa lang as it fletis, it is sone involvit with ony thing that it metis. Twa yeir afore the cumin of this buke to licht, arrivit ane gret lomp of this goum in Buchquhane, als mekle as ane hors; and wes brocht hame be the hirdis, quhilkis wer kepand thair beistis, to thair housis, and cassin in the fire. And, becaus thay fand ane smelland odour thairwith, thay schew to thair maister, that it wes ganand for the sens that is maid in the kirkis. Thair maister wes ane rud man as thay wer; and tuke bot ane litill part thairof, and left the remenant behind him, as mater of litill effect. All the partis of this goum, quhen it wes brokin, wes of the hew of gold, and schane like the licht of ane candill. The maist part of this goum and electuare wes distroyit be rūd peple, afore it come to ony wise mannis eris; of quhome may be verifyit the proverb, The sow curis na balme. Als sone as I wes advertist thairof, I maid sic diligence, that ane part of it wes brocht to me at Abirdene. Thir ar the maist notable thingis that we culd find concerning the Ilis of Albioun, Orknay, and Schetland.

Thus, it wer neidfull to put ane end to our Cosmographie, wer nocth ane uncouth and wounderfull historic taris a litill our pen. Maister James Ogilby, with uthir noble men, wes send as ambassatouris fra the maist noble prince King James the Feird to the King of France; and, be tempest of see, thay wer constrainit to land in Norroway, quhare thay saw, nocth far fra thaim, mony wild men, nakit and roch, on the same maner as thay ar paintit: and, at last, thay gat advertising be landwart peple, that thay wer doum beistis, under the figure of men. In time of nicht, thay usit to cum in gret cumpanyis to landwart villagis; and, quhair thay find na doggis, thay brek up durris, and slayis al the peple that thay find thairintill. Als sone as thay heir the nois of doggis, thay evanis, and dar nocth abide. Thay ar of sa huge strenth, that sum times thay pull up treis be the rutis, and fechtis thairwith amang thaim self. The ambassatouris wer astonist be thir monstouris, and maid stark waches,

Na contentioun is amang thaim for singulare proffet. Ilk man providis for sa mekle fische, in the simer, as may sustene his hous agane the winter. Thir peple ar nakit of all ambition and vice, and never trublit with uncouth weris. Amang all plesairis, quhilks ar josit be mankind, thay think na thing sa gud, as to leif in concord and peace, havand ane quiet life but ony uthir displesair. This perfection of life cumis to thaim onlie throw thair simplicite; and followis, be the samin, the futsteppis of Crist. Ilk yeir, anis cumis to thaim ane preist out of Orknay, and ministris to thaim the sacrament of baptisme; and, eftir that he haif done his devore, he resavis his teindis justlie, and returnis, the samin gait he come, to Orknay. Forthir, gif ony giftis of nature may be noumerit amang wardly guddis, I say thir Ilis hes may feliciteis and guddis than ony uthir cuntrieis: for the peple thairof ar fair, lusty, and strong of body; dotat with mony giftis of nature; and hes gud heill of body, quhilk may be preferrit to all riches, as weil knawis thir men that hes experience of lang infirmiteis. Forthir, gif the peple be maist riche, that standis sa content with thair awin guddis, that they ~~ever~~ vet na utheris, I say thir peple ar als happy as ony uthir peple of the warld. Forthir, gif ony man wald say thir thingis that I writ ar vane, considrin I wes nevir in thir Ilis; I say, I wes weil informit of thame be ane noble man, Edward, sum time Bischop of Orknay: for to this Bischop come ane man out of thir Ilis, and nocht allannerlie schew thir thingis, with all circumstance afore rehersit, bot als verifyit thaim be himself; for he passit the commoun stature of men, and sa wicht, that na man durst contend nor wersle with him; and he wes fairer of visage and hide, than wes ony lady of the warld. Be thir reasonis apperis, that the auctorite of thay auctouris is na worth, that sayis, all peple far fra the sonne ar barbour and miserable; for thair is na happiar creaturis in the warld than thir peple of thir landis forsaid. Amang the rochis and craggis of thir Ilis growis ane maner of electuar and goum, hewit like gold, and sa attractive of nature, that it drawis stra, flox, or hemmis of claithis to it, on the samin maner as dois ane adamont stane. This goume is generat of see froith, quhilks is cassin up be continewal repercussion of craggis aganis the see wallis; and, throw ithand motioun of the see, it growis als teuch as glew, ay mair and mair; quhill, at last, it

fallis doun of the crag in the see. It is said, be thaim that hes experience thairof, that this goum, quhen it lyis on the crag, is like ane froith and blob of watter; becaus it is nocht than sufficientlie wrocht be motioun of the see. Oftimes the see tangle is found involvit with this goume; becaus it is doung heir and thair sa mony wayis be alluvion of watter, and, sa lang as it fletis, it is sone involvit with ony thing that it metis. Twa yeir afore the cumin of this buke to licht, arrivit ane gret lomp of this goum in Buchquhane, als mekle as ane hors; and wes brocht hame be the hirdis, quhilkis wer kepand thair beistis, to thair housis, and cassin in the fire. And, becaus thay fand ane smellass odour thairwith, thay schew to thair maister, that it wes ganand for the sens that is maid in the kirkis. Thair maister wes ane rud man as thay wer; and tuke bot ane litill part thairof, and left the remenant behind him, as mater of litill effect. All the partis of this goum, quhen it wes brokin, wes of the hew of gold, and schane like the licht of ane candill. The maist part of this goum and electuare wes distroyit be rud peple, afore it come to ony wise mannis eris; of quhome may be verifyit the proverb, The sow curis na balme. Als sone as I wes advertist thairof, I maid sic diligence, that ane part of it wes brocht to me at Abirdene. Thir ar the maist notable thingis that we culd find concerning the Ilis of Albioun, Orknay, and Schetland.

Thus, it wer neidfull to put ane end to our Cosmographie, wer nocht ane uncouth and wounderfull historie taris a litill our pen. Maister James Ogilby, with uthir noble men, wes send as ambassatouris fra the maist noble prince King James the Feird to the King of France; and, be tempest of see, thay wer constrainit to land in Norroway, quhare thay saw, nocht far fra thaim, mony wild men, nakit and roch, on the same maner as thay ar paintit: and, at last, thay gat advertising be landwart peple, that thay wer doum beistis, under the figure of men. In time of nicht, thay usit to cum in gret cumpanyis to landwart villagis; and, quhair thay find na doggis, thay brek up durris, and slayis al the peple that thay find thairintill. Als sone as thay heir the nois of doggis, thay evanis, and dar nocht abide. Thay ar of sa huge strenth, that sum times thay pull up treis be the rutis, and fechtis thairwith amang thaim self. The ambassatouris wer astonist be thir monstouris, and maid stark waches,

with gret firis birnand all nicht ; and, on the morow, thay pullit up salis, and departit. Forthir, thir Norroway men schew to the said ambassatouris, that thair wes nocht far fra thaim ane peple that swomit all the simer like fische in the see, leiffand ay on fische ; and in the winter, becaus the watter is cald, thay leif of wild beistis that descendis fra the montanis ; and sum time bringis thir bestis hame to thair covis.

And sa endis heir the Cosmographie and Discriptioun of Scotland.

Ane prudent doctrine maid be the Auctoure, concerning baith the new Maneris and the auld of Scottis.


 ECAUS sindry nobill men hes desirit me to schaw the auld maneris of Scottis, quhilkis ar skatterit in sindry partis of this Buke, under ane compendius treit, that it may be knawin, how far we, in thir present dayis, ar different fra the maneris and leiffing of our auld faderis : and thought I knew na thing bettar, bot the schawing thairof will draw me in hatrent of sindry gret personagis ; for few ar, that may suffir thair vices to be taxit, or thaimself to be reprevit ; yit, becaus I stand sum part under the reverence of thir nobill men forsaid, I have condiscendit, as I may, to thair desiris. For thay allege, it will be profitable to the redaris ; speciallie to sik men, that ar nocht gevin ouir immoderatlie to thair awin affectioun, nor yit ouir mekill sopit in sensuall plesair ; for sik men may be reducit fra thair errorris. And, thairfore, I intend, first, to schaw, quhat maneris hes bene amang our eldaris, baith in time of weir and peace ; and be quhat ingine, wisdome, and chevelrie, thay have debatit aganis sa mony strong ennimes, howbeit thair ennimes come oftentimes in this realme with maist dangerus incursionis : and, finalie, we will schaw, how the notable strenth, vigour, and soverane virtew, failyeit ay the mair amang thaim, that thay declinit fra the temperance of thair eldaris :

quhill, at last, it is cumin to thir dayis, in quhilkis we leif in gret tranquillite; howbeit the samin is mair be benevolence and sleuth of our nichtbouris, than ony manlie prowis of our self. Now will I schaw, the schortest way I may, how we, in thir present dayis, ar drownit in all maner of avarice and lust. Yit I belief, that sic men as ar of severe life, following the temperance of thair eldaris, sall rejose to heir the honourable maneris of thair eldaris; utheris, that ar of mair brutall and vicius life, seing thair vices taxit with sic dis-honour, sall dres thaim plesandlie to revert, fra thair evil and schamefull dedis, to better life. First, I suppose, that the thing that I say, in repreving the corrupt maneris of the wrold now present, be nocht takin in repreif of every man; bot allanerlie to sik men that leiffis with intemperance: for sik men deservis mair repreif than I may gif thaim at this time. And gif ony man findis his bile opnit for purgatioun be me, that he hide nocht his infirmite, bot erar seik the best rameid he may, to amend his life.

Our eldaris, howbeit thay wer richt virtewis baith in weir and peace, wer maist exercit with temperance; for it is the fontane of all virtew. Thay wer of temperat sleip, meit, and drink, and sic refectionis as wer preparit with litill laubour or cost. Thair breid wes maid of sic stuf as grew maist esalie on the ground. Thair vitallis wer nocht sifit, as we do now, to mak thaim delicius to the mouth; bot wer all ground togidder under ane forme. The flesche maist frequent amang thame, wes othir wild flesche, won on the fellis be thair hunting, quhilk maid thaim of incredible strenth; or ellis it wes of thair awin tame bestial, specially beif, as we do yit in our dayis: howbeit we ar richt far different fra the use and custome of all uthir nationis. The steirkis, quhen thay ar bot young velis, ar othir slane, or ellis libbit to be oxin, to manure the land; bot the quiokis war nevir slane quhill thay wer with calfe, for than thay ar fattest, and maist delicius to the mouth. The common meit of our eldaris was fische; nocht for the plente of it, bot erar becaus thair landis lay oftimes waist, throw continewal exercition of chevelry, and for that caus thay leiffit maist of fische. Thay disjunit airly in the morning with smal refectioun, and sustenit thair liffis thairwith quhil the time of sowper; throw quhilk thair stomok was nevir surfetly chargit, to empesche thaim of uthir besines. At the sowper thay

war mair large ; howbeit thay had bot ane cours. Quhen thay kest thaimself to be mery, thay usit maist aqua vite ; noct maid of costly spicis, bot of sic naturall herbis as grew in thair awin yardis. The common drink that thay usit was aill ; and, in time of weir, quhen thay lay in thair tentis, thay usit noct bot watter. Ilk man had als mekill mele as nicht suffice him for the day, and maid breid thairof at the fire ; on the samin maner as the Romanis did, specialy Antonius Caratallus, Empriour. Thay had sendill flesche in thair campis, bot gif it war won be pray of ennimes. Thay eit, for common, flesche half raw ; for the saup is maist nurisand in that maner. Attoure, thay had ay with thaim ane gret vessell, wrocht full of butter, cheis, mele, milk, and vinacre, temperit togidder ; be quhilk thay saiffit thair liffis mony dayis fra extreme hungar, soukand the jus and humouris thairof, quhen na vittallis, throw incursionis of ennimes, nicht be found. And, howbeit thay had peace with thair ennimes, thay sufferit nocth thair bodyis to be corruppit with sleuth ; bot wer exercit othir in continewall hunting ; for in that game was gret honour amang our eldaris ; or ellis thay had exercition of rinning, sum times fra the planes to the montanis, and fra the montanis to the planis ; or ellis thay war exercit in wirsling, or uthir corporall exercition. Thay had thair hedis ay cowit, as the Spanyeartis usis ; but ony bonet or cover, les than thay war trublit with infirmite. Nane of thame, throw ithand cowing of thair hedis, grew beld. Thay yeid commonly baifutit ; and, gif thay had ony schone, thay dippit thaim first in the watter or thay put thaim on, specialy in winter quhen maist schill and persand stormes apperit, that thair sollis, quhilkis war hardin with the hetis of the semer and snawis of winter, suld be the mair abil to sustene laubour. Thair abulyement was not maid be motion of insolence, bot erar efter the general gise of the centre. Thair hois war maid of smal lint or woll, and yeid nevir above thair kne, to make thaim the mair waldin and sowpill. The mantillis that thay usit in winter wes maid of gros woll ; and in semer wes maid of small and finest woll that thay nicht get. Thay slepit on benkis, or bonchis of stra, bot ony cover ; and lernit thair sonnis, fra thair first yeris, to eschew eis, and to sleep on the samin maner. Ilk moder wes nurice to her awin barne. It was ane suspicion of adulstre aganis ony woman, quhare hir milk failyeit. The

wemen thocht thair barnis war not tender nor kindly to thaim, bot gif thay war nurist als weill with the milk of thair breist, as thay war nurist afore with the blude of thair wambe. Attoure, thay held that thair barnis war degenerat fra thair nature and kind, gif thay war nurist with uncouth milk. Thay war sa accustomit with ithand pine and laubouris, that thay curit nothir the fervent heites of the semer, nor yit the schil frostis in the winter. Thay travelit maist on thair fute; and, in the time of weir, thay had thair cariagis and vittallis turst with thaim on thair hors: and, quhen dangeir occurrit, thay refusit na maner of besines nor laubour that micht pertene to forsy campionis. Gif it hapnit thaim, be mischance, to be vincust, thay fled with sic sped to the montanis, that na horsmen micht ouirtak thaim. The injure done to ony ane of thaim, was repute sa common to thaim al, that thay wald nevir evoid the displesair thairof out of thair hertis, quhill the samin war recompanxit with the blude of thair ennimes. He that wes maist noble, desirit erest to fecht in the wangard, quhare his vassalage and manheid micht be maist knawin. The nobillis and commonis contendit quhay suld be maist faithful to othir; and quhen the capitane, throw his fers spreit and hardines, apperit in ony extreme dangeir of ennimes, all the band that was of his opinion, ruschit sa fersly to his defence, that othir thay deliverit him out of that present dangeir, or ellis all at anis lois thair lives with him. The sepulturis of all nobillis war decorit with als mony hie stanis, rising about the same, as he had slane afore of ennimes in his life. He that was found in the army but flint and furisine, or but his swerd beltit fast to his sidis, was shamefully scurgit; and he that sald his swerd, or laid it to wed, was degradit of auctorite, and banist, as unworthy creature, out of thair company. He that fled in time of battall, or departit fra the army without command of the capitane, was slane, but ony dowme, quhare evir he micht be apprehendit; bot his gudis war gevin to his sonne. The wemen war of litil les vassalage and strent than was the men; for al rank madannis and wiffis, gif thay war noct with child, yeid als weill to battall as the men. Als sone as the army was passand forthwart, thay slew the first levand beist that thay fand; aud noct allanerly baithit thair swerdis with the blude thairof, bot taistit the

samin with thair mouth, with na les religion and faith, than they had bene than sicker of sum felicite following. Gif they saw thair awin blude in battall, they grew nocht astonisit; bot, boldin in maist brime fury, set thaim to revenge the samin. In all battallis assail-yeit be thaim, they socht nevir victory be treason, falset, nor slicht; and thocht ay degrading to thair nobilitie, to vineus thair ennimes with ony othir thing bot force of fechting. Thay held it for gret febilnes to revenge ony displesir, hatrent, or slauchter, be treason; attour, sencerite and simpilnes was equaly honorit amang thaim all. Quhen they war to pas on thair ennimes, ilk man yeid, as we do now, apon his awin cost, except sa mony as war wagit. He that was trublit with the falling evil, or fallin daft or wod, or havand sic infirmitie as succedis be heritage fra the fader to the son, was geldit; that his infeikit blude suld spreid na forthir. The wemen that was fallin lipper, or had ony othir infection of blude, was banist fra the eumpany of men; and, gif scho consavit barne under sic infirmite, baith scho and hir barne war buryit quik. All dronkattis, glutonis, and consumers of vittallis, mair than was necessar to the sustentation of men, were tane, and first commandit to swelly thair fouth of quhat drink they plesit, and incontinent thairefter was drownit in ane fresche rever. Forthir, howbeit they had na administratioun of justice in time of weir, yit sic justice was ministered in time of peace, that oftimes they war ouir severe in thair punition; for they knew weil, fra thair pepil wer drawin fra battall to peace, they suld be gevin to sa mony enormiteis, that the samin nicht nocht be dantit but gret punition. For the pepill war of sic nature, als sone as they knew thaimself guilty of ony offence committit aganis the kingis majeste or commounweill, they set thaim to rais divisioune amang the gret princis of the realme: nochtheles, quhen they ar tretit with soft and moderat empire, they ar found richt humane and meke pepil, richt obeysand to reason; and nocht allanerly kepis thair faith efter the reason of thair contract, bot gevis ane gowpin, or ellis sum thingis mair abone the just mesure that they sell. This consuetude is sa straitly kepit, that gif the samin be nocht done, the biar will nocht stand to the contract of merchandice. Thay usit the ritis and maneris of Egyptianis, fra quhome they tuk thair first beginning. In all thair secret besines, they usit not to writ with common letteris

usit amang othir pepil, bot erar with sifars and figuris of beistis maid in maner of letteris ; sic as thair epithafis, and superscriptioun abone thair sepulturis, schawis : nochtheles, this crafty maner of writing, be quhat sleuth I can not say, is perist ; and yit thay have certane letteris propir amang thaimself, quhilkis war sum time vulgar and commoun. Forthir, thay that spekis with the auld toung of that cuntry, hes thair asperatioun, thair diptongis, and thair pronunciation, better than ony othir pepill. The commonis ar nocht exercit thairwith ; bot allanerly thay that dwellis in the hie partis of the land : and, becaus thir men hes thair langage mair eloquent and propir than the commonis hes, thay ar callit poetis ; and makis poetis, effering to thair eruditiooun and science, with mony gret ceremonyis. Beside mony craftis and science, quhilkis thay have translatit in thair awin toung, thay profes maist the science of medicinari, and ar richt excellent in it ; for thay knew the nature of every herbe that growis in thay cuntries, and curis all maner of maledyis thairwith. Heirfore I say, thair is na region in the wrold sa barrant nor unfrutfull, be distance fra the sonne, bot, be providence of God, all maner of necessaryis, to the sustentatioun of man, may be gottin plesantly in it, gif thair war sic pepill that culd laubour it, effering to the nature thairof. Nnochtheles, as our eldaris, quhilkis dwelt continewally merchand with the realme of Ingland, lernit the Saxonis toung, be frequent jeoperdeis and chance of battall, sustenit mony yeris aganis thaim ; sa the pepill, now present in Scotland, hes tint baith the langage and maneris of writing usit sum time be our eldaris, and hes now ane new maner of writingis and langage : howbeit, the Hieland hes baith the writingis and langage as thay had afore, mair ingenius than ony othir pepill. How may thair be ane greter ingine, than to make ane bait of ane bull hid, bound with na thing bot wandis ? This bait is callit ane currok ; with the quhilk thay fische salmond, and sum time passis ouir gret rivers thairwith ; and, quhen thay have done thair fisching, thay beir it to ony place, on thair bak, quhare thay pleis. Bot we wil return to the maneris of our anciant freindis.

Be chance of sindry seasonis, specialy about the time of King Malcolme Canmore, al thingis began to change. For quhen oure nichtbouris, the Britonis, war maid effeminat be lang sleuth, and

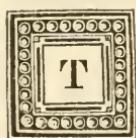
doung out of Britane be the Saxonis in Walis, we began to have alliance, be proximite of Romanis, with Inglismen; specially after the extermioun of Pichtis: and, be frequent and daily cumpany of thaim, we began to rute thair langage and superflew maneris in oure breistis; throw quhilk the virtew and temperance of our eldaris began to be of litil estimation amang us. Than we war gevin, efter the arrogance and pride of Inglismen, to vane glore and ambition of honouris, and began that time to seke new names of nobilit; howbeit, afore thay dayis, he was maist nobil, that was decorit mair with virtew than riches, confiding mair in his awin dedis, than in ony dedis of his eldaris. Than began, in Scotland, the maneris of Dukis, Erlis, Lordis, and Baronis; for afore thay dayis, the principall men of Scotland under the king war callit Thanis, that is to say, Gadderaris of the Kingis malis; and war ay rewardit be the king, as thair faith and virtew deservit. Bot now I beleif nane hes sic eloquence, nor fouth of langage, that can sufficiently declarre, how far we, in thir present dayis, ar different fra the virtew and temperance of our eldaris. For quhare our eldaris had sobriete, we have ebriete and dronkinnes; quhare thay had plente with sufficience, we have immoderat cursis with superfluite; as he war maist noble and honest, that culd devore and swelly maist: and, be extreme diligence, serchis sa mony deligat coursis, that thay provoke the stomok to ressave mair than it may sufficiently degest; throw quhilk we ingorge and fillis our self, day and nicht, sa full of metis and drinkis, that we can nocht abstene, quhill our wambe be sa swon, that it is unabill to ony virtewis occupation. And nocht allanerly may surfet dennar and sowper suffice us, abone the temperance of oure eldaris, bot als to continew our schamefull and immoderit voracie with duble dennaris and sowparis; throw quhilk mony of us ganis to na othir besines bot to fil and teme our wembe Attour to continew this schamefull intemperance, abone the necessar sustentation of nature, we geif us to sic unhappy laubour, that na fische in the see, nor foule in the aire, nor best in the wod, may have rest; bot socht heir and thair, to satisfy the hungry appetit of glutonis. Nocht allanerly ar winis socht in France, bot in Spainye, Italy, and Grece; and, sum time, baith Aphrik and Asia socht, for new delicius metis and winis, to the samin effect. Thus is the warld sa uter-

ly socht, that all maner of droggis and electuaris, that may nuris the lust and insolence of pepill, ar brocht in Scotland, with maist sumptuous price, to na les dammage than perdition of the pepill thairof: for, throw this immoderat glutony, our wit and reason ar sa blindit within the presoun of the body, that it may have no knawlage of hevinly thingis; for the body is involvit with sic clowdis of fatnes, that, howbeit it be of gud complexioun be nature, it is sa opprest with superflew metis and drinkis, that it may nothir weild, nor yit ouir the self; bot, confessand the self vincust, gevis place to all infirmiteis, quhill it be miserably distroyit: as apperis be sindry experience. For mony of our pepill, in remot and in maist cauld region, ar strikin oftmes with maist vehement fever, thair inward bowellis blesand as thay war in ane ithand fire; qubilkis cumis of sic spicery and uncouth droggis, brocht out of remot cuntries in this regioun. Utheris of thaim ar sa swollin, and growin full of humouris, that thay ar strikin haistely deid in the poplesy; and, howbeit thay recover for ane schort time efter, thay ar bot ane deid pepill; levand, and buryit in sepulture, havand bot ane schadow of life. The young pepill and barnis, following thir unhappy customis of thair faderis, gevis thameself to lust and insolence, havand all virtuous occupation and craftis in contemptioun; and, becaus thay ar lang customit and hantit thairwith, quhen time occurris of weir to defend the cuntry, thay ar sa effeminat and soft, thay pas on hors as hevy martis; and ar sa fat and growin, that thay may do na thing in compare of the soverane manheid of thair eldaris. Als sone as thay ar returnit hame, becaus thair guddis ar not sufficient to nuris thame in voluptuous life and plesoir of thair wambe, thay ar gevin to all maner of avarice; and othir castis thame to be strang and maistrifull thevis, or ellis sawaris of dissention amang the nobillis.

Thir, and mony othir enormiteis following thaim, procedis originally fra the fontane of voluptuous leving and intemperance. Nochttheles, wald we refrene us thairfra, I wait thair is na region under the sonne mair halsum, nor les subdewit to pestilence; nor yit mair commodius and nurisand of the life of man. Yit I am nocht sa disparit, bot traistis, within schort time, that all corruppit maneris of our pepill sal be reparit to ane better fassoun: for nocht allanerly, in sindry partis of this realme, remanis yit the futsteppis of mony

auld virtewis usit sum time amang our eldaris, bot als risis every day new fervent devotiou, to the ornament of Cristin faith. Ane thing I will say, under reverence of uthir realmes ; thair was nevir pepill mair sicker in the Cristin faith, nor yit mair constant in thair faithful promis, than the Scottis hes bene, ay sen thair first beginning ; and, thairfore, I say ane thing finaly, nocht allanerly for thair loving, bot als in exhortation of thair perseverance : In sa far as our pepill, presently levand in this region, passis thair eldaris in sumptuous and riatus abulyement, in sa far thay ar mair eligant and honest in thair housis and letteris, and mair magnificent than afore in ornament of thair kirkis and templis. Thus want thay na maner of virtew that thair eldaris had, except the temperance of thair bodyis : to quhilk mot bring thame haistely the blissit Lord ! Amen.

*Followis, Ane Compendius Recapitulation of all Kingis of Britane ;
sen the first beginning thairof, to the time of King Henry the
VIII.*

HE history of Scotland is sa implicat with the history of Ingland, that it is difficult to know. And becaus the crown of Ingland hes bene josit with sindry pepill, be sindry chances and variance oftimes, I thocht expedient, for commodite and plescir of redaris, to nowmer thair geneology first fra Brutus ; be quhom the Britonis war brocht out of Grece in this Ile of Albion, fra the beginning of the warld, **MMMM.XXVII** yeris ; and josit the crown of Britane be the space of **m.c.xvi** yeris. In quhilk time, thay war invadit cruelly be Julius Cesar ; and not ony vineust, bot thair realm maid tributar, in forme of province. And howbeit thir Britonis had kingis lang time namit of the Britonis blud, yit thair realme was governit ay be Romanis, to the yeir of God, **cccc.xxxvi** yeris : and in that season thay war subdewit to Scottis and Pichtis ; and nocht allanerly maid tributaris to thaim **xxx** yeris, bot gaif ouir mekill of thair landis to the empire of Scottis and Pichtis : as Paulus Diaconus, Beda, Sabellicus, and mony othir recent authouris, schawis at lenth in thair historyis. Nochtheles, thir

Britonis, impatient to sustene the empire of barbar pepill, becaus thay war accustomit afore with Romane plesuiris, chesit Constantine, the son of Androenus, Duke of Bertanye, to be king, in hatrent of Scottis and Pichtis. This Constantine come with sic piissance and army in Britane, that he deliverit the Britonis of all servitude, and recoverit thair realme fra our redemption, cccc.lxv yeris. Efter Constantine, rang Constantius, his son; and efter Constantius, rang Vortigern, the space of xxii yeris. In the mene time, the Scottis and Pichtis rais with sic army, that thay almaist subdewit the Britonis agane to servitude. Throw quhilk, Vortigern wes constranit to seke support of Saxonis; and, be thair weris, resistit certane yeris, al invasion of Scottis and Pichtis: quhill, at last, he was tane be slight of Hengist, and brocht to extreme servitude; and banist, with all the Britonis, in Walis. Thus come the remanent boundis of Britane under the empire of Hengist, and called Hengist-land, and the pepill thairof Hengistis men; bot now, be corruption of langage, the realme is callit Ingland, and the pepill Ingismen. The Britonis war not onely disparit be this trubil, bot, mony yeris efter, faucht aganis Ingismen be King Arthure, with sindry chancis of fortoun; bot, efter his deith, thay war subdewit agane, and content to be callit Ingismen, under ane name with Saxonis. Fra the deith of King Arthure, quhilk was in the yeir of God d.XLII yeris, to the yeir of God M.XVI yeris, the realme of Ingland was gedit be Ingismen ay under the empire of ane king: bot sone efter it was devudit in vii sindry kingdomes; and brocht agane to the empire of ane king, under the samin marchis that it hes now. And not lang efter, it was subdewit and conquest be Danis; and v kingis of thair blud, continewally efter othir succeding: of quhom the last was namit Hardy Canute; quhilk maid mony proude lawis abone Ingismen, and rang with sic tiranny, that the Ingismen finally rebellit, and slew all the Danis within the space of ane nicht. Hardy Canute, invadit on al sidis, slew himself be disperation. The Ingismen, efter his slauchter,creat Edward, the son of King Eldrede, thair king; for this Eldrede rang abone thame afore the cuming of Danis. Nochtheles the Ingismen, efter the slauchter of King Edward, quhilk was ekit, for his haly lif, to the nowmer of Sanctis, dred that the Danis suld cum on thame with new battall,

and thairfore creat Herald thair king; for he was discendit baith of the linnage of Inglysmen and Danis. Thus was Edward, nevo to Sanct Edward, and bruthir to Sanct Margaret, the haly Quene of Scotland, disherist of the crown of Ingland. This Herald, gevin to rage and insolence of lust, maryit the douchter of William, Bastard of Normandy, and, within few dayis after, brocht hir in Ingland. At last, he tuk sic hatrent aganis hir, and hir blud, that he causit hir to be schamfully defowlit with rebaldis and limmaris of his cuntry. William, the Bastard and Duk of Normandy, impatient to sustene this odius offence, come in Ingland with gret army, and deprivit King Herald baith of his life and realme at anis, the yeir of God M.LXVI yeris; after the first conques made on thame be Danis, L yeris. William, the Bastard and Concreour of Ingland, tuk the crown efter the slauchter of King Herald; and causit the Normanis and Inglysmen to incres togidder under ane blud, but ony memory of the name of Danis. The posterite of this William perseveris yit, with gret honour and victory, to thir dayis: regnand abone Inglysmen at this time, King Harry the VIII.; quhilk, for his illuster and vailleant dedis, sal be put in gret renoun and memory be our posterite.

T A B U L A.

*Followis, the Table of the History; contenand the mater of every
Buke, craftely severit be thaimself.*

VOL. I.

THE TABLE OF THE FIRST BUKE.

How Gathelus, our first progenitour, left the land of Grece, and come in Egypt; and maryit Scota, douchter to King Pharo.
And of his cuming to Spanye. Chap. I. p. 1.

How Gathelus beildit the Ciete of Brigance, and namit al his pepil Scottis. How he send his 11 sonnis in Ireland; and of his deceis.
Chap. II. p. 4.

How Hemecus governit Ireland; and how Symon Brek was maid King efter his deith. Chap. III. p. 7.

Of the gret posterite of Scottis regnand in Ireland, efter Simon Brek. Of the first cuming of Scottis and Pichtis in Albion; and how the Pichtis war alliat with Scottis. Chap. IV. p. 10.

How the Britonis, be thair quent slichtis, dissolvit the band of alliance betwix Scottis and Pichtis. Of the trubil that fel thairthrow.
Chap. V. p. 12.

How the Pichtis and Scottis maid thair ordinance to invaid othir be battal. How Ferquhard, King of Ireland, send his son, Fergus, with ane army, in support of Scottis, aganis the Pichtis; and how the said Fergus was maid King. Chap. VI. p. 15.

How King Fergus come with gret ordinance aganis the Pichtis.
 How the dissait of Britonis was discoverit baith to Scottis and
 Pichtis. And of the Orisoun maid be Fergus to the King of
 Pichtis. Chap. VII. p. 17.

Of sindry consultationis maid be Pichtis; and how thay war recoun-
 salit with the Scottis. Chap. VIII. p. 19.

How Coil, King of Britonis, was slane, and his army discomfist be
 Scottis and Pichtis. Chap. IX. p. 22.

Of King Fergus Orison to his noblis; and how the crown of Scot-
 land was tailyeit to him and his successouris.—Chap. X. p. 24.

How King Fergus partit the landis of Scotland amang the noblis
 of his realme. And of the maneris of brigandis.
Chap. XI. p. 26.

How King Fergus maid concord betwix the princis of Ireland;
 and how he perist returnand be the Ireland Seis.
Chap. XII. p. 28.

THE TABLE OF THE SECUND BUKE.

How the Scottis, efter King Fergus deith, contendit for the crown.
 And how it was inhibit that young childrin sal be Kingis.
Chap. I. p. 30.

Of King Ferithais; and of his deith. Chap. II. p. 34.

How Ferlegus was banist for the slauchter of King Ferithais. And
 of King Maynus. Chap. III. p. 37.

Of King Dorvidilla; and of his constitutionis, maneris, and deith.
Chap. IV. p. 38.

Of the tyrane King Nathak; and of his slauchter. Chap. V. p. 40.

How Rewthiar, ane young child, was maid King, contrar the lawis.
 How Ferquhard, Capitane of Lorne, was chasit be Dowall in the
 Ilis; and of his orison maid to the pepill thairof.
Chap. VI. p. 41.

How Ferquhard and Dowal, recountering othir be plane battal, war baith slane, with al the nobilite of Scottis and Pichtis ; the King of Pichtis slane, and the King of Scottis tane. Chap. VII. p. 43.

How the Scottis and Pichtis war doung out of Albion be the Britonis. Chap. VIII. p. 44.

How the Scottis and Pichtis recoverit thair landis, and discomfist Sisill, King of Britonis. And of the residew of King Rewtheris life. Chap. IX. p. 46.

Of King Rewtha, and his lawis and governance. How Ptolome, King of Egypt, send his oratouris, to se the situation of Scotland. Chap. X. p. 47.

Of King Thereus ; and how he was exilit for his tyranny. How Conane, cheiftane of brigandis, was maid Governour during his proscriptiouin. Chap. XI. p. 49.

Of King Josyne. And of the experience and prechling of two philosophouris. Chap. XII. p. 51.

Of King Fynnane, and his lawis. And of the college of cleriks in the Ile of Man. Chap. XIII. p. 53.

Of King Durstus ; and how he was slane for his cruel tyranny. Chap. XIV. p. 55.

Of gret contention amang the capitaniis. Of the orison maid be Charon, Capitane of Argyle. And how Ewin, the first of that name, was maid king. Chap. XV. p. 58.

How Gillus, bastard son to King Ewin, slew two sonnis and two nepotis of Durstus, to make himself king ; and how the thrid nepot, Edeir, eschapit. Chap. XVI. p. 61.

How King Gillus was banist. How Cadall, cheiftane of Brigandis, was maid Governour, and slew Gillus in Ireland. And how Ewin the Secound was maid king. Chap. XVII. p. 64.

How Cadal, returnand out of Ireland, lost the maist part of his army be rage of seis ; and of the consolation maid to him be King Ewin. Chap. XVIII. p. 66.

How the Kingis of Scottis and Pichtis war alliat togidder be mariage. How Balus, King of Orknay, slew himself be disperation. Of the wise counsall gevin be King Ewin to Edeir. Chap. XIX. p. 68.

THE TABLE OF THE THRID BUKE.

Of King Edeir ; and how he revengit the heirschippis maid be the
tratour Bredus in the Ilis. Chap. I. p. 71.

How the Britonis send ambassatouris to King Edeir, for support
aganis Julius Cesar. Of thair orison ; and of King Ederis an-
swer. And how the said Julius was doung out of Albion, be
support of Scottis. Chap. II. p. 72.

How Julius returnnit in Britane, and maid it tributar to Romane
Empire. Chap. III. p. 76.

Of sindry messagis send be Julius to Scottis and Pichtis ; and of
thair answer. Of Julius Hoif ; and sindry opinionis concerning
the first foundaris thairof. Chap. IV. p. 78.

How the tratour Murket, and his complicis, war punist. Of the
deith of King Edeir. Of the vicious King Ewin the Thrid ; and
of his lawis and deith. Chap. V. p. 82.

Of King Metellane. Of the nativite of Crist, our Salvioure. Of
gret fouth of poetis, oratouris, and philosophouris, that flurisit in
his time. Chap. VI. p. 84.

Of King Caratak ; and how he dantit sindry conspiratouris of his
realme. How the Britonis, rebelland aganis the Romanis, war
discomfist ; and of thair message send to the Scottis.
Chap. VII. p. 86.

Of Caratakis answer. How the Britonis solistit Normanis and Pi-
cardis to rebellion ; and how the said Britonis war discomfist be
Romanis, and thair king slane. Chap. VIII. p. 89.

How Claudius, Emprioure, come in Britane, and subdewit Orkenay
to his empire. Of Sanct Peteris first cuming in Italy ; and of
the Assumptioun of the gloriou Virgin Mary.
Chap. IX. p. 92.

How sindry princis of Britane, conspirand aganis Arviragus, war
discomfist. How the confederat kingis come to support thir princis
of Britane aganis the Romanis. Chap. X. p. 95.

Of the message send to Caratak be Plancius, and his answer. Of
the deith of Genissa. And how Vespasian was send in Britane,
to dant the Britonis. Chap. XI. p. 99.

How the thre kingis of Albioun, movand weir aganis Vespasian,
war discomfist. How Vespasian ressavit Arviragus to his mercy,
and maid his landis tributar to Romane Empire.

Chap. XII. p. 101.

How Vespasiane wan the town of Camelon, and discomfist Caratak.
Of his message send to Caratak ; and of Caratakis answer.

Chap. XIII. p. 103.

How Caratak cumand with new army aganis Romanis, was vin-
cuest. Of the deith of Plancius ; and how Ostorius was send in
his place ; and dantit the Britonis. Chap. XIV. p. 106.

How Caratak fechtaud, with new army, aganis the Romanis, was
discomfist, and maid prisoner to Ostorius, be treason of Cartu-
mandia, his stepmoder. Chap. XV. p. 108.

How Caratak was brocht to Rome, and how he returnit in Scot-
land. Of uncouth mervellis sene in Albioun ; and of sindry no-
bil clerkis ; and of the deith of Caratak. Chap. XVI. p. 110.

THE TABLE OF THE FEIRD BUKE.

How Corbrede was maid King of Scottis. How the Pichtis rebellit
aganis the Romanis, and slew Ostorius, thair capitane.

Chap. I. p. 113.

How Manlius Valens, capitane of Britane, was discomfist be the
Pichtis. How Didius was send in his place. Of the message
send be Pichtis to Corbrede, and of his answer.

Chap. II. p. 115.

How Cartumandia, Quene of Scottis, was buryit quick. How the
Scottis and Pichtis faucht aganis the Romanis, with uncertane
victory, and war constrainit to tak peace ; and of the deith of
Didius. Chap. III. p. 116.

How Veranius was maid capitane of Britane, and of his deith.
How Swetonius, his successoure, put the Ile of Man to sak.
How Britonis maid new rebellion on the Romanis ; and of sindry
prodigies and mervellis sene in Albion. Chap. IV. p. 119.

Of the complaint maid be Voada, Quene of Britonis, to Corbrede.
 Of his message send to Cattus. Of Cattus answer. Of sindry incursionis maid be Scottis on the Romanis; and of the first cuming of the Murrayis in Scotland. Chap. V. p. 122.

Of the orisoun maid be Voada, Quene of Britonis, to the confederat Kingis; and how scho vineust the Romanis, and finaly slew hirself; and of the deith of King Corbrede. Chap. VI. p. 124.

Of sindry nobil clerkis. How Petir and Paule war martirit. How Dardannus was maid King of Scottis, and slane for his tyranny. Chap. VII. p. 128.

How mony Romane capitaniis, for thair febill administration, war interchangit in Britane. How Galdus wes maid King of Scottis, and how he wes discomfist by Petulius. Chap. VIII. p. 131.

How the noble lady, Vodicia, invadit the Romanis with battall. How scho was finaly slane, and hir army discomfist. Chap. IX. p. 135.

How Julius Frontinus was maid capitane of Britane. Of his message to Pichtis, and of thair answer; and how the said Julius invadit the Scottis with gret injuris. Chap. X. p. 137.

How Julius Agricola was send in Britane. Of his frequent victoryis maid on Scottis and Pichtis; and how he subdewit sindry of thair landis to Romane empire. Chap. XI. p. 139.

How the King of Pichtis send his ambassatouris to Scottis, desiring support aganis the Romanis. How Agricola invadit the Scottis, baith be see and land. How the King of Pichtis was slane, be seditioun of his army. Chap. XII. p. 141.

How Galdus pecifyit al sedition amang the Pichtis; and how he faucht aganis the Romanis, and was discomfist. Chap. XIII. p. 144.

How sindry Almanis and Danis come in support of Scottis and Pichtis. How the Romane navy perist in Pentland Firth. Chap. XIV. p. 145.

How Agricola brocht his army ouir Tay. How Galdus come in defence of the Pichtis, with xl.m Scottis; and of his orison maid to exhort his army to battal. Chap. XV. p. 148.

Of the orisoun maid be Agricola to his army ; and of the huge victory falling to Romanis, be discomfitour of Scottis.

Chap. XVI. p. 151.

How Agricola reparit his navy, to pas about the Ilis of Albion, and brint sindry schippis of Danis. Of uncouth mervellis sene in Albion ; and of the deith of Agricola. Chap. XVII. p. 154.

How Tribellius was send in Britane. How the Romanis fell in gret divisioun amang thaimself; and of the huge victory gottin on thaim be Galdus. Chap. XVIII. p. 155.

How the Romanis war doung out of all partis of Scotland, and sindry times vineust, be the vailyeant Galdus.

Chap. XIX. p. 157.

Of the message send be Romanis to the confederat Kingis, and of thair answer. How the confederat Kingis gaif peace to Romanis. Chap. XX. p. 160.

How all the strenthis of Scotland war recoverit fra the Romanis, be condition of peace ; and of the deith of Galdus.

Chap. XXI. p. 162.

THE TABLE OF THE FIFT BUKE.

Of the vicius King, Lugtak ; and how he was slane for his unhappy life and tyranny. Chap. I. p. 164.

Of King Mogallus ; and how he come with ane army aganis the Romanis. Of his orison maid to the sepulture of Galdus.

Chap. II. p. 166.

How the confederat kingis come with thair armyis aganis the Romanis. Of the orison maid be Mogallus, and Lucius Antonius, to thair armyis ; and how the Romanis war discomfist.

Chap. III. p. 168.

How Adriane, Empriour, come in Britane ; and biggit ane strang wall, to saif the Britonis and Romanis fra Scottis and Pichtis. How he returnit in France, and left Victorine to be capitane of Britane.

Chap. IV. p. 171.

How Scottis and Pichtis partit the landis beyond the wall of Adriane. How King Mogallus was degenerit, in corruptit life, and slane for his tyranny. Chap. V. p. 173.

Of sindry nobill clerkis. Of the vicious King, Conarus ; and how he wes degradit of all auctorite, and his servandis hingit for thair wicket counsall. Chap. VI. p. 175.

How Argadus was maid Governour of Scotland, during the time of Conarus in presoun ; and of his life and governance. Chap. VII. p. 177.

Of King Ethodius the First ; and how he pecifyit the Ilis. How the Scottis and Pichtis brak down the wal of Adriane, and faucht aganis the Romanis, with sindry chancis of victory. Chap. VIII. p. 179.

How Victorine was deprivit of auctorite ; and Calphurnius Agricola send in his place. How Calphurnius reparit the wall of Adriane, and returnit to Rome. Chap. IX. p. 181.

How Trebellius wes send in Britane, and was vinecust be the Scottis and Pichtis. Of the rebellioun of Britonis aganis him ; and of his message send to the Empriour. Chap. X. p. 182.

How Argadus, lieutenand to King Ethodius, was slane, and his army discomfist in the Ilis. Of sindry lawis and actis maid be Ethodius ; and of his slaughter. Chap. XI. p. 185.

Of mony nobil clerkis. How Britane tuke the faith of Crist. Of the vicious King, Satrahell ; and of his deith. Chap. XII. p. 187.

Of King Donald the First. How the Britonis war inhibit be the Romanis, to have ony king of thair blude ; and how thay solistit the Scottis and Pichtis to assist to thair rebellion. Chap. XIII. p. 188.

How Severus, emprioure, come in Britane, to revenge the oppressionis done to Romanis. How the Britonis fled in Scotland. How the Scottis and Pichtis fechtand in support of Britonis, war discomfist. Chap. XIV. p. 190.

Of gret cruelteis done be Severus, empriour, aganis the noblis of Britane. Of his weris aganis Scottis and Pichtis. How Anthonius reparit the wall of Adriane ; and of the Empriouris deith. Chap. XV. p. 192.

How Anthonius slew his brothir, Getus, to make himself Emprioure. How Scotland tuke the faith of Crist, and cunyeit money. Of mony nobill clerkis, in sindry partis of the wold ; and of King Donaldis deith. Chap. XVI. p. 194.
 Of King Ethodus the Secound ; and how the noblis, finding him unabil to gide the realme, governit the samin, be thair auctorite, in gret justice. Chap. XVII. p. 196.

THE TABLE OF THE SEXT BUKE.

How Athirco was maid King of Scottis. How the noblis conspirit aganis him, for his cursit tyranny ; and how he slew himself, be desperatioun. Chap. I. p. 198.
 How Nathalak usurpit the crown, and persewit al the linnage of Athirco with gret cruelteis ; and, finaly, was slane be his familiar servand. Chap. II. p. 200.
 Of King Findok ; and how he dantit the Ilis, and was slane be two men thairof. Chap. III. p. 204.
 How Carance was banist for his brotheris slauchter, and Donald the Secund, maid King. Of his deith, and of sindry noble clerkis. Chap. IV. p. 206.
 How mony haly men war martyrit for the faith of Crist. How Donald of the Ilis, the thrid of that name, usurpit the crown, and was slane be Craithlint. Chap. V. p. 207.
 Of King Craithlint ; and how the Scottis and Pichtis fell in contention, be thair hunting, and faucht, with gret slauchter, on al sidis. Chap. VI. p. 209.
 How Carance, brothir to Findok, returnit out of Italy, with gret riches, in Albion. How he conquest Westmureland, and maid peace betwix Scottis and Pichtis. Chap. VII. p. 211.
 How Carance, be support of Scottis and Pichtis, slew Bassiane, capitane of Britane, and tuk the crown thairof ; and of his deith. And how the crown of Britane was restorit to Romanis. Chap. VIII. p. 215.

Of gret cruelte, done be Dioclesiane, Empriour, aganis Cristin pepil. How Coill vineust the Romanis, and conquest the crown of Britane. How he was alliat with Constantius, Emprioure ; and of the nativite of gret Constantine. Chap. IX. p. 217.

How Fincormak was maid King of Scottis, and Octavius, King of Britonis. How Herculeus, Romane capitane, was slane be Octavius, and the Romanis vincust. How the Scottis and Pichtis come in support of Octavius, and chasit Traherus in France.

Chap. X. p. 220.

How Octavius was put fra the crown of Britane, be Traherus, Romane capitane. How the said Traherus was slane, and Octavius restorit to the crown ; and of Fincormakis deith.

Chap. XI. p. 222.

How the heresyis of Arrius was condampnit. How Ireland tuke the faith of Crist. How Romak, Fethelmak, and Angusiane, contendit for the crown. How Romak was maid King, and slane efter for his tyranny. Chap. XII. p. 224.

How Angusiane was maid King of Scottis. How Maximus subdewit the Britonis, be sindry victoryis. How Scottis and Pichtis invadit othir, with set batal. How baith thair Kingis war slane, and the Scottis discomfist. Chap. XIII. p. 227.

How Fethelmak was maid King of Scottis ; and how he slew Nectane, King of Pichtis, and wes slane efter, be thair treason, and of mony nobill clerkis. Chap. XIV. p. 230.

How Sanet Roule brocht Sanct Androis arme in Scotland ; and how the Kirk of Sanct Androis was dotat, be Hergest, King of Pichtis ; and of the loving thairof. Chap. XV. p. 231.

How Eugenius wes maid King of Scottis. How Hergest, King of Pichtis, wes confiderat with Romanis for destruction of Scottis. How Maximus, Capitane of Britane, invadit the Scottis with gret cruelteis and slauchter. Chap. XVI. p. 233.

How Maximus returnit in Galloway, to revenge the injuris done be Scottis aganis Pichtis. How Eugenius come, with L.M men, to resist the Romanis, Pichtis, and Britonis. How he was slane, his brothir tane, and his army discomfist. Chap. XVII. p. 236.

How the Scottis, be gret cruelte of Pichtis, war exilit out of Albion.

How the Abbey of Comekil was foundit. Chap. XVIII. p. 240.

Of sindry mervellis sene in Albion. How the Scottis that fled in Ireland and the Ilis, returnit in Scotland with gret power; and how thay war discomfist and slane. Chap. XIX. p. 243.

THE TABLE OF THE SEVINT BUKE.

How Maximus conquest, be his liberalite, the crown of Britane.
How he slew Gratiane, Emprioure; and was slane be Theodosius.
Chap. I. p. 247.

How Octavius wes maid king of Britonis. How Mercius and Victorine war send in Albion, to dant the Britonis. How the Pichtis war thirlit to gret servitude; and how thair king slew himself.
Chap. II. p. 249.

Of Etheodius, brothir to Eugenius afore rehersit. Of his governance in Denmark; and of his succession. How Rome was tane be Gothis; and how sindry spulyeis thairof fell to Fergus the Secund.
Chap. III. p. 252.

Of sindry clerkis and sanctis flurising in the wrold. Of the first message send be Pichtis to Scottis.
Chap. IV. p. 255.

How Gratiane, King of Britonis, and Mercius, Romane capitane, war slane, and Constantine put in Mercius place; and of his deith. Of the secund message send be Pichtis to Fergus; and how he come in Albion, and was aggreet with Pichtis, and recoverit his realme.
Chap. V. p. 256.

How the Romanis, fechtand aganis the Scottis and Pichtis, war severit be ane schoure of hail. Of sindry vassalage done be the vailleant Grahame, at the wal of Abircorne. Of his linnage and allia with King Fergus.
Chap. VI. p. 259.

Of sindry consultationis maid be the Scottis, for thair defence aganis the Romanis and Britonis. How Victorine conquest the croun of Britane; and how he was punist thairfore, to the deith.
Chap. VII. p. 261.

How Placidus, Romane capitane, was discomfist, with his army, be Scottis and Pichtis. How King Fergus recoverit al his landis,

be condition of peace, fra Romanis. Of his civill and religious industry, for the weill of his pepill. Chap. VIII. p. 262.

Of the deith of Placidus. Of the message send be Castius, capitane of Britane, to Fergus; and of Fergus answer. How the Romanis war discomfist, and Castius slane. Chap. IX. p. 264.

How Maximiane, capitane of Britane, come, with huge army, aganis the Scottis and Pichtis. Of Fergus orison to his army; and how baith the kingis of Scottis and Pichtis war slane, and thair army discomfist be Romanis. Chap. X. p. 266.

How the Romanis wrocht gret injuris on Scottis and Pichtis. How Maximiane wes alliat with Dioneth, Prince of Walis, and tuke the crown of Britane, contrar the auctorite of Romanis. Chap. XI. p. 269.

Of King Eugenius the Secound. Of grete vassalage done be Maximiane in Britane and France. How Ursula and hir fallowis war martyrit. Chap. XII. p. 271.

How the confiderat kingis come with gret armyis aganis the Britonis. Of Eugenius orison. Of the gret heirschippis maid on Britonis. How Gallio Revennas was send in suport of Britonis; and of his vassalage. Chap. XIII. p. 273.

How the Scottis and Pichtis kest down the wall of Abircorne, and wrocht gret cruelteis on the Britonis. Of the message send be Britonis to Etius; and of his answer. Chap. XIV. p. 276.

How Conanus, Prince of Walis, exhortit the Britonis to tak peace with Scottis and Pichtis; and was slane. How the Britonis, efter his slauchter, faucht amang thameself. Chap. XV. p. 278.

Of gret vassalage done be the nobill Grahame at the wallis of Abircorne and Adriane; and how the Scottis conquest all landis betwix Tyne and Humber. Of the epistill send be Britonis to Etius; and of his answer. Chap. XVI. p. 280.

How the Britonis war vineust, and maid tributar to Scottis and Pichtis. And of the conditionis of peace gevin to the said Britonis. Chap. XVII. p. 283.

Of mony nobil clerkis and sanctis in sindry partis of the warlid. Of sindry prodigies and mervellis sene in Albioun. And of Finmakcoule. Chap. XVIII. p. 286.

VOL. II.

THE TABLE OF THE AUCHT BUKE.

How mony Romane provinces fel in pray to sindry pepill ; and how
sindry realmes began thairthrow. Chap. I. p. 5.

How Conanus exhortit the Britonis to recover thair liberte. Of the
message send be Scottis and Pichtis to Britonis ; and how the
noblis and commonis of Britane invadit othir be battall.

Chap. II. p. 7.

Of sindry afflictionis and plagis quhilkis fell on the Britonis, for thair
iniquite and corruppit life. Of the deith of King Eugenius.

Chap. III. p. 10.

Of King Dongard ; and of the secund orison maid be Conanus to
the Britonis. And how thay send ambassatouris to Androenus,
King of Bertanye, for support aganis Scottis and Pichtis.

Chap. IV. p. 11.

Of the deith of Conanus ; and of the orison maid be Guitelline to
the King of Bertanye. How Constantine, his son, was send with
ane army in Britane, and maid king thairof. Chap. V. p. 14.

How Dongard, King of Scottis, come with gret power aganis Con-
stantine, King of Britonis. Of his orison to his army. How he
was slane, and the Britonis discomfist. Chap. VI. p. 17.

How Constantine the First, and thrid brothir to Eugenius, was maid -
King of Scottis. Of his unhappy life and tyranny ; and how
Constantine, King of Britonis, was slane be gile of Pichtis.

Chap. VII. p. 20.

Of King Congallus ; and of his administratioun. How the monk
Constantius was maid king of Britonis. How Vortigern, be
slauchter of Constantius, tuke the crown of Britane.

Chap. VIII. p. 22.

How Ambrose and Uter, the sonnis of King Constantine, fled in
Bertanye. How Gwitel, Prince of Walis, was slane be the Scottis,
and his army discomfist. Chap. IX. p. 25.

How Vortigerne send ambassatouris in Almany, to fe wageouris in his support. How Hengest and Orsus come in Britane with x thousand Saxonis; and of thair cruelteis and vassalage done aganis Pichtis. Chap. X. p. 27.

Of the secound message send be Pichtis to the Scottis. How Scottis and Pichtis faucht aganis the Saxonis and Britonis, and war discomfist. Chap. XI. p. 29.

How Hengist was richely rewardit for his victorius dedis. How xv thousand Britonis war slane, be weris of Scottis and Pichtis. How Hengistis wife and doucher arrivit in Britane, with new army of Saxonis. Chap. XII. p. 31.

How Hengist and Vortimer come with gret armyis to invaid the confiderat pepil. Of sindry quent slichtis devist be Scottis, to constraine thair ennimes to battall. Of sindry chancis of victory thairefter following. Chap. XIII. p. 33.

How Hengist was maid Protectour of Britane; and how he brocht his son Occa, with x.m Saxonis, to resist the armyis of Ambrose and Uter. How Vortigern come to ane banquet, with Hengist; and maryit Roxena, his doucher. Chap. XIV. p. 36.

How Vodine, Bisshop of London, with mony preistis, war slane be tyranny of Saxonis. How Hengist maid himself King of Kent. How Vortigerne was deprivit, and Vortimer, his sonne, maid King of Britane. Chap. XV. p. 39.

How Scottis and Pichtis war confiderat with King Vortimer aganis the Saxonis, and discomfist Occa in Northumbirland. How Hengist and Occa war vineust in Kent, and doung out of Britane. How King Vortimer was slane be poisoun. Chap. XVI. p. 42.

How the Britonis, after deith of King Vortimer, fell in gret disputatioun quhay suld be king. And how Vortigern was restorit to the crown of Britane. Chap. XVII. p. 45.

How Hengist and Occa returnit with new power of Saxonis in Britane, and slew mony nobillis thairof; and tuke Vortigerne presonere. How Vortigern was banist in Walis, and Hengist maid King of Britane. Chap. XVIII. p. 46.

How Vortigerne demandit the prophete Marline, of the end of his

life; and of Marlinis answer. How Ambrose and Uter come in Walis, and brint Vortigern, with his sonne and riches.

Chap. XIX. p. 50.

Of sindry illusionis and dissaitis of evill spretis. Chap. XX. p. 52.

How Ambrose was confiderat with Scottis and Pichtis. And how he slew Hengist, and dang the Saxonis out of Britane. How his two sisteris war maryit on the confiderat kingis. And of sindry haly men.

Chap. XXI. p. 54.

THE TABLE OF THE NINT BUKE.

Of King Conrannus; and how he maid lawis to punis extorsionis. How Occa and Passentius arrivit with new power of Saxonis in Ingland; and how thay war vincust be Ambrose.

Chap. I. p. 59.

Of gret cruelteis done be Occa to Britonis. How Scottis and Pichtis war frustrat of thair voyage. Of gret mervellis sene in Albion. Of the interpretation of thaim be Merline. Chap. II. p. 62.

How Uter wes maid King of Britonis; and how he was discomfist be Saxonis, and chasit in Walis. How Saxonis and Britonis war aggreit.

Chap. III. p. 64.

How Uter slew the Prince of Cornewal, and gat Arthure on his wife. How Loth, King of Pichtis, clamit the crown of Britan; and how Britonis war purgit of thair herisyis. How Terdix and Kenrik come to Occa with new power of Saxonis; and how the Saxonis war discomfist be mirakill.

Chap. IV. p. 66.

How Occa and Nathaleodus, invading othir be battal, war baith slane, with xv.m Britonis. How young Occa was maid King of Ingland; and of his ordinance aganis the Scottis and Pichtis. And how thay war vincust, and King Uter slane be poisoun.

Chap. V. p. 69.

Of the Romane Boece; and of his werkis and martyrdome. Of the institutionis of the ordour of Sanct Benedict; and how superflew

rentis makis evill, religious men. How Loth, King of Pichtis, clamit the crown of Britane. Chap. VI. p. 72.

How the Saxonis war sindry times vineust, and maid tributaris to King Arthure. How Ocea arrivid with new power in Northumberland, and chasit Arthure in Walis. How the surfet cheir of Yule was evil institute. How Pichtis and Britonis war aggreet. Chap. VII. p. 74.

How the Scottis and Pichtis war confiderat with King Arthure, aganis the Saxonis. How the Saxonis war vincust be the Albianis, and doung out of Albion. Chap. VIII. p. 76.

How the Scottis and Pichtis come with xx thousand men, in support of King Arthure, aganis Saxonis; and how the Saxonis war discomfist. Chap. IX. p. 78.

How Tonset, Chancellar of Scotland, was slane, for his wrangus administration of justice. Of King Conrannus deith. Of Justiniane, Empriour, and of his prudent constitutionis, fame, and chevelry; and of sindry captiviteis of Rome. Chap. X. p. 80.

Of King Eugenius the thrid, and his lawis. Of Conrannus wife. How scho fled, with hir sonnis, in Ingland. Of King Arthuris fame, chevelry, and round table. How the Britonis, contrar thair promes, maid Constantine Prince of Britane. Chap. XI. p. 82.

Of the message send be Pichtis to Britonis, and of thair answer. How King Arthure was slane, with mony of al the nobillis of Britane, be Scottis and Pichtis. How Guanora, his wife, was brocht in Angus; of hir sepulture; and of the calamite that fell to Albianis be this battal. Chap. XII. p. 84.

How Constantine, King of Britonis, slew the sonnis of Modrede. Of uncouth mervellis sene in Albioun. How Eugenius gaif sindry landis, with armis, to nobill men of his realme. How Constantine, King of Britonis, was maid monk, in Ireland; and of Eugenius deith. Chap. XIII. p. 87.

Of King Conwallus, and his lawis and deith. Of the cuming of Sanct Colme in Scotland; and of Sanct Mungo. Chap. XIV. p. 89.

Of King Kinnatill, and how he resignit the crown to Aidane. Of the orisoun maid be Sanct Colme. How Scottis and Pichtis faucht amang thaimself, and war aggreit be Sanct Colme.

Chap. XV. p. 91.

How the Saxonis devidit Ingland, in sevin sindry kingdomis. How Pichtis and Saxonis war confiderat togidder, and discomfist the Scottis and Britonis. Of the orison maid be King Aidane, to his army. How the said Aidane was vincust be Saxonis, and his sonne slane.

Chap. XVI. p. 94.

How Saxonis and Pichtis war discomfist in Northumberland, be Scottis and Britonis. Of the deith of Sanct Colme, and Sanct Aidane. Of the vengeance that come on the Saxonis, for ding-
ing of Sanct Austine. And of sindry haly men.

Chap. XVII. p. 96.

Of King Kenneth. Of Eugenius the feird. How the King of Britonis was doung out of this realme, be Saxonis, and recoverit the samin. How Ethelfreid, King of Northumberland, was slane. Of sindry haly men.

Chap. XVIII. p. 99.

Of the vicius tyrane, King Ferquhart, and how he slew himself ; and of the haly man, Fiacre.

Chap. XIX. p. 101.

Of King Donevald ; and of the deith of Edwine, King of Northum-
berland. How Eufred and Osrik, Kingis of Northumberland,
war punist for thair tyranny done to Cristin pepill. And how
King Oswald convertit the Saxonis to the faith of Crist.

Chap. XX. p. 103.

Of the unhappy prophete, Machomete, and his fals lawis. Of sindry haly men. Of King Ferquhart, and his extorsionis done aganis the pepill ; and of his miserable end.

Chap. XXI. p. 107.

Of King Maldwine, and how he was slane be his wife, and his wife brint. Of gret mortalite, be rage of pest, in sindry partis of the world ; and how the Scottis war preservit fra the samin.

Chap. XXII. p. 110.

Of Eugenius the Fift ; and of the message send to Edfred, King of Northumberland ; and of the peace takin thairefter. How King Edfred was slane be Eugenius, with xx thousand Saxonis ; and of the haly man, Sanct Cuthbert.

Chap. XXIII. p. 111.

Of gret trubill done be Sarayenis to Cristin pepill. Of King Eugenius the Sext, and his artis. Of uncouth mervellis sene in Albioun. Chap. XXIV. p. 113.

Of the vicius tyrane, Amberkeleth; and of his deith. Of King Eugenius the Sevint. How the Scottis and Pichtis war recounsalit togidder, be affinite; and of the slauchter of Eugenius wife. Of sevin haly virginis, dotat be the King of Pichtis, in Abirnethy. Chap. XXV. p. 115.

Of King Mordak, and his werkis; and of his deith. Of foure sindry pepill in Albioun. Of the gret mirakillis of Sanct Niniane; and of Sanct Bede. Chap. XXVI. p. 117.

Of King Ethfine; and how he maid foure regentis to govern his realm. Of gret cruelteis done be Donald of the Ilis; and of the deith of King Ethfine. Chap. XXVII. p. 119.

Of King Eugenius the viii, and how he was slane for his tyranny; and his evill counsallouris hingit on jebatis. Chap. XXVIII. p. 120.

Of the vicius King Fergus the Thrid; and how he was slane be his wife. Of hir orisoun maid to the counsall; and how scho slew hirself. Chap. XXIX. p. 121.

Of King Solvathius; and how he dantit sindry gret limmaris of his realm. Of his deith, and of mony haly men. Chap. XXX. p. 123.

THE TABLE OF THE TENT BUKE.

Of King Achaius; and how he aggreet his nobillis of all contentionis. Of his message send to the princis of Ireland; and of thair answer. How mony Ireland-men perist in the seis. How the Scottis and Ireland-men war aggreet. Chap. I. p. 126.

How King Charlis send his ambassatouris to be confiderat with Scottis and Pichtis. Of thair orisoun maid to King Achaius; and of the orison maid aganis thaim be Culmane. Chap. II. p. 128.

Of the answer maid to this last orison be Albiane. How France and Scotland wer perpetuallie confiderat. How Pichtis refusit to be confiderat with France ; and of the articlis contenand the band betwix Scotland and France. Chap. III. p. 132.

How Paip Leo the Thrid, and the Florentinis, wer restorit to thair honour and liberte, be King Charlis. Of sindry abbayis foundit be Scottis Guilliam. How the universite of Paris began be Scottis. Of the loving of the samin. Chap. IV. p. 136.

How the Scottis and Pichtis wer confiderat be mariage, and slew Athelstane, King of Ingland, and put his army to flicht. Of King Hungus lawis, and liberte to kirkmen. Of the deith of King Charlis, and King Achaius ; and of sindry noble clerks. Chap. V. p. 139.

Of King Conwallus, and of his deith. Chap. VI. p. 143.

Of King Dongallus, and how he punist certane conspiratouris. How Alpine, Prince of Scotland, clamit the croun of Pichtis, as nerest heritoure thairto. Of the Pichtis answer. How the Scottis concludit to move weir on the Pichtis, for denying of the croun. Chap. VII. p. 143.

Of King Alpine ; and how he slew Feredech, King of Pichtis. How Brudus and Kenneth, Kingis of Pichtis, wer baith slane ; and Brudus the feirs, maid King. How King Alpine wes slane, and the Scottis discomfist. Chap. VIII. p. 146.

How Kenneth the Secound wes maid King of Scottis. Of the deith of Brudus, King of Pichtis ; and how Donskene wes maid King. How the heid of King Alpine wes brocht in Scotland. How the Pichtis wer discomfist. Chap. IX. p. 150.

Of the message send be Donskene to Kenneth, and of his answer. Of the orison maid be Donskene to Kenneth, and of his answer. How the Pichtis wer discomfist, and King Donskene slane. Chap. X. p. 154.

How the swerd and cote armour of King Donskene wer send to Colmkill. Of the orisoun maid be King Kenneth to his nobillis. How the Pichtis wer slane, and banist out of Scotland ; and how the Dunbaris tuke thair beginning. Chap. XI. p. 159.

Of uncouth mervellis sene in Albioun. How the chiar of merbill

wes brocht out of Argyle to Scone. Of the lawis maid be Kenneth, for the commoun weil of Scottis; and of his deith.

Chap. XII. p. 162.

Of the vicious King Donald. How Osbret and Ella, with gret noumer of Ingismen, wes discomfist. How xx.m Scottis wer slane; and King Donald tane be Ingismen and Britonis. Of the message send be Scottis to Osbret; and of his answer.

Chap. XIII. p. 166.

Of the orison maid be Calenus. How Scottis tuke peace with Ingismen and Britonis. How King Donald wes put in preson for his vicis, and slew himself. Of sindry mervellis sene in Albioun.

Chap. XIV. p. 170.

Of King Constantine the Secund; and of his lawis. Of the hevy regrait maid be Evanus of the Ilis to his folkis; and how the said Evanus wes punist for his rebellioun. Chap. XV. p. 173.

How Gadanus, King of Danis, send his two brethir, Hungar and Hubba, with gret armyis, to invade the Scottis; and how the said Hubba was vincust, and his army put to flicht.

Chap. XVI. p. 175.

How King Constantine was slane, and his army discomfist be the Danis.

Chap. XVII. p. 177.

Of King Ethus, and his actis. How Osbret, King of Ingland, with mony othir pepill, was slane be cruelte of Danis. Of sindry mervellis sene in Albioun; and of the deith of Ethus.

Chap. XVIII. p. 179.

Of King Gregoure and his lawis. How he recoverit sindry landis of his realme; and discomfist Herdeut, with all the army of Danis. How Rasine, gret capitane of Danis, was slane be Ingismen.

Chap. XIX. p. 181.

How Gregoure recoverit sindry landis of his realme, and slew Constantine, King of Britonis. How Scottis, Britonis, and Ingismen war confiderat aganis the Danis.

Chap. XX. p. 184.

How King Gregoure come in Ireland, to revenge certane injuris done in Galloway; and how he dantit the samin with sindry victoryis, and was governoure thairof mony yeris. Of his loving and deith.

Chap. XXI. p. 188.

Of King Donald the Sext. How the realme of Normanis and duchery of Flanderis tuke beginning. Of the gret chevelrie of Danis in sindry partis of the warlde; and of his deith.

Chap. XXII. p. 193.

THE TABLE OF THE LEVINT BUKE.

Of King Constantine the Thrid. How Danis and Ingismen war confederat be mariage; and how the peace was dissolvit. How the Scottis war discomfist be the Danis. And of the deith of King Constantine. Chap. I. p. 197.

Of King Malcolme the First. How Cumbir and Westmureland was annexit to the Prince of Scotland. Of the slauchter of King Malcolme, and punitioun tane for the samin. Of the deith of King Athelstane. Chap. II. p. 201.

Of King Indulphe. How Avalassus, King of Danis, was discomfist be King Edmond, be support of Scottis. How sindry Danis war discomfist in Buchquhan, and King Indulphe slane.

Chap. III. p. 203.

Of Kinge Duffus; and how he was trublit with gret infirmite, be wichecraft. How he punist certane conspiratouris, and was slane.

Chap. IV. p. 205.

How Culine, Prince of Scotland, punist the slauchter of King Duffus. Of sindry mervellis sene in Albion. Chap. V. p. 209.

Of King Culine, and his vicius life. Of the trubill that fell in the realme be his evill ministratioun. Chap. VI. p. 211.

Of King Kenneth the Thrid, and his governance. Of his orison maid to the nobillis; and how he constrainit thaim to bring sindry thevis to his justice. Chap. VII. p. 213.

How the Danis, invading the Scottis with gret cruelteis, war discomfist be King Kenneth. And how the Hayis tuk thair first beginning and armis. Chap. VIII. p. 216.

How King Kenneth slew the Prince of Scotland, that his sonne micht

succeede to the crown. Of the message send be Sanct Edward to King Kenneth; and of Kennethis orisoun maid to his nobillis.

Chap. IX. p. 221.

How the auld lawis war abrogat be Kenneth, concerning the electiouon of kingis; and new lawis, contrar to thaim, institute. Of the visioun that come to him in his bed; and of his deith.

Chap. X. p. 225.

Of King Constantine the Feird; and of sindry mervellis sene in Albioun. How Constantine and Malcolme contendit for the crown. How Ingismen and Danis war aggreet be Malcolme, Lord of Cumbir. How Constantine and Kenneth, reconountering othir be set battall, wer baith slane.

Chap. XI. p. 228.

Of King Grime; and of gret trubill that fell betwix him and Malcolme, Prince of Cumbir, for contentiouon of the crown. And how thay war finaly aggreet.

Chap. XII. p. 230.

How gret nowmer of Danis war slane be slight of Ingismen. Of the orisoun maid to King Grime be the nobillis; and how he was slane be Malcolme, Prince of Cumbir.

Chap. XIII. p. 234.

Of King Malcolme the Secound. How Sueno, King of Norroway, with double victory, chasit King Eldreid of Ingland, and opprest Ingismen with gret cruelteis.

Chap. XIV. p. 237.

How Olavus and Onetus come in Scotland, with gret army of Danis. And how King Malcolme was discomfist.

Chap. XV. p. 240.

How the Castell of Narne was tane, and the soudjouris thairof treasonabiliy slane, be Danis; and how the Danis war discomfist at Murthlak.

Chap. XVI. p. 242.

How Camus, Prince of Norroway, cumand with ane flote of Danis in Angus, was slane, and his army discomfist, be King Malcolme, at Barre. And how the surname of Keithis tuke thair beginning.

Chap. XVII. p. 245.

How v hundredth Danis war slane be the Thane of Buchquhane. How Canute come with new army of Danis in Scotland, and was discomfist. How Scottis and Danis war finaly aggreet on all debeitis.

Chap. XVIII. p. 247.

How King Malcolme devidit his realme in baronyis. How the nobillis gaif to him the wardis, releiffis, and mariage of thair airis,

quhen thay vaikit. How the sait of Abirdene first began. Of the deith of King Malcolme; and of sindry mervellis sene in Albioun.

Chap. XIX. p. 249.

THE TABLE OF THE TWELF BUKE.

Of King Duncane. How the surname of Stewartis tuke thair first beginning; and how Makbeth punist sindry enormiteis done in King Duncanis time.

Chap. I. p. 252.

How Edmond Irneside and Canute devidit betwix thaim the realme of Ingland. How Sueno, King of Norroway, come in Scotland with ane army, and vineust King Duncane. How the foresaid Sueno was, eftir, vineust be ane uncouth slight.

Chap. II. p. 255.

Of the weirdis gevin to Makbeth and Banquo. How Makbeth was maid Thane of Cawder; and how he slew King Duncane to mak himself king.

Chap. III. p. 259.

How Makbeth usurpit the croun, and chasit the sonnis of King Duncane in Cumbir. How he punist sindry limmaris, and maid lawis for the commoun weil.

Chap. IV. p. 261.

How Banquo was slane be Makbeth, and his sonne Fleance slane in Walis. How Walter, the sonne of Fleance, come in Scotland. And of the geneology of Stewartis.

Chap. V. p. 264.

How Makbeth slew his lordis, for proffet of thair landis and guddis. How he biggit the Castell of Dunsinnane, and slew Makduffis wife and his barnis. Of the orison maid to Malcolme Canmore be Makduf.

Chap. VI. p. 268.

How Malcolme Canmore schew himself unabill to be king, for his sindry vicis. And how he come in Scotland, and was maid king thairof. And of Makbethis deith.

Chap. VII. p. 271.

Of the deith of Edmond, Canute, Herald, and Hardy Canute, Kingis of Ingland. How the crown of Ingland was recoverit fra Danis; and Godowine weryit for the innocent slaughter of Alarude.

Chap. VIII. p. 274.

succeede to the crown. Of the message send be Sanct Edward to King Kenneth; and of Kennethis orisoun maid to his nobillis.

Chap. IX. p. 221.

How the auld lawis war abrogat be Kenneth, concerning the electiouon of kingis; and new lawis, contrar to thaim, institute. Of the visioun that come to him in his bed; and of his deith.

Chap. X. p. 225.

Of King Constantine the Feird; and of sindry mervellis sene in Albioun. How Constantine and Malcolme contendit for the crown. How Ingismen and Danis war aggreet be Malcolme, Lord of Cumbir. How Constantine and Kenneth, reconountering othir be set battall, wer baith slane. Chap. XI. p. 228.

Of King Grime; and of gret trubill that fell betwix him and Malcolme, Prince of Cumbir, for contentiouon of the crown. And how thay war finaly aggreet. Chap. XII. p. 230.

How gret nowmer of Danis war slane be slicht of Ingismen. Of the orisoun maid to King Grime be the nobillis; and how he was slane be Malcolme, Prince of Cumbir. Chap. XIII. p. 234.

Of King Malcolme the Secound. How Sueno, King of Norroway, with double victory, chasit King Eldreid of Ingland, and opprest Ingismen with gret cruelteis. Chap. XIV. p. 237.

How Olavus and Onetus come in Scotland, with gret army of Danis. And how King Malcolme was discomfist. Chap. XV. p. 240.

How the Castell of Narne was tane, and the soudjouris thairof treasonabiliy slane, be Danis; and how the Danis war discomfist at Murthlak. Chap. XVI. p. 242.

How Camus, Prince of Norroway, cumand with ane flote of Danis in Angus, was slane, and his army discomfist, be King Malcolme, at Barre. And how the surname of Keithis tuke thair beginning.

Chap. XVII. p. 245.

How v hundredth Danis war slane be the Thane of Buchquhane. How Canute come with new army of Danis in Scotland, and was discomfist. How Scottis and Danis war finaly aggreet on all debaitis. Chap. XVIII. p. 247.

How King Malcolme devidit his realme in baronyis. How the nobillis gaif to him the wardis, relcissis, and mariage of thair airis,

quhen thay vaikit. How the sait of Abirdene first began. Of the deith of King Malcolme; and of sindry mervellis sene in Albioun.

Chap. XIX. p. 249.

THE TABLE OF THE TWELF BUKE.

Of King Duncane. How the surname of Stewartis tuke thair first beginning; and how Makbeth punist sindry enormiteis done in King Duncanis time.

Chap. I. p. 252.

How Edmond Irneside and Canute devidit betwix thaim the realme of Ingland. How Sueno, King of Norroway, come in Scotland with ane army, and vineust King Duncane. How the foresaid Sueno was, eftir, vineust be ane uncouth slight.

Chap. II. p. 255.

Of the weirdis gevin to Makbeth and Banquo. How Makbeth was maid Thane of Cawder; and how he slew King Duncane to mak himself king.

Chap. III. p. 259.

How Makbeth usurpit the croun, and chasit the sonnis of King Duncane in Cumbir. How he punist sindry limmaris, and maid lawis for the commoun weil.

Chap. IV. p. 261.

How Banquo was slane be Makbeth, and his sonne Fleance slane in Walis. How Walter, the sonne of Fleance, come in Scotland. And of the geneology of Stewartis.

Chap. V. p. 264.

How Makbeth slew his lordis, for proffet of thair landis and guddis. How he biggit the Castell of Dunsinnane, and slew Makduffis wife and his barnis. Of the orison maid to Malcolme Canmore be Makduf.

Chap. VI. p. 268.

How Malcolme Canmore schew himself unabill to be king, for his sindry vicis. And how he come in Scotland, and was maid king thairof. And of Makbethis deith.

Chap. VII. p. 271.

Of the deith of Edmond, Canute, Herald, and Hardy Canute, Kingis of Ingland. How the crown of Ingland was recoverit fra Danis; and Godowine weryit for the innocent slaughter of Alarude.

Chap. VIII. p. 274.

How King William recoverit his landis. How Richard, King of England, and Phillip, King of France, went with gret armyis in Jowry. Of thair vassalage and trubill. How Erle David returnit out of the Haly Land, and foundit Lundoris.

Chap. VII. p. 323.

How King Richard returnit in Ingland. How King William punist gret limmaris in his realme. Of the nativite of Prince Alexander. Of the coronation of King Johne. How the Pape send ane swerd to King William.

Chap. VIII. p. 326.

How King William and King Johne war confiderat togidder be mariage. Of King Williamis haly life, and liberalite to the kirk. How the town of Perth tuke beginning.

Chap. IX. p. 328.

How King Johne subdewit Ireland and Walis. How King William punist sindry conspiratouris. How Ingland and Ireland war maid tributaris to the Pape. Of King Williamis deith; and how sindry ordouris of freris began.

Chap. X. p. 330.

Of King Alexander the Secound, and his actis. How King Johne of Ingland invadit the kirk with gret exactionis. How the Pape and kirkmen war corruppit, be his money, to assist to his opinoun. How King Alexander renewit the band of France; and of the deith of King Johne.

Chap. XI. p. 333.

Of the Generall Counsall haldin at Rome be Paip Innocent; and how the Kingis of Scotland and Ingland invadit aithir realmes with gret heirschippis and slauchter; and how thay war aggreet.

Chap. XII. p. 336.

How King Harry and King Alexander war alliat be mariage. Of the translation of Sanct Thomas of Cantorbury. Of sindry legatis send in Scotland be the Pape, to conques money.

Chap. XIII. p. 338.

How King Alexander punist sindry conspiratouris in his realme. Of the first cuming of Blak and Gray Freris in Scotland.

Chap. XIV. p. 340.

How King Alexander punist sindry conspiratouris, and aggreet King Harry of Ingland and his nobillis. Of his new mariage; and of the nativite of his sonne Alexander. How mony noblis of Scotland war slane in Jowry.

Chap. XV. p. 342.

How the reliques of Sanct Margaret war translatit. How King Alexander was haldin in captivite with the Cumingis. Of his mariage with King Harry the Thrid; and of the bigging of Sanct Mungoies Kirk. Chap. XVI. p. 344.

Of gret derth in Albioun. How Acho, King of Norroway, invadit Scotland with gret cruelteis. Of the orisoun maid to him be ambassatouris of King Alexander. Chap. XVII. p. 347.

How King Alexander come with ane army aganis King Acho. Of the orisonis maid be the two kingis to thair armyis; and how King Acho was discomfist at Largis. Chap. XVIII. p. 349.

Of the nativite of Alexander the Feird. Of the message send be Magnus, King of Norroway, to King Alexander the Thrid; and of his answer. And how the said Alexander recoverit the Ilis of Scotland fra the Danis. Chap. XIX. p. 353.

Of the answer maid to the Papis legat be King Alexander. Of the nativite of Robert Bruce, the vailyeant conqueroure. Of the deith of King Alexanderis wife, and hir barnis. Chap. XX. p. 354.

Of sindry actis done be King Alexander; and of his deith. Of Thomas Rymoure. Of sindry mervellis sene in Albioun; and of mony nobill clerkis. Chap. XXI. p. 357.

THE TABLE OF THE FOURTENE BUKE.

How Scotland was gidit be vi Governouris. How the mariage betwix the Madin of Norroway and King Edward, faiyleit. How Bruce and Ballioll contendit for the crowne. How the decisiooun thairof was committit to King Edward; and how he maid the Ballioll king. Chap. I. p. 360.

How the Ballioll come in gret trubill, for the making of homage to King Edward. Of his alia with King Phillip of France. How King Edward wan Berwik be treasoun, and slew al Scottis in the sanin. Chap. II. p. 364.

How King Ballioll was discomfist at Dunbar, and tint all the strenthis

of Scotland. How he gaif ouir the crown to King Edward, and fled in France. Chap. III. p. 366.

How Kinge Edward come with ane army aganis France. How the Erle of Buchquhane maid gret heirschippis in Ingland. Of William Wallace, and his vassalage aganis Inglismen. Chap. IV. p. 368.

Of King Edwardis message send to Wallace. Of Wallace answer; and of his gret prudence in chevelry. How the Scottis war discomfist at the Falkirk; and how the King of France purchest peace to Scottis. Chap. V. p. 370.

How Ingismen war discomfist at Rosling. How King Edward conquest gret rowmes in Scotland; and how the Forbessis tuk thair first beginning. Chap. VI. p. 374.

Of sindry gret cruelteis done be King Edward aganis Scottis. How the Bruce and Cumin war confiderat; and how the Cumin was slane. Chap. VII. p. 377.

How Wallace was betraisit be Schir Johne Menteith. Of King Robert Brucis coronatioun; and of his gret misery. How he conquest Scotland; and how the Douglas tuk thair beginning. Chap. VIII. p. 380.

Of the deith of the tyrane, King Edward Langschankis; and how Edward Carnaver, his son, was maid King of Ingland. How King Robert gat sindry victoryis on his ennimes; and of gret derth in Scotland. Chap. IX. p. 384.

Of the condition of trewis tane betwix Edward Bruce and the capitanе of Striveleng. How King Edward come, with 111.c thousand men, to reskew Striveleng. Of the victory fallin to Erle Thomas Randale. Chap. X. p. 386.

How the two kingis exhortit thair armyis to battall. How Ingismen war discomfist at Banochburn, and King Edward chasit be the Douglas to Dunbar. Of gret riches that fell to Scottis be this victory. How the town of Handwarp and Flemingis tuke thair beginning. Chap. XI. p. 390.

How the crown of Scotland was tailyeit to King Robert and his airis. How Edward, his brothir, was maid King of Ireland, and slane be Ingismen. How King Robert sufferit gret distres in Ireland. Chap. XII. p. 395.

How King Edward was discomfist be Schir James Douglas. Of gret vassalage done be William Sinclar, Bisshop of Dunkeld, aganis Ingismen; and how Berwik was recoverit.

Chap. XIII. p. 397.

Of the Blak Parliament. How King Edward complanit to the Paip for injuris of Scottis. Of the orison maid be the Papis legat to King Robert; and of his answer. Chap. XIV. p. 398.

How King Edward, efter gret cruelteis done be his army in Scotland, was discomfist be King Robert at Byland. How the Hamiltonis tuke thair beginning; and of King Edwardis deith.

Chap. XV. p. 401.

How Johne Ballioll transferrit all richt that he had to the crown of Scotland, in King Robert. How the crown was new tailyeit to David Bruce. How Schir James Douglas and Erle Thomas Randale did gret vassalage in Scotland. Chap. XVI. p. 403.

Of the deith and loving of King Robert Bruce; and of his testament and legacy. How Schir James Douglas was chosin to pas with his hart in the Haly Land. Chap. XVII. p. 406.

THE TABLE OF THE FIFTENE BUKE.

How Schir James of Dowglas past, with King Robertis hart, to the haly graif. Of the coronation of King David Bruce; and how the Erle, Thomas Randale, was maid governour; and of his deith. Chap. I. p. 409.

How the Erlis of Marche and Mar was maid governouris of Scotland. How Edward Ballioll come in Scotland, to conques the crown; and of the battal of Dupline. Chap. II. p. 414.

How Edward Balliol was crownit at Scone. How King David fled in France. How Perth was recoverit, and the Ballioll vincust be the Douglas; and how King Edward segit Berwik.

Chap. III. p. 417.

Of the orison maid be Alexander Seytonis wife; and how his son was slane be tyranny of King Edward. Chap. IV. p. 420.

How the Scottis war discomfist at Halidon hill ; and Berwik ran-
derit to Ingismen, with mony othir strenthis and munitionis of
Scotland. Chap. V. p. 422.

Of the contention betwix Alexander Mowbray, and Harry Bew-
mont ; and how Ingismen perist at the sege of Lochlevin.
Chap VI. p. 425.

How Robert Stewart and Johne Randall recoverit sindry strenthis
of Scotland. How David Cumin was brocht to gret trubill for
his rebellion aganis Scottis ; and how he wes tane in favour.
Chap. VII. p. 427.

How King Edward come in Scotland with gret armyis, baith be see
and land. How the Duke of Gilder was discomfist, and how Erle
David Cumin was slane. Chap. VIII. p. 429.

How Andro Murray was maid Gouvernoure of Scotland. How
King Edward returnit with new army in Scotland ; and how
Ingismen war discomfist at Panmore. Chap. IX. p. 431.

How William Talbot, and Richard Montagew war vincust be
Scottis. Of the deith of Andro Murray. Of sindry vassalagis
done be William Douglas ; and of gret derth in Albion.
Chap. X. p. 433.

How the Ballioll fled in Ingland. Of gret vassalage done be Ro-
bert Stewart, and William Dowglas. How King David returnit
in Scotland ; and how William Douglas was banist.
Chap. XI. p. 435.

How King David rewardit the airis of thaim that war slane at Dup-
line, and Halidon hill ; and how he invadit Ingland, sindry
times, with gret injuris. Chap. XII. p. 438.

How King David, at the request of France, invadit Ingland with
gret displeseris ; and how he was takin at Durame. How Ing-
lismen conquest gret boundis in Scotland.
Chap. XIII. p. 440.

How William Dowglas recoverit sindry landis out of Ingismennis
handis, and invadit Ingland with gret displeseris ; and how King
Edward wrocht gret trubill in Scotland.
Chap. XIV. p. 444.

Of the battall of Poiteris. How King David was redemit ; and how he punist his baronis for thair fleing fra him at Durame.

Chap. XV. p. 446.

Of gret trubill that fell in Scotland, be King Davidis secound mariage. Of his deith. Of sindry gret clerkis and mervellis sene in Albion.

Chap. XVI. p. 449.

THE TABLE OF THE SEXTENE BUKE.

How Robert Stewart was maid King of Scottis. Of his sonnis and doucheris ; and how the realm was tailyet to thaim.

Chap. I. p. 451.

How the Erle of Marche brint Roxburgh ; and how Ingismen war sindry times discomfist be Scottis. Chap. II. p. 453.

Of gret pest in Scotland. How Ingismen was discomfist at Sulway. Of the message send be Charlis of France ; and how the surname of Lyonis tuke thair beginning. Chap. III. p. 455.

Of gret cruelteis done be Ingismen aganis Scottis. How the King of France send gret support to Scottis. Chap. IV. p. 457.

How King Richard invadit Scotland, with gret cruelteis. Of gret vassalage done be William Douglas. Chap. V. p. 459.

How Robert Stewart and William Douglas did gret vassalage in Ireland. How James, Erle of Douglas, vincust Harry Perse, in singulare battall ; and how he segit the New Castell.

Chap. VI. p. 461.

How Ingismen war discomfist at Otterburn, the Erle of Douglas slane, and the Perse brocht prisoner in Scotland. How the Hepburnis tuke thair beginning. Chap. VII. p. 464.

How Robert, Erle of Fiffe, was maid Governour of Scotland. How Alexander, bastard sonne to King Robert, was punist for his tyranny ; and of King Robertis deith. Chap. VIII. p. 467.

Of King Robert the thrid. Of the deith of William Douglas, lord of Niddisdale. How the clannis of Clankayis and Glenquhatanis faucht at Perth. Chap. IX. p. 468.

How King Robert maid his son Duke of Rothesay, and his brothir Duke of Albany. Of gret vassalage done be the Erle of Crawford.
Chap. X. p. 470.

How Schir Robert Morlo was vincust be Hew Traill. How Hary, Duk of Longcastel, conquest the croun of Ingland, and deprivit King Richard.
Chap. XI. p. 472.

How the mariage betwix the Duk of Rothesay and the Erle of Marchis douchter, was dissolvit. Of the trubill that come thairthrow.
Chap. XII. p. 474.

How King Hary come in Scotland with gret army. Of the deith of the Duke of Rothesay; and how the Scottis war discomfist at Nesbet, be the Erle of Marche.
Chap. XIII. p. 475.

How the Scottis war discomfist at Homildoun. How Hary Hait-spur, and Thomas Perse, his brothir, wes slane at Schrewisbery, and the Erle of Douglas tane.
Chap. XIV. p. 477.

How James, secound son to King Robert, wes tane be Inglismen. Of the tennour of the letteris send with him.
Chap. XV. p. 480.

Of the gret lamentation maid be King Robert the thrid, for the taking of his sonne; and of his deith.
Chap. XVI. p. 483.

How the Universite of Sanct Androis tuk beginning. How gret virtew and police was brocht in Scotland, be King James the First. How gret skaith fallis in this realme, be promotion of vitius pre-latis.
Chap. XVII. p. 485.

How the Erlis of Buchquhane and Wigtoun went, with gret armis, in support of France; and of the deith of Duk Robert.
Chap. XVIII. p. 488.

How the Duke of Clarence was slane, with mony othir lordis of Ingland, at Bawge. Of the deith of King Hary and King Charlis.
Chap. XIX. p. 490.

How ambassatouris war send in Ingland, for redemption of James the First. How the Franchemen and Scottis war discomfist at Vernoll; and of gret vassalage done be the madin of France.
Chap. XX. p. 493.

THE TABLE OF THE SEVINTENE BUKE.

How James the First was redemit. Of his coronation and actis.
Chap. I. p. 496.

How Duke Murdo, and his two sonnis, war justifyit be King James.
How the Erle of Cathnes was slane at Inverlochty, and the Erle
of Mar vincust. Chap. II. p. 499.

Of gret justice done be King James the First, in al partis of Scot-
land. Of the nativite of James the Secund. Of sindry actis
done be the said nobill prince, James the First.
Chap. III. p. 501.

How the Bischop of Sanct Androis, be lang precheing, dissuadit
the riatus custome of bankettis. Chap. IV. p. 503.

Of the sege of Roxburgh. How the King brocht mony craftismen
in this realme. How Paule Craw was brint, and the charturaris
of Perth foundit. Chap. V. p. 505.

How the Erle of Marche was forsaltit. Of sindry vassalage done
be the Erle of Mar ; and of his gret industry and wisdome.
Chap. VI. p. 507.

How Denmark and Scotland war aggreet of all debaitis. How
King James douchter, Margaret, was maryit on the Dalphine of
France ; and how the Perse was discomfist be the Douglas, at
Piperdene. Chap. VII. p. 508.

Of the slauchter of King James the First ; and of the punitiou
that was maid thairfore ; and of sindry mervellis sene in Albioun.
Chap. VIII. p. 510

HEIR BEGINNIS THE NAMES OF ALL SCOTTIS
KINGIS, SEN THAIR REALME BEGAN; SCHAW-
AND BREVELY IN QUHAT BUKE, CHAPITOURE,
AND LEIF, IN THE STORY FOLLOWING, THAIR
LIVIS AND MARCIALL DEDIS SAL BE ESALY
FOUNDIN.

VOL. I.



ERGUS, the First King of Scottis; in the First Buke,
Chap. VI. p. 15.

Ferithais, the secund king; in the Secund Buke, Chap.
II. p. 34.

Maynus, the thrid king; in the Secund Buke, Chap. III. p. 37.
Dorvidilla, the feird king; in the Secund Buke, Chap. IV. p. 38.

Nathak, the v king; in the Secund Buke, Chap. V. p. 40.

Rewtar, the vi king; in the Secund Buke, Chap. VI. p. 41.

Rewtha, the vii king; in the Secund Buke, Chap. X. p. 47.

Therius, the viii king; in the Secund Buke, Chap. XI. p. 49.

Josyn, the ix king; in the Secund Buke, Chap. XII. p. 51.

Fynnane, the x king; in the Secund Buke, Chap. XIII. p. 53.

Durstus, the xi king; in the Secund Buke, Chap. XIV. p. 55.

Ewin the First, and xii king; in the Secund Buke, Chap. XV.
p. 58.

Gillus, the *xiii* king; in the Secund Buke, Chap. XVI. p. 61.
Ewin the Secund, and *xiv* king; in the Secund Buke, Chap. XVII.
p. 64.
Edeir, the *xv* king; in the Thrid Buke, Chap. I. p. 71.
Ewin the Thrid, and *xvi* king; in the Thrid Buke, Chap. V. p. 82.
Metellane, the *xvii* king; in the Thrid Buke, Chap. VI. p. 84.
Caratak, the *xviii* king; in the Thrid Buke, Chap. VII. p. 86.
Corbreid, the *xix* king; in the Feird Buke, Chap. I. p. 113.
Dardannus, the *xx* king; in the *iv* Buke, Chap. VII. p. 128.
Galdus, the *xxi* king; in the *iv* Buke, Chap. VIII. p. 131.
Lugtak, the *xxii* king; in the *v* Buke, Chap. I. p. 164.
Mogallus, the *xxiii* king; in the *v* Buke, Chap. II. p. 166.
Conarus, the *xxiv* king; in the *v* Buke, Chap. VI. p. 175.
Ethodius the First, and *xxv* king; in the *v* Buke, Chap. VIII.
p. 179.
Satraell, the *xxvi* king; in the *v* Buke, Chap. XII. p. 187.
Donald the First, and *xxvii* king; in the *v* Buke, Chap. XIII.
p. 188.
Ethodius the Secund, and *xxviii* king; in the *v* Buke, Chap. XVII.
p. 196.
Athireo, the *xxix* king; in the *vi* Buke, Chap. I. p. 198.
Nathalak, the *xxx* king; in the *vi* Buke, Chap. II. p. 200.
Findok, the *xxxi* king; in the *vi* Buke, Chap. III. p. 204.
Donald the Secound, and *xxxii* king; in the *vi* Buke, Chap. IV.
p. 206.
Donald the Thrid, and *xxxiii* king; in the *vi* Buke, Chap. V.
p. 207.
Craithlint, the *xxxiv* king; in the *vi* Buke, Chap. VI. p. 209.
Fincormak, the *xxxv* king; in the *vi* Buke, Chap. X. p. 220.
Romak, the *xxxvi* king; in the *vi* Buke, Chap. XII. p. 224.
Angusiane, the *xxxvii* king; in the *vi* Buke, Chap. XIII. p. 227.
Fethelmak, the *xxxviii* king; in the *vi* Buke, Chap. XIV. p. 230.
Eugenius the First, and *xxxix* king; in the *vi* Buke, Chap. XVI.
p. 233.
Fergus the Secund, and *xl* king; in the *vii* Buke, Chap. V. p. 256.
Eugenius the Secund, and *xli* king; in the *vii* Buke, Chap. XII.
p. 271.

VOL. II.

DONGARD, the XLII king; in the VIII Duke, Chap. IV. p. 11.
Constantine the First, and XLIII king; in the VIII Duke, Chap. VII. p. 20.
Congallus, the XLIV king; in the VIII Duke, Chap. VIII. p. 22.
Conrannus, the XLV king; in the IX Duke, Chap. I. p. 59.
Eugenius the Thrid, and XLVI king; in the IX Duke, Chap. XI. p. 82.
Conwallus, the XLVII king; in the IX Duke, Chap. XIV. p. 89.
Kinnatill, the XLVIII king; in the IX Duke, Chap. XV. p. 91.
Adane, the XLIX king; in the IX Duke, Chap. XV. p. 91.
Kenneth the First, and LI king; in the IX Duke, Chap. XVIII. p. 99.
Eugenius the Fourt, and LI king; in the IX Duke, Chap. XVIII. p. 99.
Ferquhard the First, and LII king; in the IX Duke, Chap. XIX. p. 101.
Donevald, the LIII king; in the IX Duke, Chap. XX. p. 103.
Ferquhard the Secund, and LIV king; in the IX Duke, Chap. XXI. p. 107.
Maldwine, the LV king; in the IX Duke, Chap. XXII. p. 110.
Eugenius the Fift, and LVI king; in the IX Duke, Chap. XXIII. p. 111.
Eugenius the Sext, and LVII king; in the IX Duke, Chap. XXIV. p. 113.
Amberkeleth, the LVIII king; in the IX Duke, Chap. XXV. p. 115.
Eugenius the Sevint, and LIX king; in the IX Duke, Chap. XXV. p. 115.
Mordak, the LX king; in the IX Duke, Chap. XXVI. p. 117.
Ethfine, the LXI king; in the IX Duke, Chap. XXVII. p. 119.
Eugenius the Aucht, and LXII king; in the IX Duke, Chap. XXVIII. p. 120.

Fergus the Secund, and LXIII king; in the ix Buke, Chap. XXIX.
p. 121.

Solvathius, the LXIV king; in the ix Buke, Chap. XXX. p. 123.

Achaius, the LXV king; in the x Buke, Chap. I. p. 126.

Conwallus, the LXVI king; in the x Buke, Chap. VI. p. 143.

Dongallus, the LXVII king; in the x Buke, Chap. VII. p. 143.

Alpine, the LXVIII king; in the x Buke, Chap. VIII. p. 146.

Kenneth the Secound, and LXIX king; in the x Buke, Chap. IX.
p. 150.

Donald the Feird, and LXX king; in the x Buke, Chap. XIII. p. 166.

Constantine the Secound, and LXXI king; in the x Buke, Chap.
XV. p. 173.

Ethus, the LXXII king; in the x Buke, Chap. XVIII. p. 179.

Gregoure, the LXXIII king; in the x Buke, Chap. XIX. p. 181.

Donald the Fift, and LXXIV king; in the x Buke, Chap. XXII.
p. 193.

Constantine the Thrid, and LXXV king; in the xi Buke, Chap. I.
p. 197.

Malcolm the First, and LXXVI king; in the xi Buke, Chap. II.
p. 201.

Indulphe, the LXXVII king; in the xi Buke, Chap. III. p. 203.

Duffus, the LXXVIII king; in the xi Buke, Chap. IV. p. 205.

Culine, the LXXIX king; in the xi Buke, Chap. VI. p. 211.

Kenneth the Thrid, and LXXX king; in the xi Buke, Chap. VII.
p. 213.

Constantine the Feird, and LXXXI king; in the xi Buke, Chap. XI.
p. 228.

Grime, the LXXXII king, in the xi Buke, Chap. XII. p. 230.

Malcolm the Secound, and LXXXIII king; in the xi Buke, Chap.
XIV. p. 237.

Duncane the First, and LXXXIV king; in the xii Buke, Chap. I.
p. 252.

Makbeth, the LXXXV king; in the xii Buke, Chap. IV. p. 261.

Malcolm the Thrid, and LXXXVI king; in the xii Buke, Chap. VII.
p. 271.

Donald the Sext, and lxxxvii king ; in the xii Buke, Chap. XIII. p. 288.

Edgar, the lxxxix king ; in the xii Buke, Chap. XIII. p. 288.

Alexander the First, and xc king ; in the xii Buke, Chap. XV. p. 293.

David the First, and xci king ; in the xii Buke, Chap. XVI. p. 296.

Malcolm the Fourt, and xcii king ; in the xiii Buke, Chap. I. p. 307.

William, the xciii king ; in the xiii Buke, Chap. IV. p. 314.

Alexander the Secound, and xciv king ; in the xiii Buke, Chap. XI. p. 333.

Alexander the Thrid, and xcvi king ; in the xiii Buke, Chap. XVI. p. 344.

John Balliol, the xcvi king ; in the xiv Buke, Chap. I. p. 360.

Robert the First, and xcvi king ; in the xiv Buke, Chap. VIII. p. 380.

David the Secound, and xcvi king ; in the xv Buke, Chap. I. (p. 409,) to the end thairof.

Robert the Secound, and xcix king ; in the xvi Buke, Chap. I. p. 451.

Robert the Thrid, and ci king ; in the xvi Buke, Chap. IX. p. 468.

James the First, and cii king ; in the xvii Buke, Chap. I. to the end thairof, p. 496.

James the Secound, son to James the First, was the cii King of Scottis. He had gret trubill, certane yeris in the beginning of his regne, be conspiratioun of his principall baronis, aganis him : bot, at last, he dantit thaim all. And eftir that he had rong xxiv yeris, and brocht all his subdittis to gret tranquillite and peace, he was slane at Roxburgh, be sklice of ane gun, that brak be ouirchargeing, the xvii day of August, the yeir of God, MCCCCLX. And for certane reasonable causis moving us, we have left the history unwrittin, baith of James the Secund, Thrid, and Feird, quhill time mair ganand occur.

James the Thrid, son to James the Secound, wes the c*iiii* king : richt different fra the chance and fortoun of his fader, in governance of his realme : for he began with gret tranquillite, with peace and justice ; bot, at last, be conspiration of the maist part of his baronis, aganis him, he was slane, the xi day of Juny, the yeir of God, **MCCCCCLXXXVIII.**

James the Fourt, son to James the Thrid, was the crv king : and had his realme mony yeris in gret tranquillite, be equall ministracion of justice, throw al partis of his realme : all theif, reif, and slauchter, dantit be his soverane justice. Quhil, at last, fortoun began to invy his gret felicite, and causit him to move weir aganis Ingland, for the action allanerly of France, that he micht, be his battal, draw the King of Ingland out of France, quhilk was invading it, for the time, with maist awfull and dangerous weris ; and come to the bordouris with ane hundreth thousand armit men. And efter that he had won the castell of Norame, with mony othir strenthis of the bordouris of Ingland, he abaid xx dayis, but ony battall, quhill the two part of his arny war skalit fra him. At last, ruscheand our feirsly on his eunimes, but ordour, was slane at Floddon, with mony of all his nobillis, the ix day of September, the xxv yeir of his regne, the yeir of God, **MDCXIII.**

James the Fift is the cv King of Scottis, regnand now, with gret felicite and honour, abone us ; the maist noble and vailyeand prince that evir rang afore his time : quhom God conserve, and grant him grace to persevere in justice, with lang empire, and gud successiouon of his body ! Amen.

 ¶ **¶ Heir endis the Namis of the Kingis.**

T H E

Proheme of the History.

THE TRANSLATOURE SAYIS TO HIS BUKE,



How Marciall Buke, pas to the nobill Prince,
King James the Fift, my soverane maist preclare.
And gif sum time thou gettis audience,
In humill wise, unto his grace declare
My walkrife nichtis, and my lauboure sare:
Quhilk ithandly hes for his plesair tak ;
Quhill goldin 'Titan, with his birnand chare,
Hes past all signis in the Zodiak ;

Quhill besy Ceres, with hir pleuch and harrois,
Hes fild hir graingis full of every corne ;
And stormy Chiron, with his bow and arrois,
Hes all the cloudis of the hevinnis schorne ;
And schill Triton, with his windy horne,
Ouirquhemlit all the flowand oecean ;
And Phebus turnit under Capricorne
The samin greis quhare I first began.

Sen thou art drawin sa compendius,
 Fra flowand Latine into vulgar' prose ;
 Schaw now quhat princis bene maist vicius,
 And quhay hes bene of chevelry the rose :
 Quhay did thair kingrik in maist honour jois,
 And with thair blud our liberteis hes coft ;
 Regarding nocht to de amang thair fois,
 Sa that thay micht in memory be brocht.

Schaw, be quhat dangeir and difficill wayis
 Our antecessouris, at thair uter michtis,
 Hes brocht this realme with honour to our dayis ;
 Ay fechtand, for thair liberteis and richtis,
 With Romanis, Danis, Inglismen, and Pichtis :
 As curtas reders may throw thy proces ken.
 Thairfore, thow ganis for na cative wichtis ;
 Allanerly, bot unto nobill men,

And to sic personis as covettis for to heir
 The vailyeand dedis of our progenitouris ;
 And how this cuntre, baith in peace and weir,
 Bene governit unto thir present houris :
 How forcey cheiftanis, in mony bludy stouris,
 (As now is blawin be my vulgar pen,)
 Maist vailyeandly wan landis and honouris ;
 And, for thair virtew, callit nobill men.

For nobilnes sum time the loving is,
 That cumis be meritis of our eldaris gone.
 As Aristotill writis in his Rethorikis,
 Amang nobillis, quhay castin thaim repone,
 Mon dres thair life and dedis one be one ;
 To mak thaim worthy to have memore,
 For honour to thair prince or nation,
 To be in glore to thair posterite.

THE PROHEME OF THE HISTORY.

Ane othir kind thair is of nobilnes,
 That cumis be infusion naturall ;
 And makis ane man sa full of gentilnes,
 Sa curtes, plesand, and sa liberall,
 That every man dois him ane nobill call.
 The lion is sa nobill, as men tellis,
 He cannot rage aganis the bestis small,
 Bot on thaim quhilkis his majeste rebellis.

The awfull churle is of ane othir strind.
 Thought he be borne to vilest servitude,
 Thair may na gentrice sink into his mind,
 To help his freind or nichtbour with his gud.
 The bludy wolf is of the samin stude :
 He feris gret beistis, and rags on the small ;
 And leiffis in slauchter, tyranny, and blud,
 But ony mercy, quhare he may ouirthrall.

This man is born ane nobil, thow will say,
 And gevin to sleuth and lust immoderat ;
 All that his eldaris wan, he puttis away ;
 And fra thair virtew is degenerat :
 The more his eldaris fame is elevat,
 The more thair life to honour to approche,
 Thair fame and loving ay interminat ;
 The more is ay unto his vice reproche.

Amang the oist of Grekis, as we hard,
 Two knichtis war, Achilles and Tersetis ;
 That ane maist vailyeand, this othir maist coward.
 Better is to be, sayis Juvinall the Poete,
 Tersetis son, havand Achilles sprete,
 With manly force his purpos to fulfill ;
 Than to be lord of every land and strete,
 And syne maist coward, cumin of Achill.

Man, callit ay maist nobill creature,
 Becaus his life maist reason dois assay,
 Ay sekand honour with his besy cure,
 And is na noble quhen honour is away.
 Thairfore, he is maist nobill man, thou say,
 Of all estatis, under reverence,
 That vailyeantly doith close the latter day,
 Of native cuntry, deand in defence.

The glore of armis and of forcey dedis,
 Quhen thay ar worthy to be memoriall,
 Na les be wit than manheid ay procedis.
 As Plinius wrait in Story Naturall,
 Ane herd of hertis is more strong at all,
 Havand ane lion aganis the houndis foure,
 Than herd of lionis arrayit in battall,
 Havand ane hert to be thair governoure.

Quhen fers Achilles was be Paris slane,
 Amang the Grekis began ane subtell plede ;
 Quhay was maist nobill and prudent capitane,
 Into his place and armour to succede ;
 Quhay couth thaim best in every dangeir lede,
 And saif thair honour as he did afore :
 The vailyeant Ajax wan not for his manhede,
 Quhen wise Ulysses bure away the glore.

Manhede but prudence is ane fury blind,
 And bringis ane man to schame and indegence.
 Prudence but manhede cumis oft behind,
 Howbeit it have na les intelligence
 Of thingis to cum than gone, be sapience.
 Thairfore, quhen wit and manhede doith concurre,
 Hie honour risis with magnificence :
 For glore to noblis is ane groundin spurre.

Sen thou contenis mo vailyeand men and wise,
Than evir was red in ony buke, but dout ;
Gif ony churle or velane the dispise,
Bid hence him, harlot : he is not of this rout ;
For heir ar kingis and mony nobillis stout,
And nane of thaim pertenand to his clan.
Thou art so full of nobilnes per tout,
I wald nane red the, bot ane nobill man.

Thus to all nobillis sen thou art dedicat,
Schaw breifly how, be my gret deligence,
Ilk story be the self is seperat,
To mak thaim bowsome to thine audience.
Schrink nocht, thairfore, bot bide at thy sentence,
Sen thou art armit with invincible trewth.
Of gentill reders, take benivolence,
And cure of otheris na invy nor rewth.

Pas now to licht, with all thy sentence hie ;
Groundit, but feid or assentatioun,
In naturall and morall philosophie ;
With mony grave and prignant orisoun,
Maid to the reders eruditiouin,
Be the renowmit Hector Boetius ;
Supportit oft with Scotieronicon,
To make thy mater more sententius.

Bring nobill dedis, of mony yeris gone,
Als fresche and recent to our memorie,
As thay war bot into our dayis done ;
That nobill men may have baith laud and glorie,
For thair excellent brut of victorie.
And yit, becaus my time hes bene so schort,
I think, quhen I have oportunitie,
To ring thair bell into ane othir sort.

Leir kingis to hait all peple vitius,
 And na sic personis in thair hous ressave ;
 And suffir na servandis avaritius,
 Ouir scharp exactionis on thair subditis craif ;
 That not be done without thair honour saif :
 Sekand na conques be uleful wanis.
 Schaw mony reasonis, how na king micht haif
 His baronis hartis and thair geir atanis.

Schaw how the kingis life and governance,
 The murrour of leving to his peple bene ;
 For as he luffis, be his ordinance,
 The same maneris ar with his peple sene :
 And, thairfore, kingis hes na oppin rene,
 To use all plesiris as thaim likis best.
 The hiear honour and office thay sustene,
 Thair vice is ay the hiear manifest.

Schaw now quhat kind of soundis musicall
 Is maist semand to vailyeand cheveleris :
 As thondran blast of trumpat bellicall,
 The spretis of men to hardy curage steris ;
 So singing, fidling, and piping, not efferis
 For men of honour nor of hie estate,
 Becaus it spoutis swete venome in thair eris,
 And makis thair mindis al effeminate.

Be mony reasonis of gret experience,
 Schaw how na thing into this erd may be
 So gud, so precius, as ane virtuous prince :
 Quhilk is so nedefull to this realme, that we,
 But him, hes nocht bot deith and poverte.
 Schaw how na gard, nor armour, may defend
 Unhappy life and cursit tyranne,
 Gif thay continew, but mischevus end.

Persuade all kingis, gif thay have ony sicht
To lang empire or honour singulare,
To conques favour and luf of every wicht,
And every wraungis in thair realme repare :
For quhen thair subditis are oppressit sare,
And findis na justice in thair actionis ;
Than risis nois and rumour populare,
And drawis the noblis in sindry factionis.

Schaw quhat punition, be reason of justice,
Efferis to thay unhappy creaturis
That nurisis kingis in corrupit vice.

And schaw quhat truble, quhat vengeance, and injuris
Continewaly into this realme enduris,
Quhen men obscure and avaritius
Hes of the king the giding in thair curis,
And makis the nobillis to him odius.

Schaw how gret baronis, for thair evill obeisance,
Aganis thair prince, makand rebellion ;
Dejecket bene fra thair hie governance,
And brocht to finall extermision.

Schaw how na hous of gret dominion,
Na men of riches nor excellent micht,
May lang continew in this region ;
Becaus the pepill may not suffer hicht.

Schaw how of kirkis the superflew rent
Is ennime to gud religion,
And makis preistis more sleuthfull than fervent
In pietuus werkis and devotion ;
And not allanerly, perdition
Of commoun weill, be bullis sumptuus,
Bot to evill prelatis gret occasion
To rage in lust and life maist vicius.

Schaw how young knichtis suld be men of weir,
 With hardy sprete at every jeoperdie,
 Like as thair eldaris bene sa mony yeir,
 Ay to defend thair realme and liberte ;
 That thay not, be thair sleuth and cowartre,
 The fame and honour of thair eldaris tine.
 Apprise ilk stait into thair awin degré,
 Ay as thay leif in morall discipline.

Schaw furth ilk king, quhill thou come to the prince
 That regnis now in gret felicite :
 Quhais anciant blud, be hie preeminence,
 Decorit is in maist excellent gre,
 Without compare, of hie nobilité ;
 With giftis mo of nature to him gevin,
 Gif nane abusit in his youtheid be,
 Than evir was gevin to noble under hevin.

Thocht thou pas furth, as bird implume, to licht,
 His gratius eris to my werke implore :
 Quhare he may se, as in ane murrour bricht,
 So notable storyis baith of vice and glore,
 Quhilk nevir was sene into his toung afore ;
 Quhairthrow he may, be prudent governing,
 Als weill his honour as his realme decore,
 And be ane virtuous and ane noble king.

¶ **Finis.**

¶ Heirester followis the History and Croniklis of
Scotland. Compilit and newly correcket, be
the Reuerend and Noble Clerke, Maister
Hector Boece, Channon of Aberdene.
Translatit, laitly, be Maister Johne Bellenden,
Archedene of Murray, Channon of Ros.
At the command of the Richt Hie,
Richt Excellent and Noble Prince,
James, the v of that name, King of Scottis. And
Emprentit in Edinburgh, be Thomas Dauid-
son, dwellyng fornens the Frere Wynd.

The First Duke.

HEIR BEGINNIS THE FIRST BUKE OF THE CRONIKLIS OF SCOTLAND.

Chap. First.

How Gathelus, our first progenitour, left the land of Grece, and come in Egypt, and maryit Scota, dochter to King Pharo ; and of his cuming to Spanye.



AFTER the maner of othir pepil, the Scottis, desirand to schaw thair beginning richt anciant, schawis thame, be this present Historie, descendit of the Grekis and Egyptianis. For, as auld croniclis beris, thair wes ane Greik, namit Gathelus, sonne of Cecrops, King of Athenes, otherwayis sonne of Argus, King of Argives. Gathelus, be his insolence, maid mony heirschippis in Macedone and Achaia, quhilkis war certane landis of Grece ; and, becaus he couth not suffer the correctioun of freindis, he left his native cuntry of Grece, and come in Egypt, with ane cumpany of siclik young men, fugitivis, as he wes, fra thair cuntry. In this time rang in Egypt Pharo, the scourge of the pepil of Israel : quhais son, followand his faderis iniquite, wes drownit eftir, with all his army, in

the Reid Seis, be punitioun of God. Gathelus wes the more ple-sandly resavit in Egypt, that he apperit, be his cumpany, to support King Pharo aganis the Moris and pepill of Ind; quhilkis, be un-provisit and haisty incursionis, wastit all the landis and townis of Egypt to Memphis, the principall ciete of his realme. Thus had Pharo sene ane miserabill rewine of all his realme, war nocht he changit the governance of the empire of Egypt be industry of Moyses, to quhome, be command of God, the army of Pharo wes committit. Pharo, be supple of Gathelus, wan ane maist dangerus battall agane the Moris, and brocht thame to sa hie rewine, that he tuk thair principall ciete callit Meroy. Gathelus, eftir this happy victory, returnit in Egypt; and, becaus he wes ane lusty person, strang of body, with greit spreit, he conquest baith the favour of the king and his familiaris. This plesand victory generit mair invy than glore to Moyses; for the Egyptianis hatit all the blud of Israell: and, thairfore, Moyses, knawing the hatrent of Egyptianis persewing him ilk day to the deith, fled out of Egypt in Inde, to saif his life. Gathelus, for his victoriis and vailleand dedis, wes maid generall-lieutenant to all King Pharois army; and, becaus he wes ane lusty person, semely, and of the blud riall of Grece, with prudent ingine, he gat King Pharois dochter, namit Scota, in mariage, with part of thay landis in heritage quhilk laitlie war tane be force of battall fra the pepill of Israel. For thir causis the Grekis began to rejos, seand thair capitane in sic familiarite with the prince; traisting thairthrow sumtime to have ane sicker dwelling-place in Egypt. Schort yeris eftir Pharo deceissit: eftir quhome succedit to the croun of Egypt his sonne, Bochoris Pharo, quhilk opprest the pepill of Israell with mair servitude and tyranny than did his fader. Apperit thus na esperance of liberte to the said pepill, quhill Moyses returnit furth of Ind in Egypt, to schaw the command of God to this Bochoris Pharo, for delivering of the said pepill out of servitude. Eftir this, Egypt wes punist with uncouth plagis, becaus thay held the prophecy of Moyses in derisioun. Thus war the Egyptianis sa astonist, that thay inquirit thair Goddis of remeid; be quhome wes answerit, the present plagis, quhilkis rang amang thame for that time, war na thing in respect of the terrible and grevous plagis quhilkis war ap-pearand to cum haistely on thame. Gathelus, astonist be this re-

spons, and seand the pepill presently tormentit with sorrowful plagis, tuk ferme purpos to leif Egypt, and erar to assailye the chance of fortoun for sum uthir dwelling, than to abide the manifest vengeance of Goddis; and, thairfore, maid provisioun of all thingis necessar to saling: and come out of the mouth of Nile, with his wife, his frendis, and servandis, Grekis and Egyptianis, for feir of the said plagis, the yeir fra the beginning of the warld, **MMM.DC.XLIII.** Eftir mekill wilsum travell be the seis Mediterane, he arrivit in the land of Numide; quhare he wes stoppit be the inhabitantis to land. Eftir this he pullit up salis, and, be lang and paneful travell, he arrivit in ane part of Spanye, callit than Lusican, quhilk wes eftir, be his arriving thair, callit Portingall, that is to say, the Port of Gathelus. Quhay may surely affirme ane mater of sa greit antiquite? Gathelus, sowpit be lang travell, and havand na thing to refresche his cumpany, landit his folkis, to seik vittallis and uthir necessaris, to cumfort thaime eftir thair wery labour. In the meine time, the inhabitantis of that regiouen gaderit aganis him with arrayit battal; nochtheles thay war discumfist, and put to flicht. Throw this victory, Gathelus and his folkis grew in esperance of gud fortoun; traisting, eftir sa lang and wilsum travel, to put end to thair labouris, and have ane stabill and permanent abiding in the said regiouen. Eftir this victory, the inhabitantis maid ane band of peace with Gathelus, and assignit to him certane landis, quhair he suld have his dwelling in times cuming. Schort time eftir, he biggit ane toun upon the revair of Munde, quhilk wes callit that time Brathare, bot now it is callit Bersale. Nochttheles, the inhabitantis dredand that thir new pepill of oncouth blud suld incres haistely in riches and strenth beside thame, wes penitent of the contract be thame maid; and, thairfor, be assistance of thair nichbouris, arrayit thame in battall aganis Gathelus: and first send certane armit men to interrup thair bigginnis; sine maid thame self reddy to cum in the staill. Gathelus, weill advertist that this battel movit aganis him micht suffer na delay, arrayit his folkis to meit his ennimes; exhorting thame to do vailyeantly for thair livis and honour, and to have sicker esperance of victory, sen the battell wes to be led be thame, quhilkis war victorius, aganis thair vincust ennimes, quhilkis had na exercition nor knawlaige of chevalry. The inhabitantis seand thir

strangearis cum in batell with michty curage and spreit, in ane on-couth cuntry, dred, gif thay war vincust in the said battell, thay suld be brocht to perpetuall servitude, and thairfor desirit Gathelus to ane commoning. In the quhilk thay gaif to him, be new appointment, certane landis in the north part of Spanye, callit now Galicia; for thay had in prophecy, ane strange pepill suld cum sumtime to dwell in thay boundis: and commandit him to pas with his pepill in the said partis, quhilkis suld be brukit be him but ony impedimentis in times cuming; and promittit, gif ony pepill hapnit to invade him, to assist to his support.

Chap. Second.

How Gathelus beildit the Cicle of Brigance, and namit all his Pepill Scottis. How he send his two Sonnis in Ireland. And of his de- ceis.



HE band roborat in maner forsaid, Gathelus maid sacrifice, as the use wes in thay dayis, to his Goddis; sine past to the north partis of Spanye, and thair, with amite confiderit with the inhabitantis thairof, beildit ane toun callit Compostella; quhair he, resident in princely dignite, maid lawis, to caus his subdittis to lif togidder in justice. Eftir this, he callit all his pepill Scottis, for affectioun that he had to his wife callit Scota; on quhome he gat two sonnis, Hiber and Hemeucus. The Spanyeartis, na thing rejoising of the brudy spreding of Scottis, dred the samin sumtime to rise to thair displesour: thus tuke thay ferme purpos to bring the Scottis to uter destruction. Gathelus, knawing weil thair ordinance, brocht furth his pepil arrayit in battel. Than followit ane richt dangerous and doutsum battel; bot at last the victory succedit to Scottis. Nane of thir parteis war glaid of the chance that fell be this battel; for the maist forcy and vailyeant capitaniis war slane on athir side. Thus war thay constraint on ilk side to seik peace; quhilk wes finalie tretit under thir conditionis: Baith thir

pepill in times cuming sal ceis thair weris, and every ane of thame sall life on thair awin lawis, and rejos the samin landis, but impedimentis, quhilk thay possedit afore this last battel, but ony further persecutioun. Throw quhilk it hapnit, ane certane of thair pepill, be proces of time, to be send efter in Ireland. Sicker peace thus standing amang the two pepill, Gathelus, sittand in his chiar of merbill, within his ciete of Brigance, governit his pepill in justice. This chiar of merbill had sic weird, that it maid every land, quhair it wes found, native to Scottis; as thir versis schawis:

The Scottis sall bruke that realne as native ground,
Geif weirdis faill noct, quhair evir this chiar is found.

Throw quhilk hapnit, that the said chiar of merbill wes eftir brocht out of Spanye in Ireland; and out of Ireland in thay partis of Albion, quhilkis wer callit eftir Scotland. In this chiar all kingis of Scotland war ay crownit, quhil the time of King Robert Bruse: in quhais time, beside mony othir cruelteis done be King Edward Langschankis, the said chiar of merbill wes taikin be Inglyssmen, and brocht out of Scone to London, and put in to Westmonistar, quhare it remanis to our dayis

Gathelus, seand his pepil incres in Brigance with mair multitude than micht be sufficiently nurist, thocht mair expedient to bring his pepil to sum othir part, quhair thay micht be esely sustenit, than to violat his band of faith; and, thairfore, be counsal of prudent men, he send exploratouris, to spy gif ony landis war within the oceane see, to quhilkis he micht bring ane part of his pepill. For the fame was, fornens Spanye, to the north, wes ane Ile, inhabit with rude pepill, havand na lawis nor maneris. Sic thingis knawing to Gathelus, he brocht all the schippis he micht get to the nixt port, in quhilkis he put baith his sonnis, Hiber and Hemecus, with marinaris, weirmen, and othir thingis necessarie thairto; and commandit Hiber, as admirall, to pas to the said Ile, quhilk is now callit Irland. Thir two sonnis of Gathelus pullit up salis, and, with fortunat windis, arrivit, the fift day efter, in the said Ile. And, efter that thay had landit thair folkis, thay affixit thair tentis on the nixt strenthis. The rude pepil of this Ile, astonist be cuming of thir weirmen, fled, with thair bestial and guddis, to thair cavernis. Hiber, eftir his cuming, send

certane armit men to se quahat pepill inhabit this Ile. The weirmen quhillkis war send for this effect, hapnit to cum apon the said pepill, fleand, as said is, with thair guddis; and, be aventure, ane part of thaim slew, and otheris brocht as prisoneris to thair admirall. Hiber, knawing be sindry signis the land plentuous, commandit, gif the pepil wald be plesantly subdewit, that na forthin invasion be maid on thaim. The pepil seand him mercifull, randrit thair self and thair guddis; and he ressavit thaim with sic benivolence, that he sufferit thame to incres with his pepil under ane name and lawis; and left his broder to governe thaim be his autorite and justice.

Sic thingis done, he maid sacrifice in the honour of his Goddis, to send felicite to his pepill: sine returnit in Spanye, levand behind him ane strang garison, with wiffis and barnis, to inhabit this land, and to keip the same under obeysance of his broder Hemecus. Hiber, at his returning in Spanye, fand his fader Gathelus deceissit. Eftir quhais deith he wes maid king; and began to eik the boundis of his empire; and wan sindry townis fra the Spanyeartis: havand with him at all timis ane strang gard of men; be quhais pissance and chevalry he dantit the pepill on sic maner, that he wes haldin in gret estimatioun and reverence amang the said pepill. Thus war thay constrainit to seik his peace.

Efter this last band of peace, the Scottis grew in Spanye, quhilk wes namit than Hiberia, fra Hiber, with sic amite, that baith the pepill grew under ane name and blude, with sic tender and freindly benevolence, that, but ony memoree of auld injuris, ilk man set him to defend his nichbour as his brothir or fader, baith in weir and peace. Of this Hiber discendit, be lang progressioun, ane gret posterite, efter him linealy succeding; amang quhom wer mony nobill and famous princis, as Metellius, Hermoneus, Ptolomeus, Hibertus, and Symon Brek.

Chap. Third.

How Hemecus governit Ireland; and, how Symon Brek wes maid King eftir his deith.



UHILL sic thingis war done in Spanye, Hemecus, quhilk wes left, as said is, be his brother Hiber in Ireland, governit the same in gret felicite, and namit the samin Hibernia, fra Hiber, quhilk is callit in our langage, Ireland. This Ile wes inhabit in thay dayis be two pepill: the Scottis; and the auld inhabitantis of it, quhilkis war gottin, as sum auctouris sayis, be giandis. Hemecus governit baith thir pepill in gret justice, havand na les respect to the seissoun, as the time occurrit, than to the maneris of the pepill undir his obeysance; knawing weil, na thing micht bring the pepill sonar under ane freindschip and band than sic doingis: and yit he micht nevir bring thaim to that effect. Schort time eftir, Hemecus deceissit. Eftir quhais deth rais ane odious debait, quha suld be governour; every natioun contending to have the lord of thair awin blude. Quhill at the last thaycreat two governouris: betwix quhom rais continuall battall and slauchtir on athir side, throw ambition and birnand desire to be governour of the said Ile. Efter lang battallis, thir two pepill, brokin with sindry displesouris, war constrainit to tak peace: howbeit the same schort time indurit; ilk ane of thaim persewing othir with battal. And yit thay dwelt mony yeris togiddir be interchange of weir and peace. Quhill at last the Scottis, brokin ilk day with mair injuris, send thair ambassatouris to Metellius, quhilk wes that time regnand above the Scottis in Spanye; desiring, be thair lamentabill regrait, to have support aganis the auld inhabitantis of Ireland; and schawand thame ane wild pepill, impacient to suffir oncouth empire above thame; throw quhilk the Scottis micht have na tranquilit, without the said pepill wer mair haistelie dantit. The message of Scottis was the mair acceptabill to Metellius, that it concernit the commoun-weil baith of the Scottis of Spanye and Ireland, descending, be lang

progression of a linage and blud. King Metellius nocth refusit thair desiris; traisting the samin to succeid na les to the honour and glore of himself, than to the proffet of his freindis: and, thairfore, send his thre sonnis, Hermoneus, Ptolomeus, and Hibert, with ane army of vailleant men in Ireland; quhair thay, with richt dangerus battal, vineust the auld inhabitantis of the said Ile. Sic thingis done in Ireland, Hermoneus, the eldest brodir, returnit in Spanye; levand behind him his two brethir, Ptolomeus and Hibert, quhilkis governit the pepill of that land mony yeris eftir in gret tranquillite and justice, and maid lawis effering to the rite of thay dayis, and instrukkit the preistis to mak sens and sacrifice to the Goddis, on the same maner as the Egyptianis usit. Thus incressit the pepill mony yeris eftir in gret felicite and riches. Bot, as the nature of men is, ouir greit prosperite engeneris evil maneris, and causis men to wirk frequent displesouris on thaimself, quhen thay find na ennimes to invaid thaim at hame; thir pepil, eftir lang peace, war devidit in two opinionis, contending for the governance and administratioun of this realme. Thir two partis had all uterlie distroit othir, war not thay war reconseld togiddir be ane nobill man namit Thanaus, principal man undir the king; quhilk wes send afore as ambassatour to the said Ile, rejoosing of the felicite succeding to his frendis, to caus thaim, be his prudent consultation, to ineres togidder under a mind. This Thanaus, be his honest behavingis, was haldin amang thaim of gret prudence, havand bot newtrall affection to baith the partyis; and persuadit thaim, at thair conventioune, to remove all contentionis rising amang thaim, and to cheis ane, quhom thay thocht maist expedient, to be thair king, and be obeysant to him in all thair governance; for na thing nicht be in erd sa gud as ane gud king. Throw this persuasioun, the pepill tuk sic fervent desire to have ane king, that, all injuris beand reparit, thay commandit Thanaus to cheis him king quhom he thocht maist expedient. Than said Thanaus, "I
" knaw your mindis sa devidit in sindry factionis, that na man that
" is participant thairwith may be esaly your king. And, sen your
" mindis is to have ane newtral person to regne above you, thair is
" now in Spanye ane nobill man, of gret severite and justice, namit
" Symon Brek, weill accustomit with your lawis, and linealy cuming
" of Metellius, your ancient progenitour; quhais sonnis sumtime

"nocht only supportit you quhan maist danger occurrit, bot gover-
 "nit you mony yeris efter, in gret tranquillite and justice; quhais
 "posterite yit remanis amang you in maist honouris. I think this
 "Symon maist abill to be your king." The partyis, herand the name
 of Symon Brek, war glad to have him king, becaus that name wes
 haldin richt fortunat in thay dayis. And, but ony lang tary, thay
 send thair ambassatouris in Spanye, to caus this Symon to cum in
 Ireland, to ressave the crown thairof. Symon knawing, be degest
 avisement, the entent of thir ambassatouris, providit ane flote of
 schippis; and, finaly, be prosper windis, arrivit in Ireland, quhair
 he wes solemnly ressavit, and crownit in the chiar of merbill, quhilk
 wes brocht out of Spanye as maist riche jowell in thay dayis.

Symon wes the first king that rang above the Scottis in Ireland,
 fra the beginning of the wORLD, **MMMM.D.IV** yeris; fra the flude of
 Noy, **MM.CC.VIII**; fra the beginning of Rome, **LX** yeris; fra the em-
 pire of Brutus in Albion, **cccc.LXXII** yeris; before the incarnatioun
 of God, **xcv** yeris. This Symon governit Ireland in gret pros-
 perite, be counsel namely of Thanaus; to quhome he gaif sindry
 landis, liand in the south partis of Ireland, beside the rivere of Bir-
 sus, quhilkis landis ar now callit Dowdale; quhair the said Thanaus
 dwelt efter, with the pepill that he brocht with him out of Brigance,
 the famous ciete of Spanye. Thir pepill war callit Brigandis; of
 quhome efter, be proces of time, discendit mony nobill and vailyeant
 men, quhilkis come efter with Fergus, the first King of Scottis, in
 Albioun: be quhome all thay landis of Scotland, quhilkis ar now
 callit Galloway, wes callit Brigance; quhais inhabitantis war fundin
 ay full of manheid, and strangest ennimes to Romanis and Britonis,
 as we sall after heir.

This Symon governit Ireland in gud felicite, and deceissit, the
 fourty yeir of his regne.

Chap. Fourth.

Of the gret Posterite of Scottis regnand in Ireland efter Symon Brck. Of the first cuming of Scottis and Pichtis in Albion; and how the Pichtis war alliat with the Scottis.

 YMON deceissit, as said is, his sonne Fæduf wes maid king. Efter him, succedit Ethione. Efter Ethione, succedit Glaucus. Efter Glaucus, succedit Nathasyll. Efter Nathasyll, succeedit Rothesay. This Rothesay wes the first king that send ony Scottis in the Ilis of Albion. The first Ile that he inhabit, he callit it Rothesay, fra his name. The remanent Ilis wer callit Hebredes, fra Hiber, the eldest sonne of Gathelus. This Rothesay herand the deth of his fader, Nathasyll, returnit in Ireland; quhair he, be generall vocis of the pepill, wes maid king.

The yeir that Scottis wer brocht out of Ireland in Albion, was fra the empire of Symon Brek in Ireland, cc.xvi yeris; fra the beginning of the warld, Mmmm.DC.XVII yeris. The Scottis cuming out of Ireland in this maner, spred in sindry Ilis of Albion, liand to the gret north thairof, and devidit thaim in sindry tribis. The first Ile that thay tuk possessioun of, as the Croniklis schawis, wes namit Ardgaeill, fra Gathelus; quhilk now, be corruptioun of langaige, is callit Ardgyle. The Scottis, devidit be this maner in sindry tribis, chesit certane capitans to every tribe, to governe thaim baith in time of weir and peace; havand the name of their capitane in sic reverence, that quha sa evir tuke the samin in vane war na les punist than thay had manesworne thair Goddis: attour that thay maid invocation thairto, quhen maist trubill occurrit; as sum divinitie war in the samin, to preserve thaim fra all danger. This consuetude perseverit, mony yeris after, in the Ilis.

Nocht lang efter, a banist pepill, namit Pichtis, come furth of Denmark, to serche ane dwelling place; and, efter that thay war inhibit to land baith in France, Britane, and Ireland, thay landit in Albion. Sum authouris sayis, thay come first in Orknay; and, sone

efter, in Cathnes, Ros, Murray, Mernis, Angus, Fiffe, and Lou-thiane : and expellit all the pepill, that inhabit that region afore thair cuming. Thir pepill war callit Pichtis, outhir for thair semely personis, or ellis for the variant colour of thair clething ; or ellis thay war namit Pichtis, fra the Pichtis namit Agathirsanis, thair anciant faderis. In probation heirof, Orknay wes callit the auld realme of Pichtis. Siclike, the seeis betwix Cathnes and Orknay war namit Pentland Firth ; and all the landis, quhilkis ar now callit Louthiane, war callit than Pentland. Sum authouris sayis, thir Pichtis wer the residew of Hunnis, banist be Flemingis ; and come first in Britane to seik ane dwelling, quhair thay, be sorrowfull battall, lost Huniber, thair king, be Lotrine and Camber, sonnis of Brutus, quhilk began the empire of Britane. This opinion is plesant, war nocth the dait of yeris is descordant to the history ; for Brutus, and his sonnis, war mony yeris afore thair cuming in Albion. Of thir Pichtis writis mony auld and recent authouris, to quhom applaudis Cornelius Tacitus, in the Life of the Romane Agricola ; quhare he namis the Scottis cuming of Spanyartis, and the Pichtis, of Almanis. Of quhatsunever natioun thay ben discendit, treuth is, efter thair cuming in Albion, thay war ane civill pepil, richt ingenious and crafty baith in weir and peace. Sone efter thair cuming in Albion, quhilk wes fra the beginning of the warld, **MMMM.DCCC.LXVII** yeris, thay creat ane king to governe thaim in justice, and began to maik policy in bigging of munitionis, townis, and castellis. And, becaus thay knew al pepil but successiou abill to perische, thay send thair ambassatouris to the Scottis, desiring to have thair dochteris in mariage : and schew, thocht thay war of oncouth blude, thay suld nocth be vilependit, sen thay, with na les prudence than manheid, hes onur-set incredibill dangeris baith be see and land ; and now laitly conquest, throw benevolence of the Goddis, richt plentuous landis, with sic peace and tranquillite, that nane othir pepill may clame thaim be reason : confiding surely, gif the Goddis support thaim, be thair awin industry, to be equall to ony thair nichtbouris baith in peace and weir. Forthir, gif the Scottis condiscendit to thair honorabill desiris, it nicht fall, the two pepill incres togidder sa strang under ane blude, that thay micht the better resist the fury of enimies, quhen evir it hapnit thaim to be invadit.

This legatioun wes unpleasand, for the first time, to Scottis, think- and unworthy to have ony societe or mariage with ane uncouth and banist pepill; yit, be degest avisement, thay fand thair commoun weil wes nocht rising to sic pissance, that thay might resist the Britonis, quhilkis hatit thaim sen thair first beginning. Heirfor, to augment thair commoun weil, and to maik thaim the more strang aganis the Britonis, thay wer profoundly resolvit to have aliance with the Pichtis, and to gif thair dochteris in mariage, undir thir condicionis: Ilk ane of thaim shall rejoice, in time cuming, all thay landis quhilkis thay rejosit afore the mariage. And to concurre togidder with thair hale pissance, als oft as thay war invadit be ennies. He that maid offence to ony ane of thaim, shall be reput as enmity to thaim baith; and, als oft as the croun of Pichtis come in pley, the king to be chosen of the nerrest of the womannis blude. Thir condicionis plesand in all sidis, the Scottis gaif thair doucheris in mariage to the Pichtis.

Chap. Fifth.

How the Britonis, be thair quent slichtis, dissolvit the band of alliance betwix the Scottis and Pichtis. Of the trubill that fell thairthrow.



HE Britonis tuk na litil suspiciooun of this mariage, dredand gif thir two pepill incressit togiddir under ane blude, to be sa strang in schort time, that nothir might the said Britonis for the time present, nor thair posterrite, be sufficient to resist the pissance of thir two pepill; and, thairfor, tuke purpos to distroy thaim baith, and to invade thaim erar with fraudefull slichtis, than ony force of battall. And, to bring thair purpos to effect, thay devisit to rais sic seditioun betwix thir two pepill, that ilk ane of thaim shall invade othir with battall; and fra that ane war clearly distroyit, this othir, brokin with the same weiris, might be the more facil pray to thaim. Yit, to covir thair

slichtis more secretly, thay supersedit thair intention for thre yeris, to avise gif proces of time might gif ony better occasiou to move battall. The same time, be affinitate afore contrakit, the Pichtis multiplyit with ane brudy successioun: quhairthrow the two pepil grew in equal benevolence; the Pichtis gevand thair industry to pollecy and labour of thair handis, and settand thair ingine to beilde munitiounis and townis for defence and agmentation of thair comoun weil; the Scottis exerceing thaim in craft of hunting, halking, and nurising of thair bestiall; havand na othir riches bot it only that grew be thair store; and war daily clothit in haberjone of mailye, with bow and arrowis, in ithand exercition; als reddy, at all times, to defend thair livis, landis, and liberteis, as thair ennimes war to invaid thaim in set battall.

In the menetime the Britonis send thair ambassatouris to the Pichtis: havand gret wounder quhy thay preferrit the Scottis to thaim; sen thay war ane pepil full of riches and glore; quhais famous chevalry wes knawin in France, Aluany, and othir sindry regionis be seesis and landis; havand ane riche realme, replete of all minis of mettall, sa plentuous of every frutis necessar to the use of man, that thay might do hie plesir to thair nichtbouris, als weill in weir as peace. Be contrar, the Scottis war ane ondantit pepill; havand rude and wild maneris, but ony humanite; confiding mair in thair fuliche audacite, than ony prowes or vertew; and dwelling amang strait and barrant montanis, and rejoosing in na thing sa mekill as in murdir of men and beistis. Attour thay had be propheey, that the Pichtis suld be exterminat and uterly distroyit be Scottis, without thay socht the more haisty remeid. For thir causis, desirit thaim to mak ane new band of confederacioun with Britonis, to that fine, the Scottis may be outhir expellit out of Albion, or ellis brocht to uter destruction; be quhilkis doingis, thay might have incredibill commodite, rejoosing baith thair realmes but ony feir, in times cuming. And, to gif thaim the more provocatioun to attempt this besines, thay promittit to support thaim with men, money, and vitallis, at thair plesir.

This message had the more credit, that the Pichtis had afore ane vehement suspiciooun, that the brudy spreding of Scottis suld sum time fall to hie dammage of thair posterite: als na thing might have

causit thaim mair to move battall aganis the Scottis, than the responsis of thair Goddis, concurrand to thair awin suspition. At last the Pichtis, be lang consultatioun, answerit, thay contrackit affinite with the Scottis mair of necessite than ony harty frendship; quahais corruppit manneris war richt unpleasand to thaim. Nochtethes, sic oportunitie may cum, be proces of time, that thay might have sufficient occasion to move weir aganis the Scottis, as thay desirit: for na thing might be sa acceptabill to thaim as the amite and fallowschip of Britonis; provyding alwayis, the said Britonis maid thaim sufficient help, quhen time requirit, aganis the Scottis. Sic besines done, as occurrit for that time, the ambassatouris war dispeschit.

Schort time eftir, the Pichtis, seikand occasioun to move battall aganis the Scottis, commandit, be general edict, na Scottis to be found within ony townis or landis of Pichtis, efter ane prefixit day, under pane of deth. The Pichtis, efter that this day wes ouir past, slew all Scottis that war found within thair townis, munitionis, and roumes, as brekaris of thair lawis. The Scottis, richt unpacient to sustene sa hie injuris, ceissit not quhill thay had slane als mony of the Pichtis as wer afore slane of Scottis. Incontinent, be haisty trubil rising in this maner, wes sa lamentable murdir on athir side, that ilk ane of thame slew othir at thair reountering, regarding nothir affnите, blude, time, nor place.

Chap. Sixth.

How the Pichtis and Scottis maid thair ordinance to invade othir be battell. How Ferquhard, King of Irland, send his sonne Fergus, with ane army, in support of Scottis aganis the Pichtis; and, How the said Fergus wes maid King.



N this maner the peace dissolvit, the Pichtis denuncit battell to Scottis: efter quihilk followit continual incursionis on athir side. Attour, that every thing suld be done erar be consultatioun than be immoderat hatrent, the Pichtis providit al thingis necessar for battell; in quhat wise, and be quhat capitanis it suld be led; quhidder thay suld abide the cuming of thair enimes, or invade thame within thair awin rounis.

The same time, the Scottis convenit in Argyle; quhair the capitanes war devidit in sindry opinionis concerning this battell. Sum, accusing the treasonable slichtis of Pichtis, desirit to pas on thame haistely, as wrangus and manesworne pepill, brekaris of thair faith, quhais injure wes sa importabill, it micht suffir na delay. Otheris thocht expedient, sen the mater wes wechty, to invade thair ennimes with hid slichtis and gud ordour. In the mene time, rais up ane agit man, and said in this maner: “ I knaw weill, my harty frendis, “ this injure of Pichtis is sa intollerabill and odius, that we suld “ rusche haistely to harnes to revenge the same. Nochttheles, all “ besines bene weill done that procedis be gud avisement. And, sen “ ire avalis nocht but strenth, knaw weill, this battell that ye intende “ to move, sall be na les aganis the Britonis than Pichtis; howbeit “ ye have nocht that craft of chevelry nor pissance to resist thame “ baith. For thir causis, I thinke na besines sa profitable, as to “ send ambassatouris to our aunciant progenitoris of Ireland, to “ have thair support in this maist dangerus cais. Forther, sen plu-“ ralite of capitanis, as oft occurris, rasis seditioun, best is to chese “ ane amang us to have empire above the laif; under quhais coun-“ sel we sall fecht for our livis and liberteis, aganis ane fals and

“ manesworne pepil, quhilk hes invadit us but ony occasioune of in-
“ juris.” This last opinioune wes maist apprisit.

The Scottis sone efter send thair ambassatouris in Ireland, com-
plenand the wicket offence done be Pichtis, and desiring support.
Ferquhard, quhilk wes that time King of Scottis in Ireland, sore
movit, for displeasure done to his frendis the Scottis in Albion, send
his sonne Fergus, ane wise and vailyeant prince, to thair support;
and, to give thame the more esperance of permanent and sonse weird,
he send with thame the fatale chiar of marbill. Fergus wes the more
plesantly ressavit be the Scottis, that thair commoun weil wes ap-
prochand to hie dangear be ane maist perellus battall. Efter his
cuming, ane counsell wes set in Argyle, in the quhilk Fergus said
in this wise: “ Maist vailyeant pepill, ye se ane company of nobill
“ men, as ye desirit, cuming in this your regioun to resist the fury
“ of ennimes. The faderis are sa reuthfull to thair childrin, that
“ nane offence may be done to thair said childrin, bot the same re-
“ turnis to thair dishonour and schame. We ar dettit to you as fa-
“ deris to thair childrin; schaw you thairfor oure childrin, as we
“ sall schaw us your faderis. Lat ane injure be commoun to us
“ baith, sen we ar conjunit togidder in blud and amite; that glore
“ and honour may redound to us, and proffite unto you. Yit ane
“ thing bene necessar to avise; quhidder the empire of ane or of
“ mony be mair profitabill for your commoun weill? And quhilk
“ of thame ye think maist profitabill sall be plesand to us, sen we,
“ be favoure and benevolence of Goddis, ar happily arrivit in your
“ regioun, and cuming only for your singulare weill and support.”

The counsel, efter this orison of Fergus, thocht pluralite of capi-
tanis unprofitabill; and, thairefore, be degest consultatioun, condisc-
cendit to be governit be empire of ane king; and this king to have
empire on thame als weill in peace, as in every trubil appering aganis
thair ennimes. Attour, to remove all suspitione of hatrent, becaus
ilk tribe desirit ane king of thair awin linnage, thay chesit Fergus,
baith for his nobill blude, and othir his excellent virtuous, to be
thair king; attour he wes sa provin in manheid and justice, that na
capitane of the tribis micht be comparit to him. Fergus, chosin king
in this maner, wes crownit in the fatale chiar of merbil, quhilk he
brocht with him, be respons of Goddis, to stabill his realme in Al-

bion; and wes the first king that rang above the Scottis in that re-
gioun: fra the beginning of the warld, Mmmm.Dccc.Lxix yeris; afore
the incarnatioun of God, ccc.xxx yeris; fra the beginning of Rome,
cccc.xx yeris; fra the impire of Brutis in Britane, dccc.xxxvii
yeris.

Chap. Seventh.

How King Fergus come, with gret ordinance, aganis the Pichtis.

*How the dessait of Britonis wes discoverit baith to Scottis and
Pichtis. And of the orison maid be Fergus to the King of
Pichtis.*



HE Scottis rising on this maner, as we have schawin, in Albioun, King Fergus gave his hole mind and attendance to resist the injure of this battall, movit be the Pichtis; and, efter that he had callit all the capitannis afore him, he commandit every ane of thame to be reddy to pas with him, with careage hors, of fourty dayis vitallis: and, becaus he knew na thing mair odius than seditioun amang weirmen, he maid afald concord amang his pepill, and commandit thame to be obeysant to thair capitannis, with sic ordour that none of thame waver fra thair fallois, in aventure thay fall as pray to thair ennimes. Sic thingis done, he maid sacrifice in the honoure of his Goddis, according to the use that wes in thay dayis; praying the Goddis, to take vengeance of the party that gaif first occasioun of battall aganis othir; and to grant him sic felicite in his just defence, that victory may succede to him but hevy dammage of his pepill.

Quhill the Scottis war at thair besines, the Pichtis assemblit ane army, with na litill gareson of Britonis concurrent to thair support. Apperit, on athir side, ane wicket and unnaturall bergane betwix two pepil, freindis and cieteyouris, faderis and sonnis. The Pichtis come first in the Scottis landis: aganis quhome, with na les curage than manheid, went Fergus, with anciant armis displayit in forme of

baner; in quhilke wes ane reid lioun, rampand in ane feild of gold, with thunderand steir, awfully dingand his bak, as is the gise of the gentill lioun, quhen he enforsis him to wraith. Fergus wes the first that bure thir armis in Albion; and, after him, thay war ay the armes of all kingis discending of his linnaige, to our dayis.

Quhill the Scottis and Pichtis wer arrayit in otheris sicht, the army of Britonis stude arrayit on dreich, nocht far fra thame, devisand be quhat slichtis thay mycht distroy thame baith; with ferme purpos, quhen the Scottis and Pichtis wer jonit togidder, and the tane of thame discomfist, than the party victorius suld finaly be distroyit be thair fresche army: and quhen thir two pepill war distroyit be this slicht, the Britonis mycht rejoose baith thair realmes in Albion, but ony feir, in times cuming. This subtel slicht wes discoverit to Fergus be ane banist Briton. Throw quhilke it hapnit, that baith the armyis, movit na les be feir of ennimes than be thair awin propri
dammage, supersedit battall certane dayis.

In the meine time, King Fergus desirit ane commoning with the King of Pichtis, apon hie materis, concerning na les the weill of Pichtis than of Scottis. The King of Pichtis refusit nocht the commoning, and met King Fergus with ane few cumpany of his nobillis; the oistis standing on ilk side, arrayit. Than said Fergus in this maner: “ Oftimes riche townis, and pepill contending for the superiорite, hes brocht thaimself to miserabill rewine, and thair ennimes to hie commoditeis; quhilke thingis sall nocht fail to cum on us, gif we happen to fecht this day. The occasion of battell, quhilke ye movit first aganis us, desiris nocht at this time to be discussit, lauchfull or injust; howbeit, the Scottis hes sustenit of your pepill importabill injuris but ony redres. Yit, gif it be leful erar to schaw the verite than ony flurisand wourdis, the desire of kingdoume, and slicht of Britonis, hes movit you to battall. Ye wald nevir have invadit us, your faderis, war nocht the Britonis, oure commoun ennimes, hes devisit the same, be quent slichtis, to baith our mischeiffis. And quhidder thir thingis be trew or fals ye may best discus; howbeit na reson may perswaid me to beleif ony othir, bot this battall sal cum, gif we continew, to the irrecoverable dammage of us baith. Gif we fecht, quha doubtis bot victory sall be uncertane? for we ar of equal pissance. Suppone we

“ be vincust, quhilk may nocht succeed but undemus murdir of you,
 “ than sall ye be ane facill pray to your ennimes ; bringand thaim
 “ to triumphhe and honour, and yourself to misire and servitude.
 “ Quhat thing may be more odius, or more detestabill, than the
 “ sonnis to invade thair faderis ? We ar faderis ; ye, our sonnis :
 “ your sonnis ar our nepotis : and, quhidder we be vineust or vic-
 “ torious, ye sall defoull yourself with maist terribill offence aganis
 “ the Goddis. Heirfor, lat us commoun of peace, as nichtbouris and
 “ freindis alliat togidder ; and consider quhat infinite dammage this
 “ battall sall do to us, and quhat commodite to our commoun enni-
 “ mes. And gif ony injure be done be Scottis to your pepill, it sall
 “ be redressit be me ; to that fine, that we, quhilkis ar of ane proxi-
 “ mite and blude, may evade the quent slichtis devisit be Britonis
 “ to baith our dammage, and invade our ennimes with the samin
 “ tressoun that thay devisit for us ; that reason and justice may seme
 “ mair pissant amang us, than hatrent or invy : for, I beleif, na
 “ othir way is sa souir to stabill our pepill in this Ile of Albion.”

Chap. Eighth.

*Of sindry consultationis maid be Pichtis ; and how thay war re-
 counseld with the Scottis.*



HE King of Pichtis answerit to thir wordis of Fergus, that he micht nocht, be his private autorite, dissolve thingis done be publik counsell of his nobillis. This battall, that he movit, wes decernit be publik, and nocht be private counsell : nochtheles, he wald glaidly avise with his nobillis, quhidder thay wald haif weir or peace ; and sal convene to the same place, with thair mind.

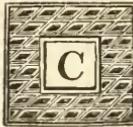
Als sone as baith the kingis returnit to thair tentis, the King of Pichtis rehersit the wourdys of Fergus afore his counsell, and schew how the same day behuvit thaim nocht only to have fochtin aganis the Scottis, bot aganis the tressoun of Britonis ; and, to verify his entent, he brocht certane Britonis in testimoniall thairof : attour the

inopportune sollicitation of Britonis, desiring battal aganis Scottis, maid the slight more credibill to Pichtis. The Pichtis, avising unprudently in this mater, war devidit in two opinionis. Sum allegit, the amite of Scottis wes to be refusit; for thay have persewit the Pichtis with sa mony slaunchteris reiffis, the same may noct be dewly redressit. Heirfor, all thair alliance, all thair condicionis and peace, aucht to be conteunnit; for sic thingis may noct indure, quhare reif, injure, and hatrent, ar more estemnit, than faith, reason, and justice. Otheris said, the amite of Scottis wes baith honest and necessare; becaus thay did mony plesciris afor to Pichtis, and movit na battall quhil thay war first injurit. And, sen the Britonis war common ennimes baith to Scottis and Pichtis, force is to thaim to be reconselfd, or ellis to be schamefully doung out of Albion. Attour the affinite and blude rising betwix thaim suld put end to thair weris; sen na thing is more detestabill to the Goddis, nor abhominal to mortal creaturis, than thay pepil to move battall aganis othir, quhilkis ar alliat under ane commixtioun of blude. Thairfor apperit na thing sa gud to Pichtis as to have freindschip of Scottis; les than thay purposit, to rendir falset, hatrent, and evil dedis, for faith, luf, and gud thankis. Eftir that mony of the Pichtis war gevin to peace, ane of the Pichtis, ennemy to Scottis, becaus his brother wes slane in this last battall, said on this wise: “ How is this “ blind contentiou rising amang you, maist vailyeant men? Have “ ye noct sufficient experience of the falset and cruelte of Scottis? “ Delite ye ony forther to assailye, gif ony band may be keptit with “ unfaithfull pepill, full of fers ingine and eruelte, borne to our uter “ mischeif? Beleif ye the respons of our Goddis be vane? Suld “ we nuris this pestilencius vennome, to the finall perdiccion baith “ of us and our realme? This bludy and tressonabill pepill, gif our “ Goddis schawis the verite, sall noct fail to rais amang us ane “ flame that sall nevir be sloknit.” To this wicket man answerit ane othir Picht, and said, “ Ye suld noct be movit be the respons of “ Goddis: for gif thay be of determinit verite, thay may noct be “ eschewit; gif thay be fals, thay suld noct be dred. Heirfor all “ injuris, done be ony slight and tressoun of athir partyis, suld be re- “ movit: and, to saif oure honestie, lat nevir oure aith and band be “ brokin in oure defalt; becaus we have sufficient experience in our

“ dayis, quhat notabill vengeance bene takin upon mony nobil and
“ vailyeant campionis, quhen they had nocht thair faith nor Goddis
“ in reverence. Lat us returne to the band of Scottis, sen the same
“ may nothir be dissolvit but offence of Goddis, nor yit but incre-
“ dibill schame; sa that we may persevere in kindnes, but offence
“ othir to the immortall Goddis, or our tender freindis: als nature,
“ the moder of every thing, constrainis us to luffe our faderis, for
“ thay luffe our barnis, thair nepotis. It is nocht necessar, thair-
“ for, to have ony battal; bot erar to luffe our freindis, that we be
“ nocht in derisioun to our ennimes.” Als sone as thir wordis war
said, the wiffis of Pichtis, quhilkis followit the army for luffe of thair
husbandis, fell on kneis, with ruthfull teris, praying thair husbandis
to violat nocht thaimself with shameful slauchter of thair faderis:
“ It is better to us and our barnis,” said thay, “ to de ony maner
“ of deith, than to se our faderis and husbandis slayand othir, with
“ cruell wondis.” The Pichtis, movit sum part be luffe of thair
wiffis and barnis, sum part be reverence of thair Goddis, condiscen-
dit to have peace with the Scottis, under thir conditionis: Redres
maid on ilk side. The Britonis, quhilkis wer movaris of this battall,
sall be haldin ennimes to baith the pepil. All othir chargis to be at
the plescier of the two kingis, quhidder thay list to strength peace
under the auld conditionis or new; and, gif thir conditionis war nocht
sufficient to roborat the peace, with quhat othir conditionis the two
principis thocht maist ganand. Sone eftir, ane day was set to renewe
the peace. The Britonis, quhilkis come in support of Pichtis,
heirand this concord, returnit hame, dredand the samin to succeede,
to thair litill proffet. On the day affixit, the Scottis and Pichtis war
agreit on al debatis, efter the tenour of the auld band, with thir new
conditionis: Ilk ane of thir two pepil sal leif content of thair awin
rowmes; supporting othir, als weill in honour as in profit, quhen
hie and difficil chargis occurris, aganis thair ennimes. The injuris
done to ony ane of thaim, sal be reput commoun to thaim baith;
and, quhen it wes necessar to thaim to fecht aganis thair ennimes,
baith the pepill soll convene togidder under ane mind and ordinance.
The peace beand roborat in this maner, baith the kingis returnit
hame.

Chap. Ninth.

*How Coyll, King of Britonis, was slane, and his Army discomfist
be Scottis and Pichtis.*

 OYLL, King of Britonis, herand at York, the Scottis and Pichtis confederat in maner foresaid, was richt sorrowfull; for he dred thir two pepil to ineres sum time to his hie displesair. Astonist heirof, and nocth knawing be quhat ingine he nicht distroy thaim baith, for his slichtis afore come to litill effect; he tuke ferme purpos to have experience, gif the Scottis, quhome he held for ane vagabound and banist pepill, of uncouth blude, strang in murdir of bestis, durst fecht aganis his pepill, full of glore and chevalry. Yit he supersedit this mater for two yeris, to se gif ony proud insolence nicht gener new divisioun amang thaim, quhairthrow he nicht find sum better occasioun to invaid thaim be battall; for he understude na sickir tranquillite nor peace nicht be had amang his pepill, during the fallowschip of Scottis and Pichtis under ane concord and blude. Heirfor, to rais sum occasioun of battal betwix thir two pepil he send ane company of Britonis, in few nowmer, to invade the bordouris of Pichtis with frequent heirschippis: and quhen the same, be reason of trewis, was desirit be Pichtis to be reparit, the Britonis schew thaim nevir accustamate with sic corruppit dedis of thift; and said, the same wes done be Scottis allanerly. At last the ground of this slicht was so serchit and brocht to licht, that the same was provin cleirly on the Britonis; throw quhilk the two confederat pepill tuke sik hatrent aganis the said Britonis, that, efter incredibill slauchter of thair pepil, thay invadit thair realme, and brocht ane multitude of bestiall out of the samin.

King Coyll, impacient to suffer this outraige, maid him to wirk that thing be force of armes, quhilk he nicht not do afore be slicht of ingine: and assemblit sone efter ane huge nowmer of pepil, with gret ordinance of battall; and entrit at the west bordouris of Scot-

land, and affixit his tentis on the river of Dune ; invading the countre with continuall heirschippis, fire, and slauchter. Fergus, weill advertist of thair doingis, commandit the bestiall and guddis to be drevin to the montanis ; and, with thaim, commandit the wiffis, barnis, and othir febill creatouris, to pas to the strenthis of the said montanis, to eschew the fury of ennimes. Sic thingis done, he commandit, be general proclamationis, al fensabil men to be reddy, in thair best avise, to resist thair ennimes. Howbeit he desirit na thing mair than to prolong the battal ; that, be lang tary and penurite of vittallis, his ennimes nicht be wary and irkit.

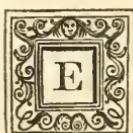
In the mene time, ane Scot treasonabily fled to King Coyll, and discoverit to him every thing devisit be King Fergus. Incontinent, King Coyll send ~~the~~ Britonis to take the said pray of bestiall fra the montanis ; and that he nicht, be untraist suddante, the more cruelte exerce, he maid his army reddy to invade the Scottis on the nixt morrow. Sic thingis schawin to Scottis and Pichtis be thair seuriouris, apperit na litill affray in thair army. Than Fergus tuke consultatioun of his nobillis quhat was best to be done. Mony of thaim, astonist be multitude and curage of Britonis, dissentit to battall. Utheris exhortit him thairto ; saying, thay war ane sufficient army, and determit to fecht for defence of thair wiffis, barnis, and liberteis, to the deith, sa that he wald assist to thaim. Attour it wes na les necessar than honorabill to assailye the chance of battall ; for victory is gottin erar be manheid and prudence, than ony multitude of pepill. Efter divers opinionis, it was concludit, that Fergus, with his folkis, at the first vigill, sall set on the wache of Britonis ; and the King of Pichtis, with his folkis, sal pas ouir the watter of Dune, quhare the army of Britonis lay, to cum haistely on thair bakkis, als sone as thay heir the nois ryis be Scottis. Sic thingis done with manheid and prudence, to submit the residew to the chance of fortoun.

The samin nicht, Fergus, as was devisit, slew, be gret jeoperdy, the wache of Britonis ; and noct only braik thair trinschis, bot enterit fersly within thair tentis, afore King Coyll was advertist of his cuming. Incontinent rais ane terribill clamour amang the Britonis, fast raschand to harnes, to resist this haisty effray ; quhen suddanly the Pichtis come on thair backis, suspekand na thing les than sic ir-

ruptioun of ennimes. The Britonis, nocht weill walkinit of thair sleip, war invadit on al sidis, and discomfist or thay micht cum to array; amang quhome King Coyll, unwarly keptit be his nobillis, was slane. In memory heirof, the place quhare he was slane was namit efter Coyll; quhilk region remanis yit under the same name, or, litill different thairfra, callit now Kyle.

Chap. Tenth.

Of King Fergus orison to his Nobillis; and how the Crown of Scotland was tailyet to him and his successouris.



FTER this victory, the Scottis and Pichtis, with displayit baner, convenit on ane litill mote. The residew of Britonis, quhilkis war eschaptit fra this battall, be thair feling under nicht, herand thair king slane, and thair army discomfist, send ane herald to desire peace. The Scottis and Pichtis, more insolent after this victory than afore, rebutit the Britonis, and denyit peace: nochttheles the two kingis, quhilkis knew weill the gret pissance of Britonis, condiscendit to thair peticionis. Quhen the pray and spulye of this battall was equaly devidit amang the two pepil, effering to thair manheid and prowes, the two kingis returnit hame.

Sone efter, Fergus convenit his nobillis in Argyle, and said in this wise: “ Ye se, maist vailyeant championis, how ye, be speciall favour “ of Goddis, hes vineust your ennimes, and brocht your landis, be “ wisdome and manheid, to sickir peace; and, thocht ye war un- “ equale baith in nowmer and pissance, yit the Goddis hes bene sa “ propiciant, that ye have vineust the ennimes quhome ye maist “ dred in this erd. Ye have put down your noisum ennime, with “ al his army, and ar richit with thair spulye. Thay that contem- “ nit you afore, as febill, banist, and unarmit pepill, hes reuthfully “ desirit your peace, mair necessar than honest to thaim; to be ane “ notabil exampill in timis cuming, how unsicker is to confide in ony “ vane pissance of man. We knew weill, how riche, how pissant

" ar the Britonis baith be see and land : and the more riche thay ar,
 " the more schame redoundis to thaim, and the more glore to us ;
 " sen thay ar vineust be us, quhome thay held maist vile and febill.
 " We have usit our victory but ony cruelteis. We have vineust
 " our ire, to that fine, that the Goddis, quhilkis hes gevin us sa proud
 " victory, sall nocht find, be our perverst insolence, ony occasion to
 " bring us sum othir time in derisioun of ennimes ; sen we nocht
 " exercit our hatrent on thir discomfist Britonis, fleing oure fury be
 " dirknes of nicht, bot sufferit thaim to depart with our mercy and
 " peace. Thus may we evidently se, that our wiffis, barnis, liber-
 " teis, and landis, quhilkis our ennimes intendent to have bereft us,
 " ar saifft allanerly be favour of Goddis. Restis now to avise, be
 " prudent consultation, how we may eschew all dangier appering
 " in times cuming. Quhilkis thingis sall succede the better, gif we
 " have the Goddis in reverence ; kepand our band to Pichtis and
 " Britonis as we promittit ; continewing the realme in the samin go-
 " vernance as ye devisit at our first cuming : providing allwayis,
 " that we remove seditioun, seurrlite, and avaricius leving, with
 " sic thingis as may induce hatrent amang you. Forthir, to maik
 " ilk persone leif on his awin, it war best to part all the landis of
 " this regioune be generall consent ; swa that every ane of us, con-
 " tent of his awin, may have na occasioun to injure his nichtbour ;
 " for sic thingis sall caus us to incres in glore and honour to oure
 " freindis, and dredour to our fayis. And wald God I micht se you,
 " my deir pepill, rising in sic vertew afore my deid, that I micht,
 " with sickir esperance, schaw to your eldaris the weil appering to
 " thair posterite."

Quhen Fergus had endit this orisoun, the pepill schew thaim ready to fulfill his desire ; and nevir to be governit, in times cuming, bot be the empire of ane king ; and nane to regne above thaim bot King Fergus blude : and, failyeing thairof, prayit the Goddis to send na les vengeance on thaim, and thair posterite, than fel sum time on thaim in Egypt and Spanye, for transgressioun of the command of Goddis. King Fergus gat charter and evidence of the crown of Scotland to him and his successouris in this sort ; quhilkis charteris war gravin in merbill, with imagis of beistis in forme of letteris, as

was usit in thay dayis ; sine gaif the samin to maist religious preistis, to be observit in thair tempillis.

Chap. Eleventh.

How King Fergus partit the Landis of Scotland amang the Nobillis of his Realme. And of the Maneris of Brigandis.



CHORT time efter, quhen the Scottis had refreshit thaim with hunting and othir exercitionis, King Fergus conveit his nobillis, and said in this maner : “ Now is the time, maist prudent faderis, sen our realme is stablit in gud peace, to part the landis of this realme, quilk ye rejose now but ordour, amang you, and otheris that come with me out of Ireland in this regiou. To do this more plesantly, ar to be chosin vii newtrall men amang us ; quhilkis shall devide this realme with sic reasone and prudence, that quhare the landis ar maist plentuous, sal be gevin the les ; and quhare the samin ar barrant, to be gevin the more.”

The pepil, weil applesit of this counsell, chesit sevin prudent men ; quhilkis considerit the boundis of Scotland, and devidit the samin, with marchis equally refering thairto. Thir prudent men returnit, the fourt moneth efter, to Argyle, quhare King Fergus was resident for the time : in quhais presence all the landis of Scotland war casin in cavill amang the nobillis thairof. Be the first cavill, fell to Cornath, capitane, and his tribe, the landis of Cathnes, liand fornens Orknay, betwix Dummisbe and the watter of Thane. Secundly, to Capitane Lutork, fell the landis betwix the watter of Thane and Nes, callit now Ros. This Lutork come with ane band of vailyeant men out of Ireland with King Fergus in Albion. This land of Ros lyis, in breid, fra Cromarte to the mouth of the watter of Lochte. In this countre was the famous castel of Urquhart ; of quhilk the rewinous wallis remanis yet, in gret admiratioun of pepill. Thridly, to Capitane Warroch, fell the landis liand betwix Spay and Nes, fra the Almane to the Ireland seis. The pepil of this land war callit

Wares, be name of thair capitane; bot, sone efter, thay war sa sedicious, that thay war doung out of that countre, and the Murrayis brocht in thair roumis; be quhom the landis war callit Murray land. Be the nixt cavil, fell to Capitane Thalis, the landis of Boyne, Ainye, Bogewall, Gariot, Formartine, and Bowquhan. Thir landis war callit than undir ane name, Thalia, be name of thair capitane. Be the nixt cavil, fell to Capitane Martach, all the landis of Marre, Badeynoch, and Lochquhaber. Be the vi cavil, fell to Capitane Nouance, the landis of Lorne and Kyntier, with the hillis and montanis thairof, liand fra Marre to the Ireland seis. Be the vii cavill, fell to Atholus, the landis of Athole; for he was discendent of the Scottis of Spanye, and come out of Spanye in Ireland, and out of Ireland he come with Fergus in Scotland; ane vailyeant man, and weill provin in fatis of armis. Be the viii cavill, fel to Creones and Epidithis, two capitaniis of tribis, the landis of Strabraun and Braidawane, liand west fra Dunkeld. Be the nint cavill, fell to Capitane Argathelus, the landis of Argyle. His folkis war namit Argathelis, fra Gathelus, thair first progenitour; bot now thay ar callit, Men of Argyle. Be the x cavill, fel to Capitane Lolgonas, the landis of Linnox and Clidisdail. Be the xi cavill, fell to Capitane Silurch, the landis of Siluria; quhilk regiouн is now devidit in Kyle, Carrick, and Cuninghame, quhais pepill war richt engenius and fers. Be the xii cavill, fell to the Brigandis, the landis of Brigance, now callit Galloway.

Thir Brigandis war ane vailyeant pepill; and war devisit thairfor to dwell neir the Britonis, to resist thair incursionis, gif ony occurrit. Ane certane of thir Brigandis wes banist efter for thair seditionis fechting; quhilkis confederat thaim with ane cumpany of Pichtis, outrageous and wicket limmeris as thay war, and inhabit thay landis quhilkis ar now callit Annandale, and put the Britonis out of the same: quhais posterite grew sa full of fury, that thay invadit thair nichtbouris with all maner of cruelteis. The women past with thair husbandis to battall, and faucht mair cruelly than did the men; havand na mercy quhare thay war victoriis. Thay eschamit to be takin in battall; and rejosit to de fechtand. Quhen thay saw thair freindis vexit with lang and irrecoverabill malideis, that thay sall nocht de in thair bed, thay slew thaim be the

sward. This land of Annandale hes ane strait entres, and circuitit on every side outhir with seis, mossis, or sinkand sandis; throw quahais difficult enteres hapnit, that the inhabitantis thairof dwelt in cavernis, levand on thair incursionis and thief; regarding nouthir the empire of Scottis, Pichtis, nor Britonis; and had continual wachis, als weil be nicht as day. Als sone as thay war advertist of ony invasouris, thay drew thaim pertly to thair wappinnis; on sic maner, that quha abstennit, or cowardly absentit thaim, quhen sic chargis occurrit, was efter slane be thair wiffis at thair returning. Thay that sufferit thaimself to be taikin as prisoneris, war haldin ay sklavis to thair wiffis, quhill thay, be sum honest wassalege, recoverit thair honour. Thair wiffis war commoun; the barne wes haldin his son, to quhome he was maist like in vissage.

Al othir boundis of Scotland war than in the Pichtis handis; as the Meirnis, Angus, Steremond, Gowry, Stratherne, Perth, Fiffe, Striving, Callender, Calderwod, Louthiane, Mers, Tevedale, with othir the remanent dailis, and the Scherefdom of Berwik.

Chap. Twelfth.

How King Fergus maid concord betwix the Princis of Ireland; and how he perist, returnand be the Ireland Seis.



WHEN Fergus had devidit the landis of Scotland in this maner, and brocht the same to sicker peace, he tuke ferme purpos to nuris his pepill in gud maneris: and, to do all thingis the better, he began at justice; but quhilk na pepill may leif togidder. He maid sic lawis to punis theft and slaughter, that all the bestiall and gudis of Scotland war saiffit in the feildis but ony trubill. Efter this, he beildit the castel of Berigone in Lochquhaber. This castell standis in the west part of Scotland, forment the Ilis; quhare he exercit his lawis to that fine, that his pepil micht be drawin thair the more esaly, for exercitioun of justice. He past the remanent of his dayis in tranquillite and peâce with his nichtbouris, the Britonis and Pichtis; gévand his in-

gine, to caus his pepill incres togidder under ane benevolence and concord. Quhill, at last, he was chosin ane juge-arbitrall, to discuss certane hie debates falling amang his freindis of Ireland.

Sone efter, the said Fergus, accumppanyit with ane certane of his nobillis, past in Ireland, and pacifyit thaim of all debattis. This wes the last act he did; for, efter the agreance, this nobill prince, returning hame throw the Ireland seis, be ane wickit tempest was drevin apon ane crag; quhare he perist, with all his nobillis, the xxv yere of his regne. In quhais memory, the crag, quhare he perist, is namit yit Crag Fergus.

In his time rang Esdaill, King of Britonis: and Cruthneus Cameloun, King of Pichtis; quhilk biggit efter, apone the watter of Carron, the ciete of Camelon, the principall chimmes of Pichtis; quhare sum time wes ane gud havin, to ressave schippis contrar the winter stormes, thocht it be alterit now, be negligence of pepill, and turnit in ane medo. This ciete of Camelon resistit, mony yeris efter, to the Britonis and Romanis; quhill, at last, Kinneth, King of Scottis, quhilk put the Pichtis out of Albion, brocht it to ute subversioun. This Cruthneus biggit the town and castell of Edinburgh, namit sum time the Madin Castell; for al the nobil wemen of Pichtis war nurist within this castell, in crafty labouris of thair handis, quhil thay war ready to mary.

And sa endis heir the First Duke of thir Croniklis: in the quhilk we have sene, how the Scottis first began; and how Fergus was the first king that brocht justice and lawis amang thaim. Now we will schaw the residew of the kingis succeding efter him, in the same ordour as thay rang.

The Secund Buke.

HEIR BEGINNIS THE SECUND BUKE

OF THIR

CRONIKLIS OF SCOTLAND.

Chap. First.

*How the Scottis, efter King Fergus deith, contendit for the Crown ;
and how it was inhibit, that young Childrin sall be Kingis.*



FERGUS on this maner perist, ane day was set
be the counsel to cheis the king. Quhen the
day was cumin, the nobillis war devidit in sin-
dry opinionis ; for Fergus had two sonnis, of
young and tender age. Sum men thocht, it
wes ane odius thing, baith to God and man,
to defraude the ayris of King Fergus, thay
beand pupillis, of thair faderis heritage ; putting his hous to sic ute-
dishonour and skaith ; he doing, in his time, sa mony nobill actis,
for thair commoun weil. Otheris said, young barnis war unabill
for ony publik administration. For ane king suld be ane prudent
man ; havand wisdome and manheid, baith to resist the fury of his
enimes, and to punis trespassouris be his auctorite and justice ;
othir wayis, na pepill micht leif togidder : for the fame of ane no-
bill prince is ane gret firmance to his realme. To this answerit Sem-

bathis, capitane of Argyle, in maner following: " Nane is amang
" you, gud freindis, that is nocht movit, be mony reasonis, to defend
" the barnis of Fergus; sen he, be incredibill luffe, brocht to us, in
" our extreme neid, ane strang army, be quhilke he nocht allanerly
" deliverit us of maist dangerus battal, bot maid of our ennimes
" freindis, and of this land ane realme, and decorit us with honest
" lawis. Hes he nocht dantit the pissant Britonis, ane pepill full
" of riches and chevalry; and put thaim baith out of the boundis
" of Scottis and Pichtis; gevand to us sic institutionis, that we may
" leif, as otheris nichtbouris, but feir of ennimes, gif we have na dis-
" centioun amang ourself? Quha sall think us worthy to have kind-
" nes, gif we defraude thir barnis of his just heritage? What dis-
" pleiseir sal we do to our ennimes, gif we do sic importabil schame
" to our prince? Lat Fergus goist knew us gud men, luffaris of
" vertew, and not unmindful of gud dedis; with the same mind, as
" he left us, to his posterite. Ressave, now, his eldist sonne to the
" crown, gif ye have ony respect to your faith; gif ye had ony fa-
" vour to him during his lif: otherwayis, ye sall be odius to the im-
" mortall Goddis and men." The pepill war sum part movit be thir
wourdis. Than Frauchtaus, chiftane of Brigandis, said in this maner:
" I se you, belovit freindis, contending heir, quhithir it be
" more expedient to have Fergus young sonne, unabill to regne for
" his minorite, or ane othir prudent man, to be king. I think Sem-
" bathis mind suld be lovit, gif na thing bot kindnes suld be consi-
" derit in electioun of ane prince. Nane is that misknawis amang
" you, how odius and detestabill it is to defraude King Fergus
" sonnis of thair kindly heritage. Na sic cruelteis, as I beleif, is in
" our mindis. Occurris nocht at this time to decerne gif Fergus son-
" nis suld immediatly succeed, bot only to se how the crown may be
" kepit hale to thair perfite aige. Quhat vengeance, skaith, and
" damage, sall fall on us, and our commoun weill, gif we, accord-
" ding to Sembathis mind, suffer ane barne to be our king? First
" sall rise amang us ane birnand occasion of hatrent; for thair is
" mony amang us equall to othir in power and rentis. Attoure the
" empire and governance of this realme, during this young kingis
" minorite, sall be gevin to ane of us: and he that governis the
" realme during the kingis minorite sall be king for the time, and

“ honorit amang us, with auctorite, reverence, and every other ho-
“ noris that efferis to princely estait. Quhay is he that will nocht
“ besely contend for that honour? Suppone ane of us obtene this
“ office, this man shall be king for the time, and sal riche his awin
“ hous. And als oft as ony thing occurris to be done for the com-
“ mon weill; as, ambassatouris of gret realmes to be rewardit, or
“ armyis to be send apon our fayis; this man, that regnis during
“ the kingis minorite, shall convert him only to our gudis. We shall
“ be constrainit to gif him our substance. We man nuris ane ava-
“ ritius cumpany of limmers about him, nothir for the weil of the
“ king, nor his realme. It is ane thing to have na admiratioun.
“ Ane man is plesant sa lang as he is privat, howbeit he alter his
“ maneris quhen he is clothit with publik auctorite; for gud for-
“ toun and gud maneris ar seildin grantit at anis to levand creatouris.
“ Finally, quhen this young king is cumin to age of xiv yeris, and
“ takis on him the governance of the realme, he wil be accompanyit
“ with suspitious pepill; and maik him to repair al wrangis done to
“ his leidis within his tender aige, and do al sic besines as is requirit
“ for the commoun weill; howbeit he can do na thing that time, for
“ laik of wisdome. Than, quhen he hes maist neid of wise counsa-
“ louris, he sal suffir nane to be with him bot thay only that will
“ assist to his vice. Than sal thay corruppit rutouris, his minions,
“ be salut as kingis, and haldin in reverence amang us, nochtwith-
“ standing thair insaciabill avarice, but schame. Quhay shall have
“ the curage or spreit to punis thaim for feir of this insolent prince?
“ Forthir, to behald ane young prince regnand above ony realme,
“ is siclike as quhay wald se the commoun weill sweyand down.
“ Than shall we have theiffis and oppressouris, takand oure gudis
“ baith in burgh and land without punitioun; than, for laik of jus-
“ tice, shall be ithand slauchteris, the realme devidit, the pepill but
“ bridil and governance, and may nocht leif in faith and justice.
“ Thairfore said the wise Salomon, ‘ Vengeance and sorrow shall the
“ pepill have, that hes ane younge king.’ For thir reasonis, I think
“ the barnis of Fergus suld be gevin to wise preceptouris, to lerne
“ lawis, gud havingis, and maneris; that thay may be abill efter to
“ governe the realme: and, as now, the governance of the realme
“ to be gevin to Ferithais, thair eme, or to ony othir abill man

“ quhome ye think expedient, be quhais auctorite the crown sall
“ remane reddy to be gevin to thaim at thair parfite age: and, als
“ sone as the king deis, thir barnis to succede immediatly to the
“ crown, gif thay be abill thairefore; and, during the kingis lif, thay
“ sall be honorit as immediat successouris to the crown efter the
“ kingis deth. Be this way, ye may saif the barnis of Fergus un-
“ defraudit of thair kindly heritage. Gif we desire to eschew the
“ sprout of sedicioun, with innomerabill inconvenientis efter follow-
“ ing; gif we desire baith to defend ourself, and bring our commoun-
“ weil to proffet; this electionoun of princis suld be observit; for it is
“ conforme to the mind of Fergus, quhilk, during his liffe, wald
“ nevir have socht ony singulare proffet, in dammage of our com-
“ mounweill.”

Quhen Ferithais had endit this orisoun, the counsall assentit haill to his opinionis, and, be plane consent of Parliament, maid actis. Quhen it hapnit thair king to deceis, levand behind him young children gottin of his body, the nerrest of the kingis blude, and ablest to do justice, sall rejose the crown for his time. Efter his deith, the kingis son sal succeid to the crown, but pley, gif he war abill thairto. It was defendit be that samin act, that na barnis be kingis. This consuetude was kept mony yeris efter: throw quhilk rais mekill troubill in this realme; for optimis the fader brother, regnand in the minorite of his nevo, kest his extreme besines to distroy him: siclik the nevo to his fader brother, for ambition of the crown: throw quhilk occurrit continual slauchteris of kingis and nobillis, to the gret trubill of the realme, and dammage of the commounweill.

Chap. Second.

Of King Ferithais; and of his deith.



E thir actis afore rehersit, Ferithais, brother to King Fergus, was chosin king. This prince, efter his elecioun, maid ane orisoun to his nobillis. The effect thair-of was, That he wald nocth resave the crown for riches, ambition, or dignite, bot only to support his nevois, quhill ane of thaim war abill to succeed; and, becaus he was left tutour-testamententer be thair fader, he wald leif na thing undone that might avance the commounweill, othir in weir or peace, with na les affectioune to his nevois, than thay war his awin sonnis. Sine he exhortit the nobillis, to make sic support and favour to his said nevois, that nocth he, bot thay, suld appere to governe the publik weill; havand in perpetuall remembrance, the honorabill actis done be thair nobil fader, King Fergus. He desirit als, grave and wise preceptouris to be chosin to his said nevois; that thay might incres als weill in vertew and science, as in yeris, but ony dammage of ennimes. And, finaly, declarit, he wald accept na publik gouvernance on him, quhil thir thingis war first providit.

Sic thingis done, Ferithais was crownit in the fatall chiar of merbill, and ressavit the kingis armis; in quhilke was ane scherand sword, with septoure, crown, and tressour, in maner of ane weirly trinsche, for defence of his realme in liberte, and punition of transgressouris be justice. Fra thens, thir war ay the nobill armis of Scotland, but ony variance, quhill the time of King Achaus, quhilk maid the first band of confederatioun, betwix us and France, with Charlis the Magne, King of France, and Romane Emperour: be quhilk confederatioun was eikit to the tressour, four goldin lillyis, with four goldin crocis, set in equale ordour about the tressour; to signify, the Scottis hes ay inviolatly keptit the Cristin faith, but ony spot of heresy, sen thay first tuke the same.

Sone after, ane convention was maid betwix the two kingis of Scottis and Pichtis; in the quhilk war sindry utilites devisit for the

weill of the two realmis. New peace was ratifyit; and punitioune maid on limmaris and movaris of sedition and trubill betwix the two realmes; and redres maid, on all sidis, for observatioun of the peace in times cuming. Sic thingis done, the two kingis returnnit hame.

Sone efter, Ferlegus, eldest sonne to King Fergus, be motioun of his familiaris, and otheris corruppit men, that micht nocht suffer justice, began to hate his eme, Ferithais, with purpos to distroy him. At last, seand his wicket purpos cum to litill effect, he gaderit ane cumpany of evill disposit men, and desirit^t the crown to be gevin to him, as just heritour thairof. Ferithais dredand, gif he war repugnant to thir desiris, to be cruelly invadit, answerit, he suld exoner him glaidly of the crown at the nixt conventioun, on the same maner as it was gevin to him: for he was nevir of purpos to beir auctorite langar than ony of his brother sonnis war abill to succeede; and desirit na thing sa mekill, as to se ane of thaim rejoyse the empire, that he might schaw, efter his deid, to Fergus, the sicker weill appering to his posterite. And, forther, he desirit his said nevo, to pas with him to the conventioun; in the quhilk he suld baith exoner him of al auctorite, and do every thing sa far as pertenit to the weill of King Fergus hous.

This plesand answer so mesit the mind of Ferlegus, that all haient for that time beand amovit, thay convenit baith togidder afore the nobillis in counsall, quhair King Ferithais said in this maner: "I traist it be nocht unknawin to you, wise faderis, quhen it was "disput amang you, be quhat wise this realme micht be governit in "the minorite of Fergus sonnis, ye gaif me the crown, thocht I was "unworthy, nocht only to governe it be justice, bot that the same "suld remane hale, quhill the sonnis of Fergus war abill to regne. "Quhat travell, quhat incredibill danger, have I sustenit, baith for "your commoun weill and felicite of this realme, now rising in ho- "nouris! And, sen na thing is mair patent to you than sic besines, "I will omit the residew thairof, that ye may have na occasioun to "deme me arrogant, or desirus of fenyet glore. I war richt inhu- "mane, sen I have na airis of my body, gif I wald defraude my "brother sonnis of thair kindly heritage, or transfer the samin in "ony uncouth blude. Ferlegus, my cousin, and just heritour to the "crown, clames the samin fra me of gud reason; for he is young,

“ lusty, of hie engine, of strang and lusty body to sustene gret
 “ chargis, and sall be every day more abill to governe this realme:
 “ be contrar, I am feblit be lang aige, and desiris to be relevit of
 “ hevy curis. I beseik you, thairfore, that the publik administratioun,
 “ quhilk I ressavit be your auctorite, be gevin to my cousin,
 “ sen he is abill, and I unganand thairfore. Na thing may be sa
 “ plesand for me, as to have ane privat liffe in times cumming but
 “ ony publict chargis Ressave the auctorite, with mair gladnes than
 “ ever it was gevin to me.”

The counsall, knawing weill quhat irremidiabil displesouris war appering to thair realme, gif this young and insolent prince Ferlegus war maid king, continewit Ferithais in his empire, and requirit him to sustene the governance of the realme, as he did afore, but ony feir of his aige; sen realmes ar governit mair be wisdome of aigit personis, than ony corporall strenthe. The nobillis wald noct abrogat the lawis maid afore aganis the empire of young childrin; and tuke gret indignation, that Ferlegus desirit sic thingis as war repugnant to thair commounweill. And thought thay ressavit him in thair counsal with reverence and honouris, yit thay severit him fra the pepill; repreving him quhy he yeid fra the counsall of the wise nobillis, his keparis, and desiring the crown without thair advise; to make it knawin, that he suld obey the counsal of his wise lordis. Ferlegus, brokin on this wise fra his purpos, maid him, with hevy cheir, to depart fra the counsall. The nobillis, dredand sindry displeseris to follow be his departing, brocht him agane be force, and kest all his corruppit counsallouris in preisoun: amang quhom ane was, that schew to the king in quhat maner his deith was devisit; traisting, be revelatioun thairof, to get his lif saiffit. The pepill, heirand this tressoun, war sa commovit, that thay had slane Ferlegus, war nocth the king pecifyit thair ire in time. And, thocht the king was advertist of this tressoun devisit in his slauchter, yit, to schaw him mair reuthfull than rigoros prince, he kest his mind to meis the fury of the pepill, and to keip his nevo fra displesair. Ferlegus was gevin in new keiping of the nobillis; bot his servitouris war punist to the deith.

Ferithais, als sone as this conventioun was skalit, raid throw his realme for equall administratioun of justice; quhill at last he was

slane, within the nicht, be his nevo Ferlegus, thre monethis after the first conspiration, the xv yeir of his regne.

Chap. Third.

How Ferlegus was banist for the slaunchter of King Ferithais; and of King Maynus.

 ERITHAIS slane, as we have now schawin, Ferlegus, the murdererar, and all other that war guilty of the said crime, fled amang the Pichtis; and finding thair na securite of his liffe, he fled in Britane, quhare he consumed the residew of his dayis in gret misery.

The nobillis, efter the slaunchter of Ferithais, convenit to the castell of Dounstafage, in Argyle, for election of the king. Quhilk day, the counsall, movit of kindnes to King Fergus, chesit Maynus, his youngest sonne, the xxiv yeir of his aige, to be king.

Maynus was ane nobil prince, richt different fra his bruthir, havig and all vicious men in gret hatrent. He exercit justice equaly in his realme; and gaif commission to his liegis to convene, and dres all debatis amang thaim self. The difficill materis, quhen thay occurrit, was discussit be himself, anis in the yeir; quhen he past throw his realme, halding his justice airis, for redressing of wrangis, and punitioun of trespassouris.

The same time, Crynus, King of Pichtis, send ambassatouris to King Maynus, rejoising of his felicite, and desiring the band of peace, maid afore betwix Scottis and Pichtis, to be renewit. King Maynus, weill instruckit be his nobillis quhat was to be done, resavat thir ambassatouris, and condiscendit to thair petition. The peace ratefyit in this maner, the Scottis began to burgeoun in sicker peace.

King Maynus knawing weill, na pepill may increas but justice, peace, and religiou; and seand realmes, and every thing in erd, sa subdewit to the power of Goddis, that na devise nor ingine of man may avale bot gif the Goddis stand propiciant thairto, quhais benivolence bene sicker gard and protectioun to all pepill; thairfore, to

move his liegis to religioun, he eikit certane new ceremonis, to be maid in the honour of Goddis within thair tempillis. And, first, he ordanit ane huge stane to be rasit, on the south side of the said tempillis, on quhilk thair sacrifice was maid. In memory heirof, remanis yit in our dayis mony huge stanis, drawin togidder in forme of circulis, namit be the pepill, the anciant tempillis of Goddis. It is na litill admiratioun, be quhat ingine and strenth sa huge stanes bene brocht togidder.

The sacrifice usit in thay dayis, was ane portioun of cornis, cattellis, or ony othir frutis that grew apon the ground, quhilk was gevin to kirkmen for thair sustentatioun; and offerit to the Goddis, quhen the samin was superflew, or mair than was sufficient sustentatioun to the preistis. King Maynus foundat als ane sacrifice, to be maid monethly, in the honoure of Diane, Goddis of woddis and huntaris; and, thairfore, the pepill maid thair adoratioun to the new mone. Quhilk superstition was lang usit amang oure anciant faderis, with mony othir vane ceremonyis, efter the rite of Egyptianis.

Quhen Maynus had governit his pepill in gud justice, and institute thaim with thir and othir superstitionis plesand to the religioun of thay dayis, he resignit the crown to his sonne Dorvidilla, and deceissit, the xxix yeir of his regne: King Elgane regnand above the Britonis, and King Thaar above the Pichtis.

Chap. Fourth.

Of King Dorvidilla; and of his constitutionis, maneris, and deith.



AYNUS deceissit as we have writting, his son Dorvidilla wes maid king. Efter his coronatioun, he renewit peace with his nichtbouris the Pichtis and Britonis; and schew him nurisar of tranquillite, detesting na thing mair than sic besines as gaif occasioun to battal; and delitit in every thing that micht draw his pepil in peace. He tuke gret delite of hunting, rachis, and houndis; and maid lawis, that grew-quhelpis suld nocht

line thair moderis, for he fand, by experience, houndis gottin in that maner unprofitabil for hunting. He ordanit als, that ilk nobill suld nuris twa rachis and ane hound to his hunting; and, quhen the houndis war manyeit be adventure of chais, to be sustenit on the commoun gud. He ordanit, the slayer of ane wolf to have ane ox to his reward. Oure eldaris persewit this beist with gret hatrent, for the gret murdir of beistis done be the samin.

The Scottis havand na occasioun of civil nor of uncouth weris, set thair ingine to precell all othir pepill in the craft of hunting, and maid divers lawis concerning the same. In the first, commandit, that quhais dog first bait the deir, suld have the hide thairof; quhais dog bait nixt, suld have the heid and the hornis: the body curit to be at the plesair of the maister of huntis; the residew to be for the houndis. Gif ony contention rais amang the huntaris, to cheis ane juge, with all thair consentis, in the tempill of Diane, to aggre thaim. Thir lawis war maid be generall consent of the pepill, to nuris thaim in commoun plesair, drawing fra thaim all occasioun of injuris and hatrent. Quhilkis lawis war kept mony yeris efter.

Thir constitutionis, and utheris devisit afore be Kinge Fergus, war collectit togidder in tabillis, and gevin in keping to the wisest and maist profound Clark for the time, to shaw baith to the juge, and to the persone quhilkis war to be accusit, the punition conforme to thair demeritis; that the pepill nicht understand, the juge past nocht fra his boundis of justice in punitioun of crimes: attour, the counsal wald condampne na faltouris in thay dayis, quhill the lawis war first schawin, according to the falt. Throw quhilk it come in use, that all criminabill personis, seand thaim, be just sentence, condampnit to the deid, tuke the samin in pacience: gif ony punition was maid on thaim above the lawis, thay murmurit, as opprest be the jugis. This maner of justice remainis yit amang the Ilis of Scotland, and may na way be abrogat; for thair bene certane interpretouris of the lawis, but quhom thay can gif na richtuis judgement.

Quhen Dorvidilla had roung xxviii yeiris, he deceissit at Berigone; and left behind him ane young child, namit Rewthar, quhilk nicht nocht succede, for the lawis maid afore aganis young children.

Chap. Fifth.

Of the tyrane King Nathak ; and of his slauchter.



FTER the deith of Dorvidilla, his brothir Nathak, ane fair and lusty persone, and abill, as apperit, to publik administration, was maid king. This prince rang skarsly two yeris, quhen he opprest his pepill with sic servitude, that he was haldin for ane mischevous tyrane. He sufferit na lawis to be exercit ; he spulyet the commounis of thair riches and gudis ; and persewit his nobillis with slauchteris and banissing. Thir doingis maid him odius to his liegis, and maid his empire richt unsicker ; and, thocht he oft times was counsallit be his freindis to abstene fra sic enormiteis, he desistit nocht, bot grew ay the more in vice that he incressit in yeris, lyke ane bludy monstoure, but shame and mercy. Yit his cruell and unhappy dedis war nocht lang unpunist : for Dowall, capitane of Brigandis, quhome he thocht afore to have slane for his ouir greit pissance, be assistance of mony uthir nobillis, conspirit aganis him. And, to bring his purpos the sonar to effect, he maid Rewthar, the sonne of King Dorvidilla, to be thair governoure ; to that intentioun, that gif thir hie attemptatis succedit nocht with sic felicite as he desirit, the charge thairof suld allanerly redound to Rewthar.

Dowall, to find occasion that he micht bring his purpos to effect, brought this young Rewthar, with ane cumpany of armit men, in the samin place quhare King Nathak remanit ; and, quhen he sawe the mater dressit, as he devisit, to have occasioun of debait, he gaif displesand wourdys to King Nathak, saying, he was ane fals tyrane but shame, and nocht only spoilyet Rewthar of the crown, bot rang with maist cruell and odius tyranny above the pepill ; and, with hid slichtis and tressoun, hes slane ane gret part of all the nobillis. Nathak answerit agane, in his wod fury, that he was king be ordour of justice ; and suld, thairfore, regne in times cuming contrar the mind of Dowall and all otheres of his opinioun, in sic ma-

ner; that the said Dowall sall never find him mair favorabill nor gratius than he was afore; and declarit, within few dayis, he sall punis him, and al utheris of his opinioun, in the scharpest sort that mycht be devisit, for thair attemptatis.

Dowall, movit with thir dispitfull wordis, ruschit forthwart with his complices, and slew King Nathak, with all the nobillis that war of his mind, the secund yeir of his regne.

Chap. Sixth.

How Rewthar, ane young Child, was maid King, contrar the lawis.

How Ferquhard, Capitane of Lorne, was chasit be Dowall in the Ilis; and of his Orison maid to the Pepill thairof.



ATHAK, the tyrane, slane, as said is, Dowall made ane conventioun; and, be assistance of sindry nobillis to his opinion, he crownit Rewthar in the chair of merbil. Mony of the nobillis war nocht content of thir doingis; havand gret indignatioun, that baith thair king was slane, and the lawis concerning the electioun of thair prince abrogat, be his privat auctorite; and ane younge childe maid kinge, aganis thair honourabill actis laityt maid for thair commoun weill. Thir nobillis, that war of this mind, maid ane privat conventioun togidder; and amang thaim was Ferquhard, capitane of Kintyre and Lorne, maich to King Nathak; ane man of subtill ingine, and havand gret ambition to the crown.

This Ferquhard, beleiving the time ganand to conques the crown, with dissimilit mind, as he wald debait the actione of the commoun weill, complanit baith the slauchter of Nathak be the cruel Dowall, and ane barne maid king, to the dammage of the pepill and commoun weill; and exhortit, thairfore, the counsall to provide ane haistly remeid to resist the tyranny of Dowall, quhilke intendit to usurp the crown in name of Rewther; and, gif the samin war nocht done, sic sediciooun and civill weiris sall rise haistely amang the chiftanis of thair realme, that the samin suld find ane haistly subversioun.

Skarsly war thir wordis said, quhen Dowall enterit, with ane band of men, and slew sindry nobillis in the counsall; bot Ferquhard, evill woundit, eschapit with ane certane of his frendis, and fled in the Ilis; quhare he convenit all the clannis and pepill thairof to ane counsall, and said in this maner: “ Had we observit the lawis concerning the election of our kingis, maist vailyeant pepill, it had nocht bene necessar to me this day to make this orisoun; for we nicht have leifft in gud tranquillite and peace under the empire of Nathak, our wise and vailyeant prince, now laithly slane be Dowall, the cruell tyrane. Attour, to aggrege this importabil cruelte in mair dammaige of our commoun weill, he hes nocht only slane our king, bot intrusit ane young child in his place, in plane derogatioun of oure lawis; intending thairthrow, to bring baith us and oure commoun weill to ute mischeif. I find na thing, maist forey campionis, that may seme us les, than to lurk heir schamfully as effeminat pepill, eschewing the wraith of oure ennimes, and regarding nouthir our honour nor proffet; sen thair is na other way sa plesand to strenth our ennimes, and to febill oure self. This maist cruel tyrane hes nocht only slane the nobillis of this realme, bot slane the preistis and religious men; and, that na esperance suld remane in us to withstand his cruelte, he hes tressonably put down all the vailyeant men that favorit us in Albion. He haldis all the aigit men, that nicht have proffit us be thair wise counsall, in sic captivite, that thay ar na better than deid. And, that he may oppres us with more pissance, he hes maryit Rewther, ane young child, quhome he namis king, on the doucher of Gethus, King of Pichtis. This unmercifull tyrane hes devisit, as we are surely advertist, als sone as he hes vineust us, to cut oure eiris, and put out oure eyne, that we may then remane on live, to our shame and perpetuall derisioun. Yit, wil ye concur with manheid and wisdome to my opinioun, traist fermely, ye sall nocht only eschew sic cruelteis, be favour of Goddis, bot pu-
nis him conforme to his demerites; and beleif fermely, that all thingis sall succede to us with hie felicite, gif we, with na les cu-
rage than wisdome, defend oure richt, oure liberte, and oure faith: for we se oft times vailyeant and gret princis dejeckit fra thair honoure and imperiall digniteis, quhen thay applaudit to

“ tressoun and falset. Heirfore, gif we be men, and worthy to be
 “ callit the posterite of oure nobill progenitouris, quhilkis nevir re-
 “ fusit to assailye maist dangerus battallis in thair just defence, lat
 “ us defend our richt, our lawis, wiffis, and childrin, aganis this
 “ maist odius tyrane; and erar assailye extreme chance of battall,
 “ than to leif in perpetuall schame. But dout, the Goddis sall be
 “ propiciant to us for oure just persut; be contrar, thay sall be re-
 “ pugnant to our ennimes for thair tyranny. Lat us othir de with
 “ honoure, or ellis have victory with triumphant glore, and revenge
 “ the murdir of the king and his nobillis, recently maid be this ty-
 “ rane.”

Chap. Seventh.

*How Ferquhard and Dowall, reconountering uthir be plane Battall,
 war baith slane, with all the Nobillite of Scottis and Pichtis; the
 King of Pichtis slane, and the King of Scottis tane.*



HE capitanis of the tribis, and pepill thairof, movit in gret hatrent be thir wordis, turnit all feir of deith in maist rageand fury; and baithit thair handis with mannis blude, as the rite was in thay dayis; and maid thair aithis, to revenge the slauchter of Nathak, and his nobillis, in the scharpest maner that might be devisit. And, but more tary, thay gaderit ane army out of Ireland, Argyle, Lorne, Canter, and othir partis adjacent; sine landit, with mony galyouns and lang faddis, in Albioun. Ferquhard, returning in this wise, drew mony of the pepill, quhare he come, to his opinioun; and tuke thair aithis, outhir to revenge the slauchter of King Nathak, or ellis to de all at anis.

Dowall, knawing his cumming, met him, with an army, at Berigone; quhare it was cruelly fouchtin on all sidis: bot, at last, Dowall was discomfist, and sevin thousand men of his army slane; and yit more slauchter had bene maid, war nocth the nicht severit thaim. On the morrow, Dowall, with furius hatrent, colleekit the residew of his army to new array, havand with him Gethus, King of Pichtis,

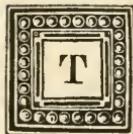
and Rewthar, King of Scottis, with mony of all the nobillis of baith thair realmes. On the army adversar, was Ferquhard, with the inhabitantis of Cathnes, Argyle, Murray, and mony otheris of the Ilis. Thir two armyis met finally togidder in mair fury than afore, and faucht neir to the ute exterminiou of thaim baith.

In this unhappy battall was slane Gethus, King of Pichtis, with incredibill nowmer baith of nobillis and commounis; and baith the chiftanis Dowall and Ferquhard slane, with all the nobilit of Scottis. This lamentabill and unhappy battall was fochtin with sic perseverant hatrent, that allanerly remanit **viii** hundred men unslane on baith the sidis. The residew of Ferquhardis army, to quhome this unpleasand victory succedit, seing the feild left efter sa huge murdir, followit on the chais, with ithand slauchter, quhill thay come to the castell of Callender. Thair, was King Rewther tane.

Throw this unhappy battall was maid sa terribill slauchter, that, mony yeris efter, nouthir Scottis nor Pichtis was left on liffe, sufficient to inhabit this realme, nor yit to withstand thair ennimes.

Chap. Eighth.

How the Scottis and Pichtis war doung out of Albion be the Britonis.



HE Britonis, quhilkis war ay our ennimes, heirand this lamentabil distractioun of Scottis and Pichtis, cuming on thaim be unprudence of civil weris, traistit the time sufficient to make thaim rejose the hale empire of Albion; and, thairfore, rasit thair army in maist weirly ordinance, and invadit sindry landis of Pichtis baith with swerd and fire. The Pichtis, brokin with the weiris afore reheirsit, and disparit of support, gaderit all thair bestiall and gudis, with thair wiffis, children, and freindis, and come, be mony wilsome and difficil gaitis, to Orkney; and, efter thair cuming, chesit Gethus, brother to King Gethus afore deceissit, to be thair king, and dwelt sindry yeris efter in the said regioun in gud peace and freindschip with the pepill thair-of: thairfore, Orkney was ay namit the aulde realme of Pichtis.

The Britonis, herand the Pichtis departit in this wise, come in Pentland, Mers, and Tevidaill, and plenist all the strenthis thairof with thair gudis and pepill ; and, nocht lang efter, thay come in the Scottis landis. The Scottis, richt affrayit of thair cuming, and seing na other remeid, drew thaim to thair harnes and wappinnis, and met thaim in arrayit battall at Calder Wod. Nochttheles, the Scottis war discomfist, and two thowsand of thaim slane ; the residew fled heir and thair in sindry partis. The fame of this unhappy battall maid the pepill na les disparit, than all the nobill blude of Fergus had bene endit that day in Albion.

The Britonis, proud and insolent be thir feliciteis, herand, be thair exploratouris, that ane certane of Scottis, quhilkis eschapit fra this last battal, war fled to Berigone, for defence of King Rewther ; (for he was in the said castell, with ane few nowmer of nobillis;) and the residew of Scottis, with thair wiffis and barnis, fled in the Ilis ; gaderit ane army, be the ordinance of Denus, thair king, and lade ane sege to the said castell. Nochttheless, the Scottis defendit it lang time ; quhil at last thay war drevin to sic penurite, becaus thair vittallis failyeit, that thay kest cavillis, quha suld be first devorit, to sustene the liffis of thaim that war within the hous. And, becaus thay saw the maist vailyeant campionis fall to be devorit in this misera-bill wise, thay devisit, the samin nicht, to ische on thair ennimes, and erar to revenge sum displesour on thaim, than miserably to de in that sort. And, that the king nicht ische more esely with his nobillis, thay devisit, that Colane, chiftane of Lorne, sal ische with ane hundredth men to the nixt montane. And as it was devisit, so followit ; for Colane isching furth on this wise, and fechtand to the uter exterminioun of his fayis, was finaly slane, with all his folkis : and in the mene time, quhen he was maist ernestly fechtand, King Rewther ischit at ane quiet posthern with his nobillis, and come hastily to the see, quhair schippis war reddy abidinge his cuming. Rewther, eschaping on this maner, arrivit in the Ilis ; and, finding thair na securite of his liffe, he past in Ireland. The wiffis of the tribe of Lorne, seing all thair husbandis slane afore thair ene, slew thaimself, that thay suld nocht remane in servitude of thair ennimes.

The Britonis knawing finaly, how Rewther and his nobillis war eschapit, war sa commovit, that thay slew the residew of Scottis in

all partis quhair thay war apprehendit; sine garnist al the strenthis of Scottis with thair garisonis. The residew of the Scottis, savit be thair fleing, and seing thaimself nocht of pissance to resist the Britonis, fled to the montanis; and debaitit thair miserabill liffis, be straitnes of the ground, with scars and hard fude; levand, in the somer, on milknes, rutis of herbis, and beryis; and, in the winter, of wild flesche of the montanis: and sumtime thay draif gret prayis of bestial, be dirknes of nicht, fra the Britonis, to sustene thair liffis.

Thus stude the Scottis and Pichtis, that abaid in Albion, nere twelf yeris, under servitude of Britonis.

Chap. Ninth.

How the Scottis and Pichtis recoverit thair Landis, and discomfist Sysyll, King of Britonis; and of the residew of King Rewtheris liffe.

 UHILL sic thingis war done in Albion, King Rewther had on his wif, in Ireland, ane sonne, namit Thereus. And, not lang efter, be request of Gethus, King of Pichtis, he returnit in Albion, and landit at Lochbroun, in Ros. Als sone as the Scottis war returnit on this wise in Albion, they slew, be auld rite, the first man thay met, and bathit thair mouth and swordis in his blud; sine prayit the Goddis to grant thaim sic felicite, that thay may condingly revenge the slauchter of thair progenitouris. Belive, thay maid thaim to pas forthwart toward the south: and, in the mene time, thay war advertist, that Gethus, King of Pichtis, was cumin within xxx milis to thaim, with ane gret army, that was send to thaim be thair freindis out of Albion, to help thaim to recover thair landis. The thrid day efter, baith the armyis met togidder with gret triumphe; and passing forthwart to the south, thay met all the Scottis and Pichtis, quhilkis war haldin the yeir afore under servitude.

Sysyl, King of Britonis, herand thir tithingis, gatherit haistely ane army to recontrer his ennimes. Incontinent, the confederat pe-

pill, but ony sicht to conques ony strenthis or gudis, entrit with auful army in Britane, and invadit the samin with gret injure and cruelteis. King Sysyll, to revenge thir cruelteis invadit the Scottis and Pichtis with haiste battall. Nochttheles, his army was finaly disconfist.

The hie and soverane manheid of King Rewther was principal occasion of this glorius victory ; and in memory thairof, the cuntry quhare the battall was fochtin is callit yit to oure dayis, Rethirdaill, that is to say, the Vale of Rewthir. This battall was sa cruelly fochtin, that baith the armyis war constrainit to taik peace under thir conditionis : The Britonis soll render al the strenthis, landis, and townis, pertening to the Scottis and Pichtis ; and sal nocht invaid thaim, in times cuming

The Scottis, Pichtis, and Britonis, levit mony yeris efter in gud tranquillite and peace. The yeir that King Rewther recoverit his realme, was, fra the beginning of the warld, M M M M . D C C C C . X C V yeris ; afore the incarnatioun, C C . I V yeris ; fra the beginning of Rome, D . X L V I yeris. King Rewther levit, the residew of his dayis, but ony uncouth weris or seditioun of his leigis ; and deceissit, the xxvi yeir of his regne.

Chap. Tenth.

Of King Rewtha, and his lawis and governance. How Ptolome, King of Egypt, send his Oratouris, to se the situatioun of Scotland.



R EWTHER deceissit, as we have schawin, his sonne Theresus wes of so tender age, that he nicht nocht succeed to the crown, be reason of the lawis afore rehersit ; and, thairfore, his cusing Rewtha was maid king, for thay war brethir barnis. This Rewtha was the first king amang the Scottis that fand ingine to put nobill men, for thair vailyeant dedis, in memory, and maid riche sepulturis for the bodyis of thaim that war slane be Britonis in defence of this realme. He commandit als

mony hie stanis to be set about the sepulture of every nobil man, as was slane be him of Britonis. In memory heirof, sindry of thaim remanis yit in the hie landis; that the pepill may knew, sic men war vailyeant in thair dayis: throw quhilk it come in use, that the sepulturis of nobill men was haldin in gret reverence amang the pepill. On thir sepulturis was ingravin imageris of dragonis, wolfis, and othir beistis; for na inventioun of letteris was in thay dayis, to put the deidis of nobil men in memore.

The commoun pepill was gevin, that time, to store of beistis, and teling of thair landis, but ony othir industry. Thus failyet al ingeinous craftis in this cuntry; and, thairfore, King Rewtha brocht all maner of craftsmen out of othir contres, and sparrellit thaim in sindry schiris of his realme, with feis and dewteis; sum part to be takin on the commoun purs, and sum part as thay mycht win be thair laubouris. The heid of every ox that was slane, was gevin to the smith of that schire; the crag, to the forester of the wod; the young, to the man of law; half ane cost, to the sercheouris of thevis; als mekill, to the wricht; two ribbis of the cost, to the medicinar; als mekill, to the surrurgiane: and, beside this, war gevin to thaim certane mesouris of aitis and beir, becaus na change of money was in thay dayis. Throw parting of the ox in this wyis, rais up the annuell rentis in this land.

Efter that King Rewtha had plenist his realme on this maner with craftsmen, he was informit, that gret dammage fell oftmis to his pepill, be ignorance of evil medicinaris; and, thairfore, he inhibit, under paine of deid, that ony man exercer the art of medicinaly, without thay war found richt expert, with lang experiance thairof. Afore this time, na medicinaris was usit in this cuntry; for al personis, that war trublit with infirmiteis, war brocht to the marcat, or to ony other commoun place, quhare the pepill mycht se thaim, to gif thaim counsall to use sic remedyis, as thay usit quhen thay convalescit of thair maledis. It was ane thing richt odius in thay dayis, to visee nocth the pacient with comfort and consolation.

About this time come certane oratouris fra King Ptolome of Egypt, to explore the maneris and situacioun of every pepill and regiou. Thir oratouris war plesandlie ressavit be the king; for thay war discendit of the Egyptianis, his forbearis. The king gart

convoy thaim bath throw the realme of Scottis and Pichtis, according to thair desiris. Thir oratouris wrait in thair bukis the situatioun of hillis, firthis, ilis, townis, lochis, and castellis, within this region; with the lenth of dayis and nichtis, baith in winter and simer; as thay war commandit be King Ptolome: quhilk gaif his ingine to discribe the situatioun of the erd, in every regioune and Ilis quhare ony men usit to have passage; with discriptioun of the montanis, firthis, and cieteis of the samin, be divers instrumentis of astronomy: be quhais deligence and laubour remanis now ane richt crafty and proffitable werk, namit, The Cosmographe of Ptolome, richt expert in mathematicik. This ingenius werk was completit in the time of Adriane, the Empriour.

Quhen thir oratouris had sene and degeistlie considerit this regioune, thay persavit the samin ritis, the same maner of writtingis, the same young, and the same habit and ceremonyis, as was usit amang the Egyptianis; and, for that caus, thir oratouris war the more plesandlie depischit of this realme.

King Rewther governit his realm cxiv yeris after, in gret justice, but ony uncouth or civill weris: quhill at last he began to suspek his lang felicite; and, thairefore, to prevene all calamite, gif ony war approcheand be mischance of fortoun, he resignit the crown to Thereus, son to King Rewther, the xvii yeir of his regne.

Chap. Eleventh.

Of King Thereus, and how he was exilit for his tyranny. How Conane, Chiftane of Brigandis, was maid Governour during his proscription.



HEREUS ressaving the crown on this maner, apperit, the first sex monethis of his regne, to be ane virtewis prince. Bot sone eftir, he becam ane vicious tyrane; involvit so with lust, that he had na regard to resson, honesty, nor justice; and was namit amang the pepill, the scornar of religioune.

The pepill, be imitation of this insolent prince, increscit every day more and more in corruptit maneris; throw quhilk followit ithand slauchter of nobill men, with reif and heirschippis in all partis. Strongest thevis, and gretest oppressouris, war haldin in maist veneratioun and honouris. The commonis war sa disparit for the irrecoverable skaithis done to thaim, that thay traistit nocht possibil ony tyrane more vicious might regne above thaim. The capitaniis of the tribis, movit be thir insufferable offendis, thocht unworthy that ony noble men suld be misgidit be sic ane corruptit monstour; and, thairfore, maid ane quiet conventiouii amang thaimself; in the quhilk thay concludit, baith to degraid him of his crown and kingdome. Thereus, heirand this conspiratioun of his nobillis againis him, was sa astonist, that he fled in Britane. At last, quhen he had socht lang time support of the Britonis to restore him to his realme, frustrat thairof, he consumit the residew of his dayis in misere at York, the xii yeir of his regne.

Quhen Thereus was exilit on this maner, the nobillis of Scotland, that thair common weill sal incurre na dammage for laking of ane king, chesit Conane, capitane of Brigandis, to be governour. This Conane, efter that he was maid governour, tuke gret laubouris to meis al dissentionis that war rissin afore amang the nobillis be sleuth of Thereus. He punist theiffis, revers, and othir criminabill personis, with sic severite and justice, that the bestiall and gudis lay thairfurth but ony trubil. Quhill at last King Thereus deceissit in Britane, be quhais deith his auctorite was expirit.

Chap. Twelfth.

Of King Josyne; and of the experience and preaching of two Philosophouris.



Ls sone as the nobillis war advertist of the deith of Thereus, thay maid ane conventioun at Berigon; in the quhilk, Josyne, bruther to Thereus, was maid king. This Josyne renewit the peace with his nichtbouris, the Pichtis and Britonis, and held surrurgianis and medicinaris in gret reverence; for he wes nurist, the time of his youtheid, with sic personis in Ireland. He was ane gud medicinar, and had gud experience of herbis. Our forbearis usit na othir medicin, in curing thair woundis or infirmiteis, bot herbis; and, in thay dayis, thair was nocht sa mony divers kindis of maladyis as now ar sene. Few infirmiteis war sene that time, bot gravellis, caterris, and siclike maladyis, cuming throw distemperance of cauld and donk humouris. The pepill leifft with sa skars and naturall fude, that thay had nocht only lang dayis, bot war preservit fra all maner of maledyis. Nochtheles, fra the abstinence of our forbearis was set aside, than uncouth and delicious coursis began to multiply sa amang us, that, with uncouth and strange metis, come uncouth and strange infirmiteis. And, becaus the unyementis and drogareis that our forbearis usit nicht nocht cure the new maledyis, the pepill war constrainit, throw importabil dolour incressing be the samin, to seke remeid be new ingine and craft. And, sen our time is now sa venomit with uncouth and superflew metis and drinkis, we thocht sum thing necessar to rehers the temperance of our forbearis in thair leving, with sic maledyis and remedyis as war usit in thair dayis; of quhilkis sall be schawin more largely efter, quhen time occurris more expedient.

In the time of King Josyne, war brocht to his presence at Berigone, two venerabill Clerkis, of plesant visage, bot thay war almaist nakit. It is writtin, that thay war preistis of Spanye; and, passing

out of Portingale to Athenes, be unmercifull tempest of sees war schip-brokin at Ros; thair schip, and remanent pepil that was with thaim, perist, and thay only savit: and, becaus thay war philosophouris, and men of gret experience, thay war weill tretit. At last, quhen thay war xiv dayis refreschit efter thair walking and trubill of see, thay war brocht agane to the kingis presence. The king demandit thaim to schaw, quhat thay understude of the nature of the ground of Scotland, and of the maneris and religioun of the pepill thairof. Thir philosophouris answerit, thay might nocht say perfite-ly to thir questionis; becaus thay had nocht lang time to have ex-perience thairof, and als war sum part febillit in thair fantasyis, for the calamite laithly falling to thaim be storme of sees. Nochtheles, sa far as thay might conjecture, thair was more riches and proffet to be gottin within the vanis of the erd of Scotland, than above; for it was more gevin to winning of minis and metallis, than ony produc-tion of cornis. Thay knew this, said thir philosophouris, be the influence of the hevin. As to the maneris and religion of the pepill, thay declarit, thair religion was nocht to be commendit; for thay adorit imagis of brutall beistis, in forme of levand Goddis, as the Egyptianis usit: quhilk suld nocht be; for God was that thing only, that contenit landis, sees, and every creature; quhais perfite and ver-ray image can not be paintit nor devisit be ingine of man. It was necessar, thairfore, that the pepill suld leif thair idolatryis; and adore allanerly the levand God, mover of the hevinnis, with sacrifice and prayer in thair tempillis allanerly, but ony imageris; and, finaly, to leif in hope of reward, gif thay leiffit with clene lif and justice: uthirways, not was devisit for thaim bot dolour and torment.

Thir philosophouris preaching in this maner, inducit the pepill to leif thair idolatryis; makand thair sacrifice and prayer allanerly to the mover of hevin, the eternall God. Thus war the pepill brocht to that way, that the sacrifice that was wont to be gevin to Isis and Apis, the Goddis of Egypt, was abrogat. Throw quhilk the Scottis war mony yeris efter sa religious, that thay made adoration only to God, the mover of the hevin: yit utheris war sa indurat in thair awn erroris, that thay couth nocht omit thair auld superstitionis; and belevit firmly, that the son, mone, and otheris the sternis and lanternis of the hevin, war verray Goddis: for thay war sa obstinat

and blindit in the auld arour of Gentilis, that quhen thay saw na thing in erd more bricht nor mervellus than the son, mone, and uther lichtis of the hevin, thay belevit sum divinite thairin, and adorit thaim as Goddis.

This history, sa far as it is now drawin, is collecket out of Vere-mond, Johne Campbell, and Cornelius Ireland; quhom we have determit to follow, as maist autentik auctouris, to the end of this our quhatsumever werke.

King Josyne was ane virtuous prince, and deceissit at Berigone, the xxiv yeir of his regne.

Chap. Thirteenth.

Of King Fynnane and his Lawis; and of the College of Clerkis in the Ile of Man.

FTER the deith of Josyne, his son Fynnane, ane wise and virtuous prince, was maid king. He was sa gret luffar of justice, that he richely rewardit all the capitannis of the tribis, quhare he fand thaim luffaris of the com-mounweill. He gaif his hale attendance to win the hertis of his pepill, and maid na exercition nor ministracion of justice but advise of his nobillis. He ekit the nowmer of his counsal with ma senatouris than was afore, to mak thaim the more renoumit. He maid ane law, that the king sall do na thing, concerning the publik administration of his realme, but advise of his nobillis. He maid als ane uther law, that the king sall nothir denonce weir, nor treit peace, but advise of the capitannis of tribis. Be thir, and siclike constitutionis, King Fynnane conquest gret favour and benivolence of his pepill. Be this maner of governance, he maid him sa strang amang his liegis, that he was nevir assailyoit efter with ony uncouth weris, and grew in gret abundance of riches. Finaly, he set his mind to repare the religion of Goddis, for it wes decait in his faders time. First, he commandit the imagis of thair Goddis to be restorit to thair tempillis, that the pepill micht have the samin in adoration as afore: and yit he wald

nocht inhibit the pepill to adore the levand God, mover of hevin ; for that wes institute afore be the philosophouris. He sufferit his pepill to adore quhat God thay plesit. He wes the first king that institute Prelatis and Clerkis to be in this realme : and, that thir Clerkis suld remane togidder, he gaif thaim the Ile of Man, liand betwix Ireland and Britane, fornens Brigance, quhare thair principlall seit wes ordanit to be.

Thir Clerkis convenit, ilk yeir, anis, at the command of the gret maister and bischop thairof ; specialie quhen ony hie and wechty materis occurrit, concerning the defence of thair religiouen or commonweil. Thir preistis war namit Druides ; and wes institute in this Ile, be advise of the king and his nobillis, to mak sacrifice in the honour of thair Goddis, and to instruk the sonnis of nobill men in virtew and science, siclik as thay war lernit at Athenes. It wes commandit, that ane of thaim, as bischop and maister, sall have jurisdiction above the laif ; before quhom wes borne ane gleib of fire, in signe of his honour and divinite : efter quhais deith, ane othir, maist approcheand to virtew and cunning, wes chosin to succeed in his place. Thir Clerkis, throw thair ithand exercitioun, increscit sone eftir richt expart in morall and naturall philosophie ; and wes haldin be the pepill maist just and haly creaturis. Thay maid lawis, to discus the doutis baith of publik and singular actionis ; and devist nocth onlie punitioun for all maner of crimes, bot ordanit condigne rewardis to be gevin for al gud dedis. Thay cursit thaim that contempnit thair auctorite. This punitioun wes evir odious amang oure forbearis ; for the cursit pepill war, in thay dayis, resecat fra al gud company, and not participant with the reward of honouris or digniteis, bot numerit amang the company of infamit and wickit misdoaris. Thir preistis wer exemit fra all chargis of weir, and othir exactionis. Of thir preistis writtis mony auctouris ; affirming, thair ordour and religiouen first found in Britane : for thay cal the hail Ile of Albion under ane name, Britane.

Fynnane wes ane virtuous prince, and na les honorit for his civil than religious maneris ; be quhilkis he decorit his realme. He marryit his son Durstus on Agasia, douchter to the King of Britonis ; and conquest, be the samin, na litill glore and benevolence amang the Britonis. At last, he past to gif consolation to the King of

Pichtis, quhilk wes liand that time in vehement fever at Camelon, quhare he deceissit, the xxx yeir of his regne. His body wes brocht to Berigone, an beryt amang the remanent sepulturis of his progenitouris.

Chap. Fourteenth.

Of King Durstus; and how he was slane for his cruell tyranny.

FYNNANE deceissit on this wise, his sonne Durstus wes maid king. This Durstus, be insolent youth, wes gevin to drounknes and unbridelit lust; and so different fra his faderis governance, that he haitit all thaim that his fader luffit. He brak the ordour of law that wes institute afore be his progenitouris, for ministratioun of justice. He usit na counsal in gret materis, bot onlie of thaim that favorit his vicious maneris, and culd find to him new maner of lustis. He was sa mischevous ane tyrane, that al the nobil men, that his fader usit on his secret counsall, war be him othir slane or banist; or ellis, be feinyeit causis, forfaltit of thair landis and guddis. And, finalie, he wes brocht to sic cruelte, that not onlie he slew thame quhilikis war odius to him, bot als slew al thaini quhare he belevit to get ony riches or guddis be thair deith. He repudiat his nobil quene Agasia, the King of Britonis dochter; and gart his vicious harlotis deforce hir.

Quhill this unhappy tyrane wes involvit with thir and siclik abominable dedis, the capitanis of the Ilis, Lorne, Argyle, and Ros, be frequent conventionis amang thaimself, maid ane conspiratioun aganis him. So far haitit thir capitanis the rage of tyranny, that thay wald na langar abid at his opinion; and to that fine, thay sall nocht appere as brekaris of the faith that suld be keptit to thair natural prince, thay schew thaim, be opin proclamation, nocht assemblit to invaid the king, bot onlie to punis his vicious and unhappy counsalouris, be quhome the realme was brocht to sic enormiteis, that, without remeid war haistely providit, the samin suld pas to ute rewine.

Quhill the capitanis foresaid war preparand thair armis on this maner, the commonis, richt desirus to distroy this tyrane, rais hais- tely on athir hand to assist to thir capitanis. Yit part of the com- monis wald nocth concurre with thir capitanis, beleving thaim nocth assemblit for ony common weill, bot only to usurpe the crown.

Durstus, na litil affrayit of thair assemblance, for he knew him- self guilty, maid him to flee; and, seand na place sufficient to keip him, he send to the Britonis, desiring his quene Agasia to be send to him, with ane power of armit men, to resist ane certane of his no- billis, aganis him conspirit. At last, seand na support apperand, he began to turne his treasonabill mind to falset and slichtis, and tuke purpos to sla thir conspiratouris be sum hid waching; beleiving be that way only to eschew the danger appering. Incontinent, he send ambassatouris to thir capitanis, and fenyet him sa penitent, that he wald reforme all offendis and injuris done be him in perditoun of the commounweill; and promittit, nocth only to governe the realme in times cuming be thair advise, bot to punis his wickit counsalouris, quhilkis war occasioun of all displesouris be him done. It was als ane odious thing, to ane king to fecht aganis his subdittis; specially quhen thay ar nocth set to degraid him of his crown, bot only to re- duce him to better estait. And, for the observation thairof, he wald bind him, in the tempill of Diane, under quhat astrictionis thay plesit; and, gif that might nocth be sufficient, he suld cum to thaim but ony assurance, and submit him to underly quhat correctioun thay pleasit. And, that his wordis nicht have the more credit, he kest ane cer- tane of his servitouris in prisone, as he war to punis thaim to the deith for thair assistance to his vices. Otheris, of small estimatioun, he arrayit in precious clething, and send thaime to the said capitanis to be punist at thair plesour.

The capitanis gevand haistelie credence to his wordis, send Doron, capitane of the tribe of Lorne, to take his aithis eftir his promis. Thus was Durstus brocht in the temple of Diane, and sworne be- fore the preist thairof with all aithis that couth be devisit, to ressave thir capitanis to maist tender freindship, remitting the rankour of his mind, with al maner of crime that nicht be imput to thaim; and not onlie to hald thaim as his faithfull and tendir freindis, bot to governe the realme in times cumming be thair avise.

Als sone as thir capitannis, be vane confidence, were cumin to him, he ressavit thame sa plesandlie, that baith his wordis, visage, and contenance, apperit but' ony dissimilance. Thus was generall concord and blythnes maid on athir side. King Durstus, rejoing of this concord, callit thir capitannis to ane banquet, within his castell of Berigone. Als sone as thay war entrit, this unmercifull tyrane past to ane towr of the castell; and, incontinent, certane armit men ruschit furth of the chalmeris quhare thay war hid, and slew thir capitannis, and all utheris that enterit in the castell, of thair opinioun. The wiffis and matronis, that followit thair husbandis to this terrible banquet, evil hurt and woundit in debait of thair said husbandis, past out of Berigone with dolorus spraichis, crying vengeans on this cursit tyrane, for violatioun of his faith and promis.

This treason and falset of Durstus was nocht lang unpunist: for al the remanent freindis of thir capitannis assemblit ane army, baith of men and wemen sufficient to beir wappannis, sa haistely, that thay laid ane sege about the castel of Berigone, or Durstus was advertist thairof. Ane certane of them past incontinent to the wallis, and said, thay suld have sone experience, quhidder he was more crafty in treason or fechting. Durstus, disparit of help, come out of the castel, in his wod fury, with ane company of evill arrayit peple; and was sone spulyeit baith of his liffe and crown, the nint yeir of his regne. And, howbeit he was ane vicious tyrane, he was buryit in ane kingly sepulture, amang his forbearis.

Chap. Fifteenth.

Of gret contention amang the Capitanis. Of the orisoun maid be Charon, Capitane of Argyle; and how Erwin, the first of that name, was maid King.

URSTUS, slane in this maner, his sonnis fled in Ireland. Sone eftir, ane convention was maid to cheis the king. The nobillis beand all of ane mind, concludit to suffir nane of Durstus blude to regne above thaim, in adventure that sum of thame suld revenge his slaughter; and, thairfore, thay tuke lang consultation, of quhat linage and blud the king suld be chosin. Sum desirit Ragaon, chiftane of the Ilis, for he conspirit first aganis Durstus; yit, becaus he favourit evill dedy men, he was repellit. Utheris desirit Cormanus, capitane of Lorne. Thus war the tribis devidit in sindry vocis.

After lang contention, Charon, capitane of Argyle, said in this maner: “ Ye may have perfite experiance, wise faderis, be the ci-
“ vill weris of Dowall and Ferquhard, and now more recentlie be
“ the empire of wicket Durstus, how dangerus and unthankfull is
“ to all pepill to have ane cruell tyrane regnand above thaim; for
“ be thay samin weris, this nobil realme, quhilk has bene debatit sa
“ mony yeris with gret manheid, wisidome, and curage, wes neir
“ brocht to finall eversione; for be the samin weris, our nobillis war
“ slane, and our commonis brocht to sa vile servitude, that, gif the
“ samin had continewit, oure name and linage suld have perist in
“ Albione. Quhat miserie sustenit our faderis in Berigone, quhen
“ thay war constrainit, be urgent necessite, to saif thair miserable
“ livis on the fude of thair bowellis! Quhat danger sustenit our
“ King Rewther, evading his ennimes be maist perellus ischeing,
“ quhen his realme was neir lost, and Colane, the vailyeant capitane,
“ slane, onelie for defence of him and his realme! Quhat fury was
“ in thay nobill wemen, that slew thaimself at Berigone, that thay
“ suld nocht leif in servitude of ennimes! Quhat hes brocht our

“ nobillis to sic mesiry, that thay war banist, and socht suple at un-
“ couth realmes? Nocht bot sedition intestine amang thaimself.
“ The Britonis, for al thair riches and chevalrie, micht nevir have
“ maid sic incursionis and heirschippis on our landis and peple, war
“ nocht we maid first ane reddy gait to thaim be our awin dissen-
“ tioun. It is, thairfore, to be eschewit, richt vailyeant men, that
“ this dissentioun, now rising amang you, cum nocht to dammage
“ of your commonweil. Ye have deliverit, now laitlie, the realme
“ of the tiranny of Durstus; ye have sufficientlie revengit the slauch-
“ ter of the nobillis be his deith: now is the time maist ganand to
“ help oure materis. Tine nocht, my gud freindis, the victory be
“ civil dissentioun, that ye have conquest with gret labour. Ye se
“ the pepil glaid of Durstus deith, and desirus to have ane king be
“ your election. Quhil thay ar now at your opinioun, mak ane king
“ that will tak your part: otherwayis, na thing sal be amang yow,
“ bot civil weris, heirschippis, and slauchter baith of nobillis and
“ commonis; and, in the meintime, sum of Durstus freindis sall
“ nocht onlie usurp the crown, bot soll punis yow for his slauchter.”
The nobillis and commonis, seand Charon of sic exellent wisdome,
gif to him power to cheis quhom he thocht best to be king. Than
Charon, that the crown sal remane ay of the same blud, chesit
Ewin, the first of that name, to be king; for Durstus and Ewin war
brethir sonnis. Thus was Ewin crownit in the chair of marbill, at
Berigone. This castell was haldin certane dayis aganis him, be
freindis of Durstus; nochtheles, it was finalie randerit.

This Ewin was the first King of Scottis that socht the aith of fidelite fra his subditis; that is to say, that his nobillis and subditis suld be leil and trew to him. Throw quhilk it come in use, mony yeris eftir, that all the capitaniis of tribis, at thair electioune, constrainit thair subditis to gif thair aithis of fidelite; quhilk rite is yit observit: for the pepill, dwelling in the hie land and Ilis thairof, at electioune of thair capitane, haldis up thair handis to be leil and trew to him; and, als sone as the capitane is chosin, thay past to the nixt mote, and defendis, under pane of deid, that nane of thaim name thair capitane with ony uthir sloggorne, bot with the auld name of that tribe; and, quhen thay heir his name, to bek and discover thair heid, with na les reverence than he war a God. I beleif, thairfore,

that the pepill that dwellis in hie land, or in the Ilis, quhen thair hieest besines occurris, sweris be the fute, or hand, or name of thair capitane, as sum hid divinitie war in the same.

Ewin, to stabil his realme in virtew, commandit the young chil-
dren of his realme to be nurist with skars and hard fude; and to
sleip erar on hard burdis, than on plunis or coddis; and to be
ithandly exercit in swift rinning and wersling, to make thaim the
more abill to debait his realme, quhen time requirit: and ordanit
thaim, to abstene fra all thing that mycht make thaim soft or effemi-
nat. This virtuous prince past throw all the boundis of his realme
for ministracion of justice, and punist criminabill personis with sin-
dry punitioun: some skurgit, and sum he punist to the deith.

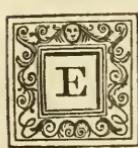
The samyn time, come the ambassatouris of Pichtis, desiring, be
the tenoure of confideratioun, to have support aganis the Britonis,
quhilkis war laity cumming, with gret incursionis, in the Mers, and
purposit to sege thair ciete of Camelon. King Ewin, to support his
confederate freindis, come with ane haisty army aganis the Britonis.
The Scottis and Pichtis, assemblit in this maner, went forthwart with
na les curage, than victory had ben present in thair handis; so far
war thair mindis inflammit to revenge the injuris done to thaim in
the yeris afore. The Britonis, na thing affrayit of thair cuming,
met thain, with na les ferocite, on the tothir sid. Followit, ane
dangerus and cruell battall, foehtin lang time with uncertane victo-
ry; bot, at last, the nicht severit thaim, with richt sorowfull and
doutsum chance of battal. The confederat kingis, seand thair army
brokin, fled, under nicht, to Pentland hillis; and the Britonis, bro-
kin with siclike calamite, and disparit of ony new support, fled, on
the same maner as disconfist pepill, and left thair carage behinde
thaim. Als sone as the confederat pepill war advertist heirof, thay
returnit to the same partis quhare the Britonis war campit afore,
and partit the spulye thairof be custum of armis. Sic thingis done,
King Ewin returnit to Berigon, and rewardit richely the freindis of
thaim that war slané in this battall. Sum of his capitaniis, for thair
provin vassallage, war promovit to publik officis; and othirs reward-
it with riches and gudis. And, fra thens, he coneludit to governe
his realme in tranquillite and peace. He maid certane jugis to abide
in sindry regionis of his realme, to minister justice to the pepil. He

ordanit certane exploratouris to remane in ilk schire, that thay micht serche sornaris, theiffis, and reiffaris, and bring thaim to his lawis. And, that thir exploratouris micht continew in thair office, he dotat thaim with sindry landis. In memory heirof, remanis yit to our days sindry infestmentis of auld baronis, quhais landis war gevin-
be virtuous princis for the samin caus; howbeit thay exerce nocht the effect thairof.

King Ewin biggit ane castel nocht far fra Berigon, callit than Ewin, efter his name; now callit, Dounstafage; and gedit his realme mony yeris efter, to the gret commodite of his common weill; and deceissit, the xix yeir of his regne.

Chap. Sixteenth.

How Gillus, bastard sonne to King Ewin, slew two Sonnis and two Nepotis of Durstus, to make himself King; and how the thrid Nepot, Edeir, eschapti.



FTIR deith of Ewin, his bastard son, Gillus, convenit the nobillis, to bury his fader. And, in the time of his obsequies, com Dothane and Dorgall, two sonnis of Durstus, fast' contending for the crown: for thay war reconself with King Ewin afore his deth. Yit, becaus thay war two twinnis, borne at anis, the law couth nocht decerne, in thay dayis, quhilk of thaim had maist richt to the crown. Thus rais ane shameful debait betwix thir two brethir; ilk ane of thaim set in othir slauchtir.

This Gillus was ane man of subtell ingine; and, seikand occasioune to conquis the crown, ekit the hatrent of thir two brethir be mony slichtis, and armit thame in athir slauchter. At last, be appointment of Gillus, thir two brethir war brocht togidder to be agreit, be avise of freindis, of all debatis, and ane of thaim to be maid king; nochtheles, thay war sa extreme at this conventioun on athir side, that thay partit war freindis than thay met.

Nocht lang eftir, thay war brocht agane be Gillus in ane secreit

chalmer. Eftir lang consultatioun it was concludit sum time to devide the crown betwix thaim, and sum time to mak ane of thaim king. Alwayis Gillus inflammit more thair hatrent than he mesit: and, in the mene time, certane armit men ruschit out of privat chameris, as thay war commandit be Gillus, and slew thaim baith.

Eftir thair slaunchtir, Gillus ran heir and thair, with piteus cryis, schawin how he eschapit ane richt dangerus adventure, quhare the kingis sonnis war laid for his slaunchter, and baith slane; and, incontinent, he commandit his freindis, that stude about him, to have him to sum sicker place; for, gif he fled nocht in time, he suld be tint. His freindis, beleving al thingis trew as he schew, followit him to the castell of Dounstafage. Gillus entering in this wise within the castel, and finding mony of his opinion, arrayit his men in sindry ambuscementis, and commandit to sla all thaim that war repugnant to his desiris. Incontinent he callit the capitanis of the tribis to ane counsall, and began, be lang orisone, to detest the insolence, avarice, and unnatural hatrent of the kingis sonnis, quhilkis, contending for the crown, hes slane thaimself. And on the same maner he detestit the bludy tyranny of Durstus, thair fader; schawand, be mony reasonis, his sonnis unabill for the crown; and gaif thankis, thairfore, to the Goddis, that the centre was delivert of thair tyranny, and the tresson falling on thaimself, quhilk thay devisit for him. Finally, he schew the gret laubour, cure, and diligence, that he tuke baith for the commoun wele, and to have brocht the kingis sonnis to concord; quhilkis as than war baith slane, he nocht knawand be quhat maner, bot narrowly eschaping with his lif. And, forthir, he schew, how his fader, King Ewin, left him governour be his testament, with power to part all his tresoure and guidis amang the nobillis that luffit him during his lif. And, that the commoun weil micht suffer na dammage, he desirit the administration of the realme to be gevin to him, quhill it war clearly discussit, quhay war just heritouris thairto. The capitanis, quhilkis war at this time within the castell, knawand weil his treason, to saif thair liffis, maid him king.

Als sone as Gillus was maid king on this wise, to stabil the realme to him with sickir firmance, he tuk the aithis of his pepil to be his faithful liegis. Sic thingis done, he partit the tresure and guddis

of King Ewin, as he promittit ; and, be that way, he conquest thair benevolence and favour. Nochtheles, the same ambition and avarice that movit him to seik the crown, remanit with him eftir that he was king : for he set his mind, be mony slichtis, to distroy all the linnage and blude of Durstus, that he micht rejose the crown but ony clame of otheris. And becaus he wes advertist, that Dothane, the sonne of Durstus, afore slane, had thre sonnis nurist in the Ile of Man, under the wise Clerkis thairof ; of quhilkis the eldest, Lismorus, had xii yeris in age ; the secund, Cormacus, x yeris ; and the thrid, Edeir, nocht thre yeir of age ; he went the nerrest way to the said Ile, with dissimilat mind, as he wald have brocht thir children to his castell of Dunstafage, to be fosterit thair with otheris nobillis sonnis of the realme. The eldest two, arrayit in thair best avise, met King Gillus ; quhome he maist tenderlie ressavit, and spendit the residew of the nicht in cherising thir barnis, that the gret maister and bischop of the said Ile suld have na suspition of his hid treason. On the morrow, he began to common with the bischop and his clerkis, concerning thair religioun, constitutionis, and lawis. On the thrid day he maid sacrifice to his Goddis, with solempnit ceremonis ; and eftir that he had left certane men behind him to sla the thrid sonne, Edeir, he pullit up salis, and arrivit at Dounstafage, havand with him the two eldest sonnis of the said Dothane, with thair foster-fader and brether ; for, in thay dayis, the pepill had na les affection to thair foster-brether and fader, than to thair awin naturall fader or brether.

The youngest son, Edeir, was in sic infirmite, that na man belevit his lif. Als sone as he began to convales, he was brocht be his nuris to Argyle, quhare he was nurist lang time amang the desert craggis and montanis of that land : for scho suspeckit na gud to cum of his two remanent brether that come in Gillus handis. And, as scho conjecturit, so followit : for the first nicht that Gillus returnit to Dounstafage, he slew baith thir sonnis of Dothane, in the armis of thair foster-fader and brether. And, herand that the thrid son, Edeir, was eschapit, he become sa wod and furius, that he slew the men that he left behind him for his slaughter, at thair returning. And, fra thens, he set his ute besines to persew Edeir to the deith ;

and ceissit nocht, quhill he was suerly advertist of his fleing in Ireland.

Chap. Seventeenth.

How King Gillus was banist. How Cadal, Chiftane of Brigandis, was maid Governour, and slew Gillus in Ireland. And how Ewin the Secund was maid King.



Or lang efter, ane counsall was set at Dounstafage; in the quhilke Gillus schew, be lang orison, that he had deservit na litil favour of his nobillis and commonis for the prudent administratioun of his realme, gevand his ute besines baith to take away al movaris of sedicion, and to saif it fra dissention, and weris intestine, and fra the insolence of ane young prince; and, thairfore, he desirit na suspition to be imput to him, howbeit the sonnis of Dothane war deceissit, as apperit, be the mind of Goddis; for as thay ordanit kingdomes and empire to be, so have thay commandit na wemen nor barnis, bot men only of provin virtew, to have the samin in governance. Forthir, thair was sindry seditius men, and movaris of discord, the quhilkis was necessar to be drawin fra the laif.

Als sone as Gillus had said thir wordis, he enterit, with ane certane of his nobillis, in the castel of Dounstafage. Incontinent, he gart sla all the freindis of Durstus, but ony miseration, quhidder thay war men, wiffis, or barnis. Mony of the noblis that stude about him, was richt astunist for this cruelte; dreidand to be slane on the same maner. Gillus seand thaim affrayit, maid thaim consolatioun; for, gif thay continewit at his opinioune, thay sall leif in gret felicite in times cuming. Efter this, he kest his wicket mind ilk day to more cruelte, that he micht all uteily distroy all thaim that favorit Durstus.

Quhen this bludy tyrane had rouny certane time, with thir, and siclike inhumane cruelteis, unsemand to ane prince; the capitaniis and nobillis of Scotland assemblit ane army of chosin men fra all partis

of the realme, and conspirit aganis him with sic prudence, that this tyrane wist nocht thairof, quhil thay war arrayit afore him at Dounstafage. Gillus than, destitute of all support, and havand nane with him bot sa mony as war outhir haldin aganis thair will, or coft with his money, gat ane fischar bait, and fled in Ireland.

After his fleing, his men war al yoldin to Cadall, chiftane of Brigandis, and baith his castellis, Berigone and Dounstafage, taikin. The nobillis, be gud advisement, that this tyrane, Gillus, suld be perpetually exilit, maid Cadall governour; quhilk kest his extreme labour to persew Gillus to the deith; and come finaly in the Ilis, quhare he fand Edeir, the thrid son of Dothane, quhilk was savit afore fra the treason of Gillus be his nurice, as said is. And becaus the said Edeir was destitute of freindis, (for thay war al slane be Gillus,) he was send to Epiak, the principall ciete of Brigance; to be kept thair, quhil he war of more perfectioun and aige.

Gillus, banist on this wise, complanit to the princis of Ireland, of the hevy injuris done to him be the Scottis; be quhome he was exilit, and spulyeit of his empire and kingdome; throw quhilk na place was left sicker to him in Albion: and promittit, gif the said princis wald restore him to his realme, to gif the Ilis of Scotland fra the empire of Scottis, to be haldin perpetually of the dominion of Ireland. The Ireland princis, glaid of his promis, assemblit ane army to cum in Scotland for the same effect.

Cadall, weill advertist of thair ordinance, returntit to Dounstafage, and tuke consultatioun of the nobillis, how the said Gillus micht be esely resistit. Than was it concludit that Ewin, the secund of that name, sal be king; for he was nepot to King Fynnane, gottin of his bruther, Dowal.

Gillus, seand the see campis stuffit in all partis of Albion to resist his cuming, arrivit in the Ilis; quhare he exercit his cruelte but ony miseratioun or piete; sine tuke with him all the guddis that micht be caryit, and the remanent put in fire. King Ewin, impatient to suffer thir injuris, providit ane flote of galyeonis and schippis, with marineris, weirmen, and other thingis necessar; and send thaim with Cadall, his admirall, in Ireland. Sone efter, Cadall pullit up salis, and, with fortunat windis, arrivit in Ireland. At quhais cum-

ing went sic confluence of pepil to him, that he semit noct only to vincus Gillus, bot all the pepill of Ireland.

Gillus sone efter arrayit his folkis, and, be sound of trumpet, baith the armyis junut, and faucht with gret cruelte on ilk side; quhill, at last, mony of Gillus folkis, wery and mate, specially thay that thocht it odius to fecht aganis thair native pepill, fled fra Gillus, and randerit thaim to Cadall. Than Gillus, disparit of victory, raif of his coit-armour, and fled in a thik wod. Sone efter, certane armit men war send to seik Gillus; and fand him finaly in ane dirk coif of the wod, neir famist of hunger; and incontinent thay slew him, and brocht his heid to Cadall.

This miserabill end maid Gillus, the secund yeir of his regne; confiding ouir mekill in his tyranny and falset.

Chap. Eighteenth.

How Cadall, returnand out of Ireland, lost the maist part of his Army be rage of Sees. And of the consolatioun maid to him be King Ewin.

FTER the deith of Gillus, Cadall was returnand in Albioun, be the Ireland sees, with his victorious army: quhen suddandly rais ane unmerciful storme, and turnit all his glore of victory in desolatioun; for, the irrecoverabill skaithis falling be the said tempest, passit all the profet of his victory. The miserabill moderis and wiffis, knawing thair husbandis and sonnis perist in the sees, convenit to the schippis, with hidduous spraichis and schowtis. Amang othir lamentabill sichtis, Cadall come to land in dolorus array, beirand his handis to the hevin, and waryng fortoun and the Goddis, that distroyit sa mony nobill and vailyeant men, converting thair glore of victory in supreme misery; quhais dolorus havingis war sa petuous, that every man had compassioun thairof.

King Ewin, richt sorrowfull of thir novellis, come, with gret diligence, to Cadall, and said in this maner: “Thou hes brocht to me

“ and my realme, maist vailyeant Cadall, na litill consolatioun ; re-
“ turning with thy victorius army in Albioun, unbrokin be injuris
“ of enmimes. Thou hes vincust my enmimes in ane uncouth regioune,
“ fechtand manly, be displayit baneris, for the eis of my realme and
“ common weill. The tyrane Gillus, pump of every vice, is vineust.
“ Howbeit, his schamefull fleing nicht be no support to him ; quhais
“ heid, sehorne fra his body, is brocht in Albion, to that fine, that
“ he sal nocht want now, quhen he is deid, the schame and disho-
“ nour that he deservit for his tyranny in his lif. My adversaryis
“ ar penitent of thair rebellioun, and brocht to my opinion. Our
“ army, be thy industry, ar saiffit but reproche amang thair un-
“ couth and strongest fais. Thou hes left na thing undone, that
“ pertenit to ane forey campioun. Na caus occurris to reclame aganis
“ fortoun nor the hevinnis ; for, thocht ane part of thy army be
“ perist, be tempest and rage of seis, yit thow, be benevolence and
“ favour of Goddis, ar safft to the hie honour of this realme. Thow
“ arrivit in Ireland nocht but propiciant favour of the Goddis, re-
“ turning with sa riche spulyeis, but ony injuris of enmimes. And,
“ thocht thy enmimes rejose of the mischance falling to thy army,
“ yit na glore may succeed thairof to thaim. For the stait of eirdly
“ creatouris hes this condicoun : eftir prosperite cumis adversite,
“ and eftir adversite cumis prosperite ; proceeding be reward of fa-
“ tal destineis, quhais affect may nocht be movit, nor yit eschewit,
“ be prudence of mortall creatouris. Thow hes, thairfore, na caus
“ to lament, bot erar to have thy adversite in pacience, saiffing the
“ to ane better forton. And sen na creatouris may remeid thir dis-
“ plesouris bot the Goddis, quhilkis governis the empire of men at
“ thair plesair, schaw now ane plesand vult with us ; that thy
“ freindis and enmimes may knew the, be ferme constance, na mair
“ brokin in adversite, than proud in prosperite ; that thy spreit and
“ curage may appere als invincible, as thy body is in battall.”

Cadall heirand this consolatioun of his princee, fenyet al the cheir
he nicht : howbeit, he repentit sair, that this ummerciful tempest,
that consumit sa mony vailyeant men, left him on live, to se thair
mischeif and sorow. Of this calamite falling to Cadall, is sum part
re hersit, be the poete Claudiane, and othir auctouris.

Chap. Nineteenth.

How the Kingis of Scottis and Pichtis war alliat togidder be Marriage. How Balus, King of Orknay, slew himself be desperation. Of the wise counsall givin be King Ewin to Edeir.

 ING Ewin, eftir the slauchter of Gillus, desiring to governe his realme in justice, visit all the boundis thairof, and punist faltouris; and gave to Cadall, for the faithfull service be him done, the town of Epiak, with sindry othir landis and townis of Brigance, in fre regalite.

Nocht lang eftir, King Ewin, accompanit with his nobillis, met Gethus, King of Pichtis, on the borduris of Brigance, and renewit the band of peace with Pichtis. This peace wes roborat be mariage; for King Ewin maryit Siora, dochter of Gethus the Thrid, King of Pichtis. This mariage wes solemnosit be the bischop and preistis of the Ile of Man.

Nocht lang eftir, he wes advertist, that Balus, King of Orknay, wes cumming, with ane flote of schippis, throw Pentland Firth, and maid na litill heirschippis and slauchter in Ros and Cathnes. King Ewin, to meit thir attemptatis, assemblit ane flote of schippis with sic diligence, that Balus wes not advertist thairof, quhill he wes arrivit in sicht. The Orknay men, abasit of his suddand cumming, war constrainit to gif battall: bot thay war sone discomfist; and, be continewall chais, drevin to the seis, quhare ane part of thame eschapit be fischear batis, and the residew vincust and slane. King Balus seing na way to eschape, that he sall nocht cum in his ennimes handis, slew himself. King Ewin, throw this victory, conquest gret favour of his pepill. And, quhen he wes returning hame be the Ireland seis, he arrivit in the mouth of Lochtie, quhare he biggit ane town, callit Inverlochtie; and maid thair ane sicker refuge, in the honour of his Goddis, defending, under pane of deid, that ony criminabill personis be abstrakit out of the samin, nochtwithstanding quhatsumevir criminis be thaim committit. This town wes

eftir ane commun port till all marchandis of France or Spanye, for the incredibill plente of fische swommand in thay seis. Of this town remanis nocht, in our days, saif onlie the ruinus wallis thairof; for it wes evertit be the Danis, as we sall eftir schaw. King Ewin biggit ane othir town on the river of Nes, quhilk is yit namit Innerses; quhair sum time wes gret repair of marchandis, quhilkis come out of Almany to seik riche furringis; as martrikis, bevaris, and siclik skinnis, quhilkis aboundis in that regiou. This town remanis yit, under the auld name, full of marchandise and guddis; howbeit it be oftimes heryit be evil nichltbouris liand thair about.

King Ewin, as ane noble and illuster prince, baith in peace and weir, passit the remanent of his dayis but ony domistik or uncouth weris; and peacefyit the seditionis that rais in the Ilis be marvellus wisdome: for he detestit ay civil weris, als weil quhen he wes in privat as in publik auctorite. Schort time afore his deith, he past to Epiak, to agre the sonnis of Cadall; quhilkis fell in gret contention, efter thair faderis deith, for his riches and guddis: nochtheles, this nobill prince aggreet thaim sone efter his cuming. And efter that he had done the obsequies for Cadall, effering to the gise of thay dayis, he gart rais ane huge stane, gravin to the quik image of Cadall, apon ane hie mot; and commandit the pepill to offer him wine and sens: for oure forebearis war dissavit, als weil as othir pepil, in thair arrouris.

King Ewin, sorrowfull of the deith of Cadall, fell in hevy infirmitie; and was sa disparit of his heill, that he resignit the crown to Edeir, the thrid nepote of King Durstus, for he was just herytour to the crown, as we have schawin. And to that fine, that Edeir suld be ane gud king, he counsalit him, to defende his liegis and subdittis fra all injuris; and to do na man injure; and to geif na man office nor auctorite, that is ennime to justice; and to dres all gret materis be himself, and the small materis to commit to his nobillis; and to governe him ay in sic maner, that he may be worthy to regne above his subdittis; and nevir to move battall les than he micht na othir wayis do; and, quhen it was necessar to have battall, to irk of na chargis pertening to weirly ordinance; and to void him nevir of piete, for that virtew was maist semand in ane prince: and, finaly,

commandit him, above all othir besines, to have his Goddis in reverence, quhais favoure wes ane sover protectioun to all realmis. And quhen he had gevin this counsal to Edeir, he deceissit, the xvii yeir of his regne. Efter quhais deceis, was raisit ane crafty image, maid to his similitude; quhilk was haldin mony yeris efter in gret veneratioun amang the pepill.

And sa endis heir the Seeund Buke.

The Thrid Buke.

HEIR BEGINNIS THE THRID BUKE

OF THE

CRONIKLIS OF SCOTLAND.

Chap. First.

*Of King Edeir ; and how he revengit the heirschippis maid be the
tratoure Bredus in the Ilis.*



WIN deceissit in this maner, Edeir was crownit in the chiar of merbil. And, sone after, he vesit all the boundis of his realme; quahais passaige was the mair plesand to his nobillis, that he was gevin to hunting: for he delitit in no thing more than in chais of wild beistis with houndis and rachis, and specially of wolffis, for thay ar noisum to tame bestiall. This regiouin, throw the cauld humouris thairof, ingeneris wolffis of feirs and cruell nature.

King Edeir brocht the pepill to sic tranquillite, that thay levit mony yeris but ony oppression or injure of nichtbouris. Bot at last, Bredus of the Ilis, cosing to Gillus afore rehersit, arrivit with mony schippis and galyeonis in Argyle, to revenge the slauchter of the said Gillus, and othir his freindis, slane in Ireland. The pepill, im-

pacient to suffer the heirschippis and slauchter be him maid, complaint to King Edeir, quhilk was huntand on the nixt montanis for the time. King Edeir advertist heirof, past, that same nicht, with ane cumpany of chosin men to the sees, quhair the said Bredus was arrivit; and, first, he brint all thair schippis and galyeonis, that thay micht have na refuge to fle in Ireland. On the nixt morrow, King Edeir persewit this Bredus and his complicis with sic manheid, that thay war finaly tane, and put to deith. Sic thingis done, King Edeir past in the Ilis, quhare he punist sindry conspiratouris, that followit the opinioun of Gillus and Bredus.

Chap. Second.

How the Britonis send Ambassatouris to King Edeir, for support aganis Julius Cesar. Of thair orison, and of King Edeiris answer. And how the said Julius was doung out of Albion, be support of Scottis.



Ls sone as Edeir had dantit all invasouris of his realme, he returntit to Dounstafage. In the mene time, come to him the ambassatouris of Cassibilane, King of Britonis, desiring support aganis Julius Cesar, Romane Emperour; quhais army was reddy, with maist awfull ordinance, to cum in Albion. Edeir plesantly ressavit thir ambassatouris, and commandit thaim to propone thair eirandis. Sone efter ane nobill man, namit Androgeus, said in this maner: “I will say na thing before this famous auditoure, in the name of Cassibilane, King of Britonis, maist nobill prince; saif it only that sal pertene baith to the weil of thy realme and liegis. Nature, the wise moder of all creatouris, hes put in this Ile of Albion thre vailyeant pepill; noct to that behuffe, that thay suld leif in seditioun, and invaid othir as beistis, but reasoun; bot to increas togidder under ane benivolence and freindschip, that thay may be the more strang to resist uneouth ennimes quhenevir it sall happen thaim to be invadit. Quha may beleif or traist the realme to stand sicker, quhen the

" Britonis ar distroyit be Romanis? Bot gif sum man, be vane
 " esperance, wald traist the Romanis, quhilkis reiffis sceptouris fra
 " kingis, to be the more plesand and mercifull to yow that youre
 " nichtbouris ar distroyit, thou may have cognossance, be damage
 " of othir pepill, that this opinioun is vane. The Romanis, calland
 " thaimself, be proude insolence, lordis of the warld, quhilkis ar ha-
 " tit with all pepill for thair tirannie, ar determinit to cum haistely in
 " Albion, to subdew the samin to thair empire. Quhat othir thing
 " may we beleif the Romanis soll do, quhen they have subdewit us
 " Britonis, bot, with siclik avarice and tyranny, to reif fra yow Scottis
 " and Pichtis your landis, lawis, and liberteis? Quhat othir thing
 " desire thay, bot to sit down in our landis, castellis, and townis;
 " and outhir to thrill us to maist schamefull servitude, or ellis to
 " banis the maist nobill and vailyeant men amang us? Thair deidis
 " schawis weill thair tyranny: as may be weil provin to us be the
 " rewine of Cartage, sum time the riche ciete, and brocht finaly to
 " nocht, fra it was randerit to Romanis, notwithstanding that it
 " abaid at thair opinion and faith. Forther, gif sa remot and un-
 " couth history may nocht move yow, behald the Gallis, your nicht-
 " bouris, quhilkis, als sone as thay war vineust be Romanis, war
 " thirlit to perpetuall servitude; thair munitionis, and every maner
 " of wappinnis tane fra thaim. It is nocht to be traistit, that Ro-
 " manis soll be more propiciant to us Albianis, gif we be vineust,
 " than thay have bene to otheris afore; for ay the more incressis
 " thair dominioune, thair tyranny is the mair insufferabill. Lat us
 " heirfore resist thir commoun injuris, with all our piassance equale
 " concurring. Best is to resist this violence of Romanis in the be-
 " ginning, in adventure thay grow efter sa strang, quhen thair
 " power is junct togidder, that thay may nocht be resistit. Belt ye
 " thairfore, maist invincibl prince, with thy provin virtew, to sup-
 " port us be thir thy vailyeant pepil. Come, lusty gallanis, array-
 " it in battal aganis our common ennimes. Defend your anciant li-
 " berte, and have ferme esperance of victory; sen our common en-
 " nimes, nocht content of the remanent boundis of the warld, be in-
 " saciabil avarice, and but ony occasion of injuris, intendis to sub-
 " dew this Ile, quhilk is severit fra all pepill, to thair empire. For-

“ thir, quhen ye, be favour of Goddis hes conquest victory, above
 “ mony untellabil comoditeis, ye sall rejose youre liberte, and con-
 “ quest glore immortall baith to yow, and your realme.”

Quhen Androgeus had endit this orison, he was removit aside, quhill the noblis had advisit quhat was to be done. Efter ripe deliberation it was concludit, to send support to Britonis, to resist the commoun danger appering. Than King Edeir maid answer to thir ambassatouris on this wise: “ Ye desire a thing, weil belovit Bri-
 “ tonis, baith honest and proffitabill till our common weill; movand
 “ us to defend this realme, quhilk hes bene sa vailyeantly defendit
 “ be oure progenitouris, fra extreme dangeir thairto appering. The
 “ avarice, riches, chevalry, and pridfull empire of Romanis ar schawin
 “ weill to us be thaim that hes bene subdewit thairto. And, forthir,
 “ we knew weill, gif the Romanis subdew yow Britonis to thair do-
 “ minioum, thay will invaid us nixt, and outhir thrill us to vile ser-
 “ vitude, or ellis expell us out of Albioun. The dammage of Gallis
 “ and Spanyartis, fra quhome our anciant faderis discendit, schewis
 “ daily to us, quhat afflictioum and misery thay sustene that ar sub-
 “ dewit to Romanis. It had bene mair honest to thaim, be my opini-
 “ on, to have fouchtin maist strangly to the deid in defence of
 “ thair liberte, than to have reservit thair miserabill livis to sic
 “ shameful servitude. We knew the Britonis wil nocht tine thair
 “ realme, thair liberte, and lawis, but strang bergane; and, sen our
 “ common weill may suffer na danger sa lang as ye Britonis standis
 “ in sicker firmance, we ar, be degest counsall, profoundly resolvit
 “ to jeoperde our livis and guddis in defence of yow; thinkand bet-
 “ ter to de vailyeantly in that sort, gif sic thingis be plesand to the
 “ Goddis, than to remane at hame, suffering yow, our tender freindis,
 “ to be rest fra your landis and liberteis; and, finaly, to rander oure
 “ native Goddis, wiflis, and barnis, in our ennimes handis. For thir
 “ reasonis, we will caus our army, in maist weirly ordinance, to be
 “ send haistely to London, in support of Cassibilane, King of Bri-
 “ tonis. We will als require Gethus, our confederat brother, the
 “ King of Pichtis, to concur with us, be band of alliance, to the
 “ same affect. And, we beleif, all thay that dwellis in Albioun, be
 “ respect thay have to the common weill, will heir us gladly in that

" behalfe; for the luf we beir unto our native cuntry, enforcis us with
" invincibyl bodyis to assist thairto." The ambassatouris of Britonis,
rasit in esperance of gret felicite be this answere, returnit to
Cassibilane.

Als sone as thir ambassatouris war dispaschit, King Edeir send
two vailyeant men, Cadallane and Dowall, capitanis of Brigandis
and Lorne, with xii chosin men, to London. The cuming of thir
Scottis was the more thankfull to Cassibilane, that he was to fecht
aganis the maist pissant ennime, Julius, dantour of the wrold.

In the mene tyme, Cassibilane was advertist, that Julius was ar-
ravit within his sees, and brocht his army on land; and the pepill
fled that war left to resist his cuming on the see camp; the nobil
men, that vailyeantly resistit, slane; and the Egill, quhilk is the an-
senye of Romanis, proudly displayit on hicht. Be thir novellis, na
litill affray was amang the Britonis. Nochtheles, Cassibilane maid
thame plesand consolation, and exhortit thame vehemently to battall,
for defence of thair realme and liberte, thair wifis, barnis, and na-
tive Goddis; quhilkis ar sa deir to mortall pepill, that but thaim
the lif of man is nothir plesand nor sicker. "Beleif na othir thing,"
said he, "bot sicker victory; sen your ennimes persewis yow be na
" occasioun of injuris, bot only be thair insaciabil avarice." The
Britonis war rasit in gret esperance of victory be cumming of
Scottis and Pichtis; for thay had na litill confidence in thair man-
heid and chevalry. Incontinent, Cassibilane went forthwart with
his hale power aganis the Romanis. And first he send his horsmen,
with sindry wageouris in weir-cartis, to breke the array and ordi-
nance of Romanis. At the first contering, was two smal incursionis
be uncertane victory; bot, at last, baith the armyis junit with thair
hale power. Followit, ane doutsum battall, lang continewing with un-
certane chance: quhill at last, be cuming of Welchmen and Corn-
wall, sa huge nois rais be reird and sowne of bellis, that hang on
thair bardingis, that the ennimes war affrait, and finaly put to flicht.
The Britonis, with Scottis and Pichtis, that come to thair support,
followit on the chace with sic fury, skatterit but array, that thay gat
mair skaith than thay did to thair ennimes. The Romanis kept sic
ordour in thair fleing, and abaid sa fast togidder at thair ansenye,
that thay maid thaim oftymes to renew battall, howbeit thay war

nocht of power to resist. The Britonis, wide skatterit in sindry buschementis, eschapit nocht in thair chace but gret slauchter; quhill, at the last, nicht severit thaim.

Als sone as Julius persavit the chace endit, he gadderit the residew of his folkis togidder, and send all the woundit men to his schippis, with purpos to revenge this outrage on the morrow. Nochtheles herand, on the morrow, that mony of his schippis war sa brokin be violent tempest, that they war not abill to do him proffet; and dreidand that this calamite, fallin to his schippis, suld be na les curage to his ennimes than discomfitour to his awin folkis; he supersedit his intent, quhil he saw ane time mair ganand. Als sone as he had reparit his navy, he brocht all his folkis to new strength, quhare the Britonis micht nocht invaid him; sine pullit up salis within the nicht, and returnit in France; levand behind him ane huge pray of guddis, quhilk micht nocht be turst for laik of schippis. The yeir that Julius come first in Albion, was fra the beginning of the warld, v.m.c.xxxxix yeris; afore the incarnation, lx yeris; in the iv yeir of the empire of King Edeir.

Chap. Third.

How Julius returnit in Britane, and maid it tributar to Romane Empire.



WHEN Cesar was doung out of Albion in this wise, the Albianis, that is to say, Scottis, Pichtis, and Britonis, partit the spulye found in his tentis, be custum of armis, rejoising of this glorious victory; and maid sacrifice to thair Goddis, beleving perpetually to be deliverit baith of the weris of Romanis, and all othir uncouth pepill, in timis cuming. Cadallane and Dowall richely rewardit be Cassibilane, returnit with the army of Scottis; and schew to King Edeir al thingis done in maner afore rehersit. Edeir, rejoising of thir novellis, commandit generall processionis and sacrifice to be maid in the honoure of Goddis. Than followit sa incredibil luf and kindnes betwix the Scottis, Britonis,

and Pichtis, that thay apperit to leif in times cuming in perpetuall peace.

In the yeir following, King Edeir past to Innernes, quhare he, be sindry marchandis, was advertist, that Julius had pecifyit France to his empire, and was makand provision for ane new army to returne in Britane, to revenge the injuris done to him in the yeir afore. Edeir, sone efter, send his ambassatouris to Cassibilane, to schaw the hie dangeris appering to his realme; and promittit to send, gif he plesit, x.ii. chosin men to his support.

Thir ambassatouris, at thair cuming to London, schew thir offeris to Cassibilane. The Britonis, movit be vane arrogance, that the glore of victory suld not be tane fra thaim, refusit to have ony supple of Scottis or Pichtis; and answerit, thay war nocht brocht to sic febilnes, that it was necessar to thaim to have support al time quhen ennimes invadit thaim, and thay had the same pissance instantly be quhilk thay dantit the Romanis in the yeir afore.

King Edeir, and his nobillis, had na litill admiration of sic vane arrogance, to refuse support aganis sa pissant ennimes, the dantaris of the warld; and jugit, thairfore, the nobil realme of Britonis, be proude insolence for ane smal victory, to sustene gret dammage. Quhilk thing was weill sene in the end of thir weris: for Julius returnit sone efter in Britane. At quhais cuming, the pepill, that was left to resist him, affrayit be infinite multitude of schippis, fled to thair best refuge. Nochtheles, Julius was stoutly assailyet be Cassibilane, and thre sindry timis put abak; bot, at last, Cassibilane was discomfist, and all his vailyeant capitaniis tane or slane. Cassibilane, brokin ilk day with irrecoverabill skaithis, and disparit of support, randerit him to Julius; and gaif plegis that his realme sall remane tributar as Romane province. Cassibilane, yoldin in this maner, was commandit to pay yeirly MMM poundis of silver to Romane pepil, in maner of tribute.

Chap. Fourth.

Of sindry message send be Julius to Scottis and Pichtis, and of thair answer. Of Julius Hoif; and of sindry opinionis concerning the first Foundaris thairof.



Ls sone as Julius had dantit the Britonis in this wise, he come to London, quhare he was ressavit with gret reverence and honoure: and, quhen he had tarryit thair certane dayis to refresche his army, he maid provision to pas on the Scottis and Pichtis. The motive of his weris was, becaus the Scottis and Pichtis maid support afore to Britonis, the first time he come in Britane. Yit, afore he maid ony battall aganis thaim, he thocht best to assailye thair mindis be his ambassatouris, quhidder thay list have weir or peace: Peace, gif thay wald be subdewit to Romane empire; Weir, gif thay perversly wald contempne the same. Belive, he send ambassatouris to the two kingis of Scottis and Pichtis, to schaw thaim, that all realmis, be favoure, as apperit, of the Goddis, war subdewit to Romanis. For the Goddis, be sindry revolutionis of time, has gevin the monarchy and empire of the warld to sindry pepil; that is to say, to Africannis, Medis, Persanis, Grekis, and now instantly to Romanis. Few placis ar foundin in the erd quhare the Romane chevalry is unknawin; for thay, be favour of Goddis, hes brocht all realmis and landis under thair empire. Thay have vineust Aphrik, Egypt, Araby, Joury, Perthia, Troy, Thebes, Asia, Macedone, Grece, France, and Spanye; and now laityl, Britane. Al regionis circulit with the occanean sees, ar obeysant to Romane lawis. Na pepil ar in erd that knawis nocht the name of Romanis. Thair is na sicker leving nor honeste, bot only quhare the Romanis lawis hes dominioum; for the senat and pepil of Rome ar the port and sicker refuge of all pepil, quhais glore is, to defend thair subdittis and freindis in justice and faith. For thir causis, it war na litill honour to Scottis and Pichtis to have societe with Romanis, and be callit the confiderat freindis; quhilkis

hes sa mony cletes and realmis brocht to thair provincies, sa mony kingis under thair servitude. This is the command of Cesar and Romane pepill : quhilk suld be fervently desirit, for singular com-modite, baith of Scottis and Pichtis ; les, than thay will be rebelland to the Goddis, quhilkis hes determit to bring the hale warld under Romane empire.

King Edeir, and his noblis, herand this message, understude the colorit dissait of Romanis ; and, thairefore, maid answer, sayng, Thay wald defend thair wifis, children, landis, and liberteis, with al the power thay mycht, to the uter end of thair lif ; and erar to jeoperde thaim to maist dangerus battall, than to leif in servitude. The fame of Romanis was nocht knawin to thaim, bot in sa far as thay war repute, above ingine of man, maist avaricious theiffis, and reiffaris of realmes ; depriving kingis be fenyct causis and slichtis, and subdewing fre pepill, be unjust battall, to servitude. Forthir, gif the Romanis, movit but occasion of injuris, bot only of corruppit malice, hapnit to invade thaim be injust battal ; thay tuke the Goddis, quhilkis ar punissaris of injuris done to innocent pepill, in witnes, to fecht to the deith for defence of thair landis, quhill ane of thaim war left on lif. The ambassatouris, havand sielike answer of the Pichtis, returnit in Britane.

Quhen Julius had herd this answer of Scottis and Pichtis, he send to thaim his secund message, with mair dispitelous chargis than afore; as efter followis : “ The gret Cesar, Romane counsull, per-“ suadis the King Edeir, and yow Scottis, to submit yow to Ro-“ manis, the maist pissant pepill of the warld, in adventure ye bring “ youre self, be imprudent fechting, to uter extermenioun. Take “ exempill, be irrecoverabill scaithis falling to uthir pepill for thair “ vane rebellion. Behald the majeste of Romane pepill ! Consider “ the magnitude of thair name ! Wil ye assailye thaim with chance “ of battall, as the Britonis, your nichtbouris, hes laitly done ; “ quhilkis, be fuliche bergane, ar outhir slane, or tane and brocht “ to perpetuall servitude ? Quhat pissance have ye in respect of “ Romanis, the concreouris of the warld ? Have ye that vane con-“ fidence, that Romanis, the dantouris of all pepill, may be vineust “ be yow, the himmaist pepill thairof ? Or, beleif ye, that the warld “ may be deliverit fra servitude of Romanis be yow ? May your

“ power, quhilkis is nocht in respect of Romanis, restore the empire
“ of sa mony kingis distroyit? Knaw ye nocht, that thair is mony
“ Romane championis, na les active than Cesar, baith in wisdome,
“ manheid, and chevalry, quhais illuster deidis hes decorit all re-
“ gonis quhare the sonne schinis? And yit it is more difficil to
“ vineus Cesar, him allone, than to vineus all the wrold. How is
“ this presumptuous foly cumin to yow? Contempne ye the Goddis,
“ quhilkis, be thair propiciant favour to Romanis, hes ordanit all
“ regionis to be to thaim subdewit? Beleif ye, the Romanis wil be
“ sa irkit be straitnes of your craggis, montanis, or marressis, or be
“ penurite of vittallis, that thay may nocht abide in your regionis?
“ Beleif ye, to be sicker in your said montanis, with your guddis?
“ Ye ar dissavit, gif sic vane confidence be in yow; for sic impedi-
“ mentis sal move na mair the Romanis fra thair purpos, than your
“ rownis war plentuous, and full of every frutis necessar to sustene
“ thair weris. For the Romanis hes experience above ingine of man
“ in chevalry: sa agill of thair bodyis, that thay may dant all thor-
“ tour and difficill gatis; swift of rink, and reddy to every kind of
“ jeoperde; of skars meit and sleip, and accustumat with every dan-
“ ger that may occurre in battall; and sa provident, that thay sall
“ caus vittallis, gif neid beis, to be brocht to thaim out of all re-
“ gonis adjacent: for Cesar hes ane ripe wit for every cais that
“ may occurre. Heirfore, gif ye have ony regarde to your weil,—
“ gif ye be prudent,—eschew warly; that ye, by fuliche and unpru-
“ dent bergane, bring nocht youre self, your wiffis, frendis, and
“ barnis, to irrecoverable dammage. Ye may have now honest con-
“ ditionis of peace afore the victory: quhilk ye sal nocht obtene
“ quhen ye, be force of battall, ar randerit; for than sall ye, for
“ your rebellioun, be reft baith of your landis and honouris; and,
“ finaly, be brocht to sic disperatioun, that ye sall nevir have espe-
“ rance to recover your liberte.”

Als sone as thir wourdis war said, sic fury and nois rais amang the Scottis, for thay war impacient of servitude, that thir ambassatouris had bene maist cruellie slane, war nocht the law of pepill, quhilk our forbearis had ay in maist reverence, saffit thame. Nochtheles, answer wes maid to thaim be Cadallane, in the kingis name, as followis: “ Suppois the Scottis, be sum opinionis, ar repute nocht

" circumspect; bot of fuliche and dull ingine; yit thay ar nocht mo-
 " vit mair be Cesaris plesand and dissaitfull wourdis, than be his
 " awfull minassing, to lose thair landis and liberteis but extreme
 " jeopardie of battall: for thay ar nocht in use to obey tyranis, and
 " revaris of realmes and kingdomes; bot onlie to obey thair native
 " prince. And, thairfore, be degest avisement and counsall, thay
 " ar profoundly resolvit to have na amite nor alliance with Romanis,
 " becaus thair fair wourdis ar nocht but hid treason and falset: and
 " as to thair wrangus and injust weris, thay have the same in plane
 " diffiance; committing thaim in thair just actioun, to the protec-
 " tion of Goddis."

Julius, richt commovit at this answer, maid his ordinance, but tary, to dant thair rebellion. In the mene time, he gatte lettris fra Labienus, his admirall, that Normandis and Piccardis, quhilkis war pecifyit at his departing, war rebellit: attoure, Carnutes hes rasit gret truble in France, and has slane ane man namit Transegerius, quhilk wes chosin be Romanis to be King of France, and to hold the same under the empire of Romanis. Julius, for feir of thir novellis, left his coming in Scotland; and, becaus vittallis war skant in his army, and na apperance of new vittallis to cum in Britane, (for it was the winter season, quhen tempestuus seis sufferis na passage of marchandis,) he gaderit the residew of his army togidder, and returnit in France, levand behind him Britane tributar to his empire, and the Scottis litill abasit of his weris.

This historie of the cumming of Cesar in Britane, and subdewing of it to his empire, nocht far discordant fra the wourdis of his Commentaris, ar drawin be us out of Verimond, Campbell, and othir authouris. Bot it is said in our vulgare croniclis, that Julius come to the Callendare wod, and kest down Camelon, the principall ciete of Pichtis, efter that the samin was randerit to him; sine left behind him, nocht far fra Carron, ane round hous of square stanis, $xxiv$ cubitis of hecht, and xii cubitis of breid, to be ane memory of his cuming to the place. Otheris sayis, he usit this hous as his tent in al his viage, and had it ay tursit with him; and, for that caus, it was callit Julius Hoif. Yit, becaus na famous authouris makkis mention of ony weris led be Julius aganis the Scottis and Pichtis, we

lat thaim pas, and will infer na thing in this werke, bot it only that may not be reprevit. As to this hous of Julius, it is round, as we may yit se, havand na windois bot above, in maner of the anciant tempillis, quhilkis ar yit sene in Rome, with benkis of stane round about within. The pavement hes bene of aselar stanis, and the Egill, quhilk is the Romane ansenye, craftely in it ingravin; bot now, be roust of yeris, is worne away. In it was ane huge stane, standant to the south, on quhilk the Gentilis maid thair sacrifice. Utheris authouris wriftis, this tempill was biggit be Vespasiane, in honour of Claudio, Emperour, and the goddes Victory, as the titill thair-of schew. Bot it was cassin down be Edward, the first King of Ingland of that name; as we wil schaw mair largely heirefter.

Chap. Fifth.

How the tratour Murket and his Complicis war punist. Of the deith of King Edeir. Of the vicious King Ewin the Thrid; and of his lawis and deith.

 ONE after that this diffiance was send to Julius, King Edeir assemblit an earmy frome allb oundis of his realme, to resist the Romanis; for he knew nocth the impediment of Julius weris. And, in the mene time, quhen he was gaderit on this wise, come Murket, quhilk was nepote to Gillus afore rehersit, and arrivit with mony galyeonis in the Ilis; and slew, thair, baith wiffis, barnis, and agit personis, but ony resistance: for all fensabill men, as said is, war drawin out of thay boundis be King Edeir. Als sone as Edeir was advertist thairof, he send Cadallane, capitane of Brigance, with ane band of armit men, in the Ilis; quhilk, sone efter his cuming, brint all the galyeonis and baitis, within the nicht, that pertenit to this Murket, and on the morrow he tuke this Murket, and hinggit him, with his complicis, on the gallous.

King Edeir levit the residew of his dayis but ony uncouth or domistik weris; and deceissit at Dounstafage, the xl.viii yeir of his

regne; the xxvi yeur of the empire of August, Emperour; fra the beginning of the warld, v.m.c.lxxxiii yeris. His body was buryit in Dounstafage; and about his sepulture war rasit mony hie pillaris, in memory of his nobil deidis. This Edeir, for his singulare virtew, micht have bene callit ane happy prince baith levand and deid; war nocht he left his sonne Ewin, the thrid of that name, the maist vi-
cious man in erd, heritoure to the crown.

This Ewin, eftir deith of his fader, was maid king; and was belit be ilk man to have followit the futesteppis of his fader. Nochtheles, fra he was declarit king, he began to burgeon in every kind of vice; so effeminat and soupit in lust, that he past above the common insolence of youth. He had ane hundred concubinis chosin of the nobillest matronis and virginis of his cuntry; and, thocht he wes irkit of so surfet noumer, yit he couth nevir be saciat. And, be persuasioun of limmers and harlottis, quhilkis he maid up of nocht for assistance to his vice, he banist ane certane of his nobillis, and otheris slew be hid waching, to the fine he micht the more esaly waik to his lust; and set his mind to sla or banis, be fenyeyt cauisis, all thaim that haitit his vice. This abhominal tyrane, gevin on this wise to maist terribill cruelteis, envennomit the cuntry vi yeris with na les infelicit than schame, be counsall of certane diffamit creaturis, quhilkis, in hop of proffet, extollit and lovit all his governance. Schortlie, this tyrane become sa avaritius and unthankfull, but ony reverence of the lawis of Goddis or men, that he spul yeit his servitouris of al thair landis, riches, and gudis, that thay conquest under him. And, finalie, he grew in sic blind fury, that he nurist opinle, within hous, theiffis, to mak reiffis and heirschippis in the cuntry but ony punitioun; and tuk ane large part thairof for his assistance. And, beside thir, and mony othir thingis unworthy to be reheirsit, he maid lawis, that his liegis sal have als mony wifflis as thay pleis, effering to thair guddis. Ane othir law he maid, that wifflis of the commonis sal be fre to the nobillis; and the lord of the ground soll have the madinheid of all virginis dwelling on the same. And thocht the first two lawis wes revokit eftir be counsall, yit this last law wes sa plesand to the young nobillis, that it couth nevir be abrogat, quhill the time of King Malcolme Cammore, and his blist quene Sanct Margaret; quhilkis thocht the samin sa injurius baith

to God and man, that thay solistit the nobillis to revoik the said law, takand thairfore ane goldin penny, callit the marchetis: quhilk is yit payit to the lord of the ground, quhen virginis ar to be maryit, in redemption of thair honour and chaistite.

Bot we wil returne to Ewin; quhais horribill vices wes sa drevin in everymannis eir, that the nobillis thocht this effeminat monstoure, that wes gevin to sie cruelte and vices, unworthy to be thair prince; and maid, thairfore, ane haiste conspiratioun aganis him. Ewin, nochtwithstanding this conspiratioun, come with displayit baner to the feild, with ane certane evill arrayit men. Nochtheles, he wes sone vineust and tane. Eftir lang consultation, it wes commandit be the nobillis, that he sal be degradit of his kingdome, and remane in perpetual prison. It wes ordanit als, that Cadallane, during his life, sal be governour. Bot, in the first nicht that he wes put in preson, he wes slane be ane young child; quhilk traistit, becaus he wes odious to the pepill, to get reward for his slauchter. Bot, on the morow, this child wes justifyit in presence of mony pepil.

This end maid the unhappy tyrane, King Ewin; and deceissit, the viii yeir of his regne, but ony airis of his body; the xxxii yeir of the empire of August.

Chap. Sixth.

Of King Metellane. Of the nativite of Crist, our Salvior. Of the gret fouth of Poetis, Oratouris, and Philosophouris, that flurisit in his time.



EFTIR the deith of King Ewin, the nobillis chesit Metellane, quhilk wes nepote to King Edeir, gottin be his brodir Carron, to be king. This Metellane wes the maist humill prince that rang above the Scottis, to his days; havand na uncouth nor domistik weris during his time, and governit all materis, baith at hame and afeld, with gret felicite. He wes ane mercifull prince to his subditis, and richt religious, eftir the rite of thay dayis. He tuk gret labouris to abrogat the cursit

lawis of King Ewin ; nochtheles, he wes so faschit be inopertune solicitation of his nobillis, specially thay that war gevin to thair lust, that he wes constrainit to desist.

About this time come ambassatouris of Romanis to Kymbalyne, King of Britonis ; thankand him of his perseveriance in peace and amite with the senat and pepill of Rome ; and schew to him, that the hail warld wes that time in peace, with more tranquillite than evir wes sene in ony time afore ; and exhortit the Britonis thairefore, be example of othir pepill, to keip peace and concord amang thaim, but occasioune of ony civill or uncouth weris ; for sic doingis pertenit baith to the felicite of August, Empriour, and all othir pepill. Thir same ambassatouris come sone eftir to King Metellane, with sic like exhortatioun. King Metellane heirand, be narratioun of thir ambassatouris, that the farrest pepill of the orient socht amite of the Romanis, and send sindry goldin crownis to August, Emprioure ; he thocht he wald nocht be so unpleasand to contempne the majeste and magnitude of Romane pepill ; and send thairefore, with thir ambassatouris, sindry riche jowellis, to be offerit to August, Emprioure, and othir Romane Goddis in the Capitol. Be this way King Metellane conquest sieker amite of Romanis, quhilk mony yeris eftir indurit. Of this message, send be August to the Britonis, wruttis Strabo, in his buk of geography, callit, The Discriptioun of the Erd ; in quhilk is schawin the situation of Britane, with the maneris of the inhabitantis thairof.

The warld beand thus in peace, Christ, our Salvioure, wes borne of the Virgine Mary, doucher of Anna and Joachim, in Bathelem, cite of Jowry, the same time quhen the scheiphirdis herd the angellis sing, quhen the thre kingis, gedit be the sterne, come to the place quhare our Salvior wes borne. Mony uncouth and strange miraclis apperit in the time of his nativite, as Haly Writ schawis. His nativite fell in the x yeir of the regne of Metellane ; fra the beginning of the realme of Scottis, ccc.xxx yeris ; the XLII yeir of the empire of August ; fra the beginning of the warld, v.m.c.xcix yeris. King Metellane rang mony yeris, in gud peace, doing na man injure ; and sa happy and plesand to his subditis, that his fame wes patent throw all boundis of Albioun. He deceissit, the xxxix yeir

of his regne ; the xiv yeir of Tiberius, Empriour ; fra the nativite of Crist, xxix yeris.

In this time wes in Rome, the prince of Latine poetis, Virgill ; Horace, Ovide, Tullius, Marcus Varro, Strabo, Titus Livius, Sallustius, with mony othir naturall and morall philosophouris. Sic fouth of virtew and letteris multiplyit in thay dayis be felicite of the birth of Crist, the gevar of science and grace ; for apperandlie wes nevir sene sa mony eloquent poetis and profound clerkis levand at anis as wes at that time, quhen God, clothit with nature of man, wes sene in the erd.

Bot we will returne to our historie.

Chap. Seventh.

Of King Caratak, and how he dantit sindry Conspiratouris of his Realme. How the Britonis, rebelland aganis the Romanis, war discomfist ; and of thair Massaige send to the Scottis.

 ETELLANE micht have ben callit maist happy prince that evir rang above the Scottis, war nocht he decessit but airis of his body : throw quhilk the crown come to Caratak, son of the vailyeant Cadallane afore rehersit ; for he wes nepot to Metellane, gottin of his sister Europea. Caratak, eftir his coronatioun, ressavit the huge treasour and riches gaiderit be King Metellane ; and excedit all the pepill in Albion in riches. Nocht lang eftir, he past throw all the boundis of his realme : sine past with ane army in the Ilis ; for the capitane thairof wes rebellit aganis him. Nnochtheles, he peacefyit all truble that rais be his seditioun, and punist the principall movaris thairof to the deith. All thingis peacefyit on this maner, he returnit in Albioun ; sine past to Carrik, quhilk wes the principal ciete of that schire.

Quhil sic materis war dressit in Scotland, deceissit Kymbalyne, King of Britonis ; quhilk, in his youth, wes sa familiar to August, that he held ay the Britonis at the opinion of Romanis. Eftir quhais deith, Guiderius wes maid king. This Guiderius, seing the realme

stabillit to him, thocht hevy, that the Britonis suld leif under servitude of Romanis. Movit heirefore be vane esperance to recover his liberte, he convenit his nobillis to ane counsall, quhare he, be lang orison, complenit, that his realme and liegis war haldin under servitude of Romanis; and nocht onlie the said Romanis held all the strenthis of his cuntry garnist with sodjouris, bot resset his rebellis, and wald nocht restore the pledgis that war gevin to thaim, bot causit thaim to waist thair dayis in captivite and preson. Best is, thairfore, to rebell aganis the Romanis, and suffre na langer thair yoke of servitude. The Britonis, inflammit be thir wordis, concludit, with generall consent, to suffer na langer the servitude of Romanis. Incontinent, thay ruschet to harnes, and slew all the Romanis that war found, or takin utouth thair munitionis or strenthis. In the mene time Guiderius gaderit ane army, to distroy all the garisoun of Romanis, afore ony nois of his rebellion war knawin in Rome. Nochtheles Claudius, Empriour, wes sone advertist thairof, and send two capitanis, namit Aulus Plancius, and Gneus Sentius, iu Britane, with mony Romane legionis, to dant the said rebelliou. Thir capitanis, at thair cumming in Britane, reparit al strenthis and munitionis, quhilkis war than under the Romane obeisance, with new vittallis, sodjouris, and utheris sic lik ordinance, to resist the Britonis; and, that thay suld not be segit within thair strenthis, thay brocht thair army to the planis, to be reddy for battall quhen thair ennimes list invaid thame. Not lang eftir, Guiderius assailyeit the Romanis with arrayit battal; notheles, the victory succedit to the Romanis: the Britonis eschapit, with smal dammage, be cuming of the nicht. Than folowit mony incursionis, with gret slauchter baith of Romanis and Britonis, continewig all the simer. At the cuming of winter, the Romanis held thaim within thair munitionis and tentis.

About this time come certane ambassatouris, fra Guiderius, to Carrantak, King of Scottis, and said in this maner: “ I think it reason-
“ abil, maist illuster prince, that thay that seikis support of strange
“ and uncouth realmis, as we now do, gif na amite nor kindnes be
“ deservit be thaim for gud dedis, to schaw than the thing that thay
“ desire to be honest and proffitabill. For thir reasonis, we Bri-
“ tonis, ambassatouris of King Guiderius, opprest with hevy weiris,

“ and destitute of all supple and help, saif only of yow Scottis and
“ Pichtis, ar cumin humilly to yow. Treuth is, the Romane pepill,
“ quhilk daily invadis us with insufferabil injuris, ar sare ennimes;
“ richt pissant, baith in riches and chevalry, above the estimatioun
“ of men. Nochtheles, thay may be vineust, for Cesar, the vail-
“ yeant Emperoure, be your support and virtew, was doung baith
“ out of our realne and youris, howbeit all France, Spanye, Al-
“ mane, Grece, Asia, Egypt, and Aphrik, obeyit to him: and thir
“ Romanis, that now invadis us, ar bot the refuse of Cesaris army.
“ And, but dout, thay may be vineust; to your gretter honour, gif
“ the Goddis be favourabil, that thay call thaimself, be proude in-
“ solence, Lordis of the Wardl, and yow, the hinnest pepill thair-
“ of. And, to ding thir oure commoun ennimes out of Albion,
“ we desire youre support, sen the samin may nocht be done be oure
“ piissance; the quhilk thing gif ye do, in remembrance of your an-
“ ciant kindnes and amite, supporting us now in oure maist adver-
“ site and dangere, ye sall conques, above youre honest victory, in-
“ terminabill glore and honoure to yow and your posterite: First,
“ becaus ye help us, quhilkis ar nocht persewaris bot only defendantis;
“ for na thing may be sa honest and plesand amang levand creatouris,
“ as defend the actioun of common liberte and native Goddis: Se-
“ cundly, ye sall deliver youre realme and pepill fra hie dangeir
“ thairto appering; for the Romanis, your deidly ennimes, intendis
“ to subdew us, that the way may be the more patent to yow. And
“ sen thir thingis ar manifest to yow, maist vailyeant championis, gif
“ ye have respect to the weil of yourself, or your landis, garnis youre
“ realme with all maner of munitionis aganis the Romanis; quhilk
“ thing may be esaly done, gif ye and Pichtis equaly concur with
“ us aganis our common ennimes. For the samin, as we dare bauld-
“ ly affirme, sall pertene na les to youre common weil than to ouris;
“ for quhen the Romanis hes vineust us in battal, spulyeit us of our
“ guddis, and subdewit oure realme in forme of province, thay will
“ be the more abil to subdew you to thair empire. Now is the time
“ to assailye our ennimes in battall; quhill we have strenth, and
“ quhil we may, be help of othir, be sufficient to withstand thaim.
“ Suthly, gif the Albianis will equaly concur togidder, all of ane
“ mind, thay sall draw als mekill fra the Romanis, as thay have won

“ on ony othir pepill. Heirfore, lat the pißance of Scottis, Britonis,
 “ and Pichtis, equaly concur togider to defend the common li-
 “ berte. Lat us tak our wappinnis at anis, to resist the injure ap-
 “ pering. And thocht we war vinecust, (quhilk God forbeid !) it war
 “ na reproche to us; for than we ar not vincust with ane pepil, bot
 “ with the pißance of the world: and, gif we be victorius, as our
 “ just actioun fermely belevis, the victory sall be na les glore and
 “ proffet to yow than to us, and ye sal be perpetually estemit with
 “ all pepill.”

Chap. Eighth.

Of Caratakis answer. How the Britonis solistit Normanis and Pictis to rebellion. And how the said Britonis war discomfist be Romanis, and thair King slane.

 ARATAK maid ansuer to this message in maner follow-
 ing: “ Had ye Britenis nocht refusit oure supporte,
 “ freely offerit to yow, quhen Julius, the Romane coun-
 “ sull, invadit yow with injust battall, it suld nocht have
 “ bene necessar to yow this day to seik support at us, nor yit suld it
 “ have ben necessar to us to rais our army aganis sa pißant ennimes;
 “ for than, be juning of al our pißance togidder, we nicht esaly
 “ have vincust thaim, and bene deliverit of all dredoure, rejoising
 “ oure rowmis in Albion with perpetuall rest. Yit better is, as thay
 “ say, lait than nevir thrif. It is nocht now to be devisit, how we
 “ nicht have dantit the Romanis in time bigane; bot how we may
 “ eschew the hie dangeir now appering. Ye complane, that ye ar
 “ unjustly invadit be ane riche pepil, richt desirus to have dominion,
 “ and to reif othir mennis guddis. Ye have bene subdewit to thaim
 “ mony yeris, liffand under thair servitude, in your awin defalt; for
 “ ye ar devidit amang yourself, be seditionis intestine: and, sa lang
 “ as ye stand so, your common weill sall never be fre. Forthir,
 “ your munitionis and strenthis ar stuffit with Romane sodjouris,

“ and your planis ar garnist with thair tentis. We heir als, that
“ Claudius Cesar and Vaspasiane ar advertist of your instant rebel-
“ lioun, and reddy to cum, with mony legionis of pepil, in your
“ realme. I think, thairefore, sen ye ar brokin with sa many cala-
“ miteis and battallis, howbeit the haill power of Albion war con-
“ currant with yow, ye cannot resist sa pissant ennimes for this time;
“ les than the Goddis war contrarius to thaim. Best is, for thir
“ causis, to meis all seditionis amang youreself, superseding youre
“ weris for ane seaseone; and set your laubour, with maist crafty in-
“ gine, to transport this dangerus battall on France. To wirk this
“ prudently, ye man solist the Normandis, Picardis, Bartaneris, Al-
“ manis, with all uthir pepill liand on the bordour of France, to re-
“ bell aganis Romanis, in esperance to recover thair liberte; and
“ promit, gif thay will assist thairto, to support thaim with schippis,
“ weirmen, gold, and uthir necessaris pertenand to thair weris. Ye
“ man eik be confiderat with all pepill that hatis the Romanis; and,
“ gif ye do this weill, ye sall eschew this battall, that the Romanis
“ intendis to move on yow, and convert it on France. Thus sall
“ baith ye and we be deliverit of all fere of ennimes, and leif the
“ remanent of this yeir in quiete; and the mair abill the nixt yeir
“ for battall. And, gif thair be na way to eschew this maist dan-
“ gerus battall, than think I best to assemble all the pepill of Al-
“ bion togidder, to fecht with honest battall to the deith, but ony
“ respect to our lif, bot allanerly to our glore and honour; for na
“ pepil may de mair honestly, than fechtand for thair liberte and
“ native Goddis aganis the lordis of the warlid.” The ambassatouris
of Britonis, rasit in esperance of gud fortoun be this answer, returnit
to Guiderius in Britane.

Quhen Guiderius had hard this wise counsall of Caratak, he send
his ambassatouris to persuaid the Normandis, Picardis, Bartaneris,
and all othir pepill of the see costis, to rebell aganis the Romanis;
saying, na thing was more abhominabill to fre pepill, than contrar
thair native lawis, to be subdewit to Romanis; quhilkis war ane
proude and cruel pepill, daily exercising, be thair tyranny, sa many
new and intollerabill conditionis of servitude on the plegis of sub-
dewit realmis, that na maner of deith suld be refusit to recover thair
liberte; but quhilk, the lif of man is nocht. For thir reasonis, na

thing was sa gud, as the pepill, throw all boundis of France, to rebell aganis Romanis, and sla thair sodjouris in all partis quhare they might be apprehendit. And, to gif the more hortatioun thairto, they schaw, how all kingis of Albion sal assist to thaim, and support thaim with money, vittallis, schippis, weirnen, and all othir necessaris refering thairto: and scheu, how the Romanis, quhilkis war laitly cuming in Britane, hais tint all thair horsmen, and the remenant brokin with sic calamite, that they ar outhir chasit to the see, or ellis to thair strenthis. The cieteyouris of Tervana, in Flanderis, to quhom thir ambassatouris first come, richt desirus to recover thair liberte, refusit nocth thir offeris: bot the charge was so hie, that they couth nocth answer quhill they war advistit with thair nichtbouris: and prayit thaim to keip thair peticionis secrete; for, gif the samin war divulgal, al thair plegis, that war gevin afore to the Romanis, sall be cruelly tormentit: and, to remove all suspition, prayit thaim, to remane in Calice quhill they war resolvit in this mater. Thus abaid thir ambassatouris of Britane certane dayis in Calice, abiding thair answer.

In the mene time Guiderius was advertist, that Aulus Plaucius had rasit his camp, and distroyit al the landis with fire and swerd that stud at his opinion. Guiderius, seand na way to eschew his ennimes, gaderit all his pepill togidder in arrayit battall, and closit thaim with wanis and cartis on every side, except the part fornens thair ennimes, to that fine, that nane of thaim sal have esperance to fle; sine put the wiffis in the said wanis and cartis, to exhort thair husbandis to fecht vailyeantly for thair liffis and landis. On the other side, Plaucius devidit his army in thre battallis; and, be blast of trumpet, come sa fersly on the Britonis, that they had na space to schute thair arrowis. Than the Britonis flang thair bowis fra thaim, and faucht with thair swerdis. The wiffis exhortit thaim with loude cryis to deliver thaim of Romane servitude. This battall was cruelly fochtin; bot, at last, the Britonis war discomfist, and Guiderius, thair king, slane. Mony of all the wemen war smorit in the cartis, be preis of thaim that fled. The chais ceissit nocth quhill the Britonis war drevin to the rever of Garieme, vi milis fra the place quhare the feild was discomfist. This victory was nocth richt

plesand to Romanis, for Gneus Sencius, with mony othir Romane nobillis, war slane.

Als sone as this unhappy battall was schawin in France, it maid all the pepill thairof disparit to recover thair liberte ; and so the ambassatouris quhilkis war send, as said is, in France, returntit but ony expedition of thair message.

This history, as we have wruttin, is colleekit out of Godofryde, writar of Inglis historyis ; and out of Veramond, Johne Campbell, Cornelius Tacitus, and Eutropius.

Chap. Ninth.

How Claudius Emprioure, come in Britane, and subdewit Orknay to his Empire. Of Sanct Peteris first cuming in Italy. And of the assumptioun of the gloriou Virginie Mary.

 CHORT time efter, Claudius, Empriour, and Vespasiane, ane man of singulare virtew, arrivit, with mony legionis of pepill, in Britane. The Britonis herand his cuming war gretumly affrayit : nochtheless, be publik advise-
ment, thay send oratouris to excuse thaim, saying, the offence com-
mittit aganis the Romanis was done only be evil counsall ; and thay wald, thairefore, not only repare all injuris to thaim done, bot be
obeisant to the empire of Romanis and thair lawis in times cuming.
Claudius than commandit thaim to geif plegis for observation thair-
of ; sine commandit all the princes and lordis of Britane to cum
aflore him aganis ane certane day, with intimatioun, gif thay did
nocht, he suld persew thaim to the deith. The Britonis knawing
na refuge, gaif plegis, and come to London as he desirit. At last,
quhen Claudius had demandit thaim, quhy thay brak thair faith,
thay fell on kneis, confessand thair offence, and prayit him, sen thay
war suffieiently punist be the Goddis, to ressave thaim againe to his
mercy, and saif thair liffis, under quhat condition or servitude he
plesit ; and maid solempne aithis never to rebell in times cuming,

and, gif thay falyeit, al vengeance in erd to fal on thaim, and thair posterite. Sum of the Romanis gave counsall to Claudius, to punis thair rebellioun, and to sla the principal movaris thairof, othirwayis the Britonis nicht nocht be haldin at his opinion. Nochthieles, Vespasiane persuadit him, be mony reasonis, to mercy ; for ane prince but mercy may well be dred, bot nevir luffit. Als, na thing perte-
nit sa mckill to majeste of Romane pepil as to have mercy on thair subdittis, and defend thaim fra al injure of ennimes ; for, be that way, the empire of Romanis was ekit, and suld indure be the samin way to the end of the warlde. Thir wordis of Vespasian mesit the empriour in sic maner, that he chesit erar to be namit ane merciful prince, than ane vengeabil tyrane. In the mene time, he began to treit of materis concerning the administratioun of Britonis : and, first, he maid Arviragus king of Britonis, that the crown sall remane in the native blude ; for he was Prince of Walis, and bruthir to Guiderius, afore slane. He ordanit Plautius to be governour as afore, and M. Trebellius to be thesaurar ; and commandit thaim, to stuf all the strenthis and townis of Britane with strang gareson of weirmen ; to minister justice be the lawis ; to hald the Britonis in peace, and defend thaim fra all injure of pepill liand thaim about, specially fra the Scottis and Pichtis, quhilikis wer ane pepill full of chevalry, and impacent of servitude : and to seik na occasion of weir aganis thaim ; and, gif it war necessar to haif battal, to haif than stout wachis, baith at hame and afeild ; havand na les respect to keip the Britonis at the opinion of Romanis, than to eik thair empire : and, finaly, he exhortit the nobillis of Britane, to remember the affliction falling to thaim be thair rebellion, and to keip thair faith in time cuming, for the weill of thaimself, thair barnis, and gudis. Sic thingis done, the Britonis returnit hame ; and gaif thankis to Vespasiane, for his humanite schawin to thaim.

Efter this, Claudius Cesar, desiring sum triumphe of honouris afore his returning to Rome, thocht expedient to vesy Orknay, the last Ilis within the occiane sees. The motive of his weris aganis thaim was, becaus thay supportit the Albianis in the battall afore rehersit aganis the Romanis. Schort time efter, Claudius, providit with all necessaris, come out of Britane with prosper windis, and passit throw Pentland Firth to Orknay, quhare he was neir perist.

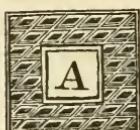
Nane of the Orknay men was sene at his first cuming; for, quhen thay saw sa huge flote of schippis arrivit within thair sees, thay hid thaim in cavernis. Claudius, findand this Ile desert, went to Kirkwall, and send his seurriouris to spy the nature of the cuntry, and pepil thairof; and, fra he was advertist that the same was full of every bestiall and foulis necessar to sustene the lif of man, he thocht the same sufficient eneuch to decore his triumphhe. On the morrow, herand that Ganus, King of Orknay, was in ane castell noct h̄ milis fra his army, he send ane company of weirmen to sege the said castell. And quhen thir men war passand forthwart to the same effect, thay persavit sindry rude pepil of that cuntry cummand fra the covis, quhare thay war hid all the nicht, and passing to the montanis. Thir rude pepill war astonischt be sicht of Romanis: nochtheles, seand na refuge, thay facht cruelly ane quhile; bot, at last, thay war all slane or tane. The Romanis, rejoising of this victory, laid ane sege to the castel. At last, quhen King Ganus had debeitit lang time, and saw na rescours, he randrit the castell, and was brocht presoner, with his wiffe and children, to Claudius. Than Claudius pullit up salis, and arrivit at Calice; quhare he abaid certane time, quhill his army wer refreschit; sine returnit to Rome: and led Ganus, with his wif, barnis, and the plegis of Britonis, in his triumphe.

This history of Claudius cumming in Britane is drawin out of Suetonius, Eutropius, Beda, Campbel, and Cornelius Ireland.

The same time, Sanct Peter, the Appostill, come out of Antiochia to Italy, efter that he had ereckit mony kirkis in Asia; quhare he, prechand the evangell of Crist, began to found the Cristen faith. About this time, was the gloriouſ and blisſit Vergine Mary, Moder of God, tane with body and saule to hevin: in the v yeir of the empire of Claudius; efter the incarnatioun, XLVII yeris.

Chap. Tenth.

How sindry Princis of Britane, conspirand aganis Arviragus, wer discomfist. How the confiderat Kingis come to support thir Princis of Britane aganis the Romanis.



Ls sone as Arviragus was maid king on this maner, he repudiat his lauchfull quene Voada, sister to Caratak, and put hir in preison, efter that scho had borne to him two douchteris, and ane sonne; and, in the mene time, he maryit ane Romane lady namit Genissa, be persuasioun of Plautius, trasting, gif it hapnit the said Arviragus to rebell aganis the Romanis, the affinitate ceissing betwix him and Caratak, he sall get na support of Scottis. Sindry princis of Britane war richt commovit, that Arviragus had repudiat his quene in this maner; and persuadit him, be mony reasonis, to denude him of the Romane lady, and to adheir to his lauchfull wiffe, quhilk had bene with him mony yeris, and borne to him plesand childrin, to quhome na thing in erd nicht be comparit. Attour thay schew, quhat proffet nicht be had of Scottis, gif his ennimes hapnit sum time to invaid his realme; and prait him to eschew, that he, be rage of lust, and dissaitful wordis of Romanis, drew nocth himself, and the Britonis, fra amite of thair auld confiderat freindis. Nochtheles, quhen thay had assailyit him in vane with thir and sielik wordis, thay fand nocth bot his reason blindit with new lust, but ony sicht to wisdome or honour. In the nicht following, thay brak the preison quhare Voada was incacerat, and brocht hir and hir barnis with thaim in Walis. Than Arviragus wrait to the gret princis of his realme, schewing, that his freindis, the lordis of Walis, in quhom he maist confidit, tuke indignatioun that he had preferrit ane Romane lady to his first wiffe; as it had bene unleifful to him to have sindry wiffis at his pleseir; howbeit nouthir the lawis, nor the consuetude of Britane, maid dirogation thairto: afferming, eik, the said mariage was for na rage of lust, bot only that Britonis and Romanis nicht incres togidder,

under ane blude and amite. Forthir, he desirit thaim, gif the lordis of Walis hapnit to conspire aganis him, that thay defend thair faith promittit to Romanis. It was answerit be thaim, that it was unleiffull to him ony maner of way to prefer ane new wif to his first wif ; and, for that caus, thay war nocht content of the injuris done to hir.

Arviragus, knawing quhat mind thir nobillis bure to him, thoeht best to invaid thaim but more tary ; and, be advise of Plaucius, he assemblit ane army of Romanis and Britonis, and went in Walis. The princis of Walis, na thing affrayit of his cuming, met him with ane gret power ; nochtheles thay war vineust, and put to flicht. On the morrow, Arviragus and Plaucius was advertist, that Darby, Longecastell, York, and sindry othir schiris war rebellit. Dredand, thairfore, that thair ennimes suld invaid the eist partis of Britane, thay returnit to London. Fra thens, Plaucius had litil confidence in the Britonis, and send in France for two new legionis to support his army ; sine garnist all his strenthis with new wageouris and vittallis.

Sic thingis done be Plaucius, the princis of Walis convenit at Schrewisbery, to take consultatioun in this maist dangerus mater. At last it was concludit, that all pepil under thair obeisance sal convene, ane certane day and place, to expell the Romanis out of Britane, or ellis al at anis to de. Be the same counsal was decernit, that oratouris soll pas to the lordis of Carlyll, Kendell, and Durame, to solist thaim to the samin effect. In the hervest following, thir princis foresaid convenit at Schrewisbery ; quhare thay, be lang regrait of Romane injuris, lamentit hevely the fekilnes of Arviragus, quhilk had more desire to be servand to Romanis than king of Britonis. Nochtwithstanding, with haill mind and pissance, thay concludit to recover thair anciant honouris and liberte. Bot than began na litil contention quha suld be capitane of the army ; for few of thaim wald geif place to othir. Than Comus, prince of Walis, said in this maner : “ We may sone gadder, maist vailyeant men, “ ane greter army of our pepil and freindis than may be esaly re-“ sistit, sa that every thing war governit be craft of chevalry ; for “ thairin standis al victory and glore of battall. Nochtheles, sedi-“ tion, discord, and ambitioune of honouris, ar so contrarius thairto,

" that quhare thay sprout, nouthir ordoure nor craft of chevalry
 " may have place, nor yit victory may be had of ennimes. Thair-
 " fore, all ambition is to be drawin away, and all dissentionis to be
 " expirit; and, finaly, ane man to be chosin, to quhorne the rema-
 " nent pepill soll be obeisant; be quhais auctorite this battall soll
 " be led, and, gif we intend to have victory, to be obeisant thairo.
 " And, because we ar nere equale to othir in power, thairfore it is
 " best to send oratouris to Caratak, King of Scottis, quhilk is maist
 " cruell ennime to Romanis, and desire him concur with us to re-
 " venge the oppressioun done to his sister Voada, and to defend
 " his nevo, quhorne the Romanis intendis to defraude of the crown
 " of Britonis; and to exhort him to take the governance thairof,
 " quhill his nevo war of perfite aige: and thay to obey him in all
 " chargis as occurrit; for the more affection that he have to his sis-
 " ter and nevo, the more esaly may this mater be solistit."

Sone efter, oratouris wer send to Caratak, and schew him all this
 mater at lenth, as it is afore rehersit. Caratak answerit, that he was
 more grevit that Arviragus had maryit ane Romane lady, in dis-
 truction of himself and his realme, than of ony injuris done to his
 sister or nevo; knawing weil, how Romanis, be vane fallowschip and
 gile, subdewis unprudent kingis to thair dominion. Nochtheles, he
 proniittit to cum, agane the spring of the yeir, to support thame
 with his army, as he thocht maist expedient. The oratouris, de-
 peschit in this maner, returnit to Schrewisbery.

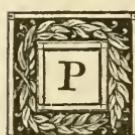
At the spring of the yeir, as said is, thir foresaid princes of Bri-
 tane, be generall edict, assemblit all men that micht beir wappannis,
 to ane certane day, at York, to defende thair common liberte, to the
 nowmer of LXXX.M men; and, at the said day, come Caratak and
 Congestus, the confederat kingis of Scottis and Pichtis; quhais cum-
 ing maid the Britonis sa rejosit, that thay belevit na thing bot sicker
 victory. Incontinent, as was afore devisit, Caratak was maid gene-
 ral capitane of all this army; and he maid under him sindry othir
 capitaniis, quhare thay war found of maist wisdome and manheid;
 and exhortit the pepil to be obeidient thairo, with sic respect to
 thair singulare and commoun weill, that thay suffer nocht thaimself
 to be randerit to ennimes: and sumtime he prayit thaim, to remem-

ber the manheid of thair elderis, quhilikis dang the vailleant Julius out of Albion.

The Albianis, inflammit to battal be this hortation, come forthwart weill arrayit on thair ennimes. Als sone as Plautius and Arviragus war advertist thairof, thay arrayit thair folkis. Nochthelles, thay thocht it unganand to geif hasty battall, knawing weil thair ennimes ful of ire and hatrent; and, thairfore, concludit to irk thaim erar with lang tary, walking, labour, and penurite of vittallis, than to jeoperde aganis sa huge multitude of peple, all enragit aganis thaim at anis, quhilk culd nocht be vineust but untellabil murdir. The Albianis, be delayng of battall, come to sic point, that thay might nocht, for multitude of peple, be haldin togidder: for sic derth and hunger rais in thair army, that sindry of thame depertit fra thair camp to seik vittallis; of quhom ane certane wer takin and brocht to Plaucius, and schew the Britonis, be hunger, walking, and truble, neir discomfist. Plaucius, on the morow, maid his armie ready for battall. Caratak weil advertist thairof, arrayit his folkis, and, be sound of trumpat, junit. Followit ane scharp battal, and fochtin continewalie with uncertane victory, quhill the nicht severit thaim on ilk side. Plaucius, on the morow, seing that he might nocht renew his army, returnit to London, eftir that the maist part of his horsmen were tint. Caratak, brokin in the saminer, come with the remanent of his army to York: and commandit al his folkis to pas hame, quhil thay wer new warnit.

Chap. Eleventh.

Of the message send to Caratak be Plaucius, and of his answer. Of the deith of Genissa. And how Vespasian was send in Britane to dant the Britonis.



LAUCIUS, eftir this unhappy battal, send his oratouris to Caratak, and schew that he had gret admiration that Caratak, but ony occasioun of injuris, invadit the landis of Romanis, and supportit thair ennimes; havand na remembrance of the gret humaniteis done to him be Claudius, Empriour, quhen the said Claudius, with smal difficulte, micht have subdewit his realme and pepil: howbeit he abstenisit, and exeritis his wraith on Orknay. And, thairfore, desirit him to repair al injuris be him done, and obstene thairfra in times cuming; or ellis he suld be reput ennime to Romanis. It wes answerd be Caratak, that it wes not to have admiratioun thocht he defendit his nepote Guiderius undefraudit of his just heritage and kingdome. And to the remanent pointis he answerit, It wes for na favour that Claudius invadit nocth the realme of Scottis, bot onlie becaus he knew the samin nocth possible to be conquest but extreme jeoperde and chance of battal: and, for that caus, he past on the rude and unarmit pepill of Orknay, quhilkis micht be sone vincust; to that fine, that he, the gloriis and vailyeant Empriour, amang febil creaturis, micht have ane fenyet glore of triumphhe. For thir causis, the Romanis suld redres baith the new and auld injuris done to Scottis and Pichtis, and depart hastely out of Albion, with thair folkis; utherwayis nocth wes to be traistit, bot Scottis, Pichtis, and Britonis, quhom thay held in maist contemption, suld be thair perpetuall ennimes, for defence of thair liberte, and native Goddis.

Plaucius, be this answer, tuk hie indignation; and thocht it richt unworthy that ane pepill nothir pissant in riches nor chevalry, so pertlie sal contempne the power of Romanis: and maid, thairfore,

his aith to revenge this proud contemption done be Caratak. Mony othir Romanis maid thair aithis in that samin maner.

Quhen Arviragus had considerit the gret constance of Caratak in this maner, he tuke ferme beleif, gif his pissance wer concurrent with the remanent Albianis, that Romanis micht be esalie doung out of Albion. Desiring thairfore to recover his anciant honouris and liberte, he left Plaucius, and past, with al that war of his opinion, to the remanent princis of Britonis, quhilkis war convenit for the time at Schrewisbery; quhare he was plesantly ressavit. Genissa, the Romane lady, quhome Arviragus tuke in place of his lauchfull wif, herand the rebellion of Arviragus, tuke sic displesir, that scho partit with child, and sone after deceissit. Than Aulus Plaucius, ilk day havand les confidence in Britonis, becaus thair faith was sa oft brokin; began to garnis the munitionis, strenthis, and townis of Romanis with new wageouris and vittallis; and send letteris with diligence to Claudius, complening the falset of Britonis, quhilkis micht na way be haldin under the Romane lawis, bot maid new rebellion, and hes brocht with thaim the Scottis and Pichtis, the maist cruell and bludy pepill in erd: and thairfore the battal sal not be led, in times cuming, only aganis the Britonis, bot erar aganis all the Albianis: For thir reasonis gud war to send hasty support to Romanis, that thay be nocht schamefully doung out of Britane. Als sone as Claudius rede thir letteris, he send Vespasian with mony Romane legionis in Britane.

Vespasian, after his cumming, seing the dangerus cais the Romanis war intil, maid him to bring all materis to beter estait. And first he callit afore him the said Plaucius, to se gif the dammage falling to Romanis in this battal, succedit be his imprudence or sleuth. Plaucius, for his purgation, maid few wordis; bot sufferit his dedis to schaw thaim self: for every thing, that pertenit to craft of chevalry, war sa wisly be him providit, that the same was in sic admiration to Vespasian, that he fernly beleivit the said Plaucius was sufficient, howbeit na othir power had cumin to him, to have subdewit the Albianis to Romane empire.

Chap. Twelfth.

*How the thre Kingis of Albion, movand weir aganis Vespasian,
wer discomfist. How Vespasian ressavit Arviragus to his mercy,
and maid his Lands tributar to Romane Empire.*



ESPASIAN, sone efter, maid his ordinance to pas on Arviragus and the Britonis, for thair rebellion. Arviragus advertist thairof, convenit his noblis at York, quhare the Scottis and Pichtis war devisit to cum. In this counsall, was not devisit, as afore, that every man sufficient to beir armoure, suld convene to expel the Romanis out of Albion; bot ane certane of every schire allanerly, that thair vittallis micht be the mair esaly providit. Thus war the Britonis, at the day affixit, gaderit to the nowmer of **LXV.M** chosin men, and convenit at York, with two monethis vittallis, abiding the cuming of the confederat kingis; quhilkis come, sone efter, with **LX.M** men. The Albianis assemblit togidder in this maner, devidit thaim in sindry battallis, with capitanis to hald thaim in gud array. On the tothir side, Vespasian rasit his tentis, and was convoyit be certane treasonabill Britonis, quhare the Albianis war. Followit sone, ane dangerus and terribil battal; for the Albianis stude at ane strenth beside ane mos, nocht twelve milis fra York. Alway the Romanis that faucht in the richt wing war neir discomfist; nochtheless, Vespasian supportit thaim with ane new legion: be quhais cuming thair curage was sa rasit, that, notwithstanding thair hevy woundis, thay renewit battal; and quhen thay war persit throw the bodyis, thay ceissit not quhill thay slew thair ennimes fornens thaim. Otheris faucht sa cruelly, that quhen thair hand and swerd was doung away, thay fell above thair ennimes, and rave thaim with thair teith. Nnochtheless, the fatal necessite of victory, gevin be devine weirdis to Romanis, micht not be vincust that day be multitude, manheid, nor lang perseverance in battal; be repugnance of the Goddis, quhilkis had determit to

subdew all realmis to Romanis : for the Albianis, howbeit thay left na thing undone that mycht pertene to vailyeant campionis, war finaly discomfist. Arviragus, opprest with hevy dolour, for slauchter of sa mony nobil campionis, wald have slane himself; bot he was stoppit be his friendis, in esperance of better fortoune. Caratak, saiffit with ane few nowmer of pepil, went to Brigance. Illithara, King of Pichtis, desiring not to leif efter the slauchter of his dere freindis, raif of his coit armour, and was slane sone efter, unknawin quhat he was.

The Britonis, efter this unhappy battall, send ane herald to Vespasian, desiring peace ; and schew sa huge calamite falling to thaim be ire of Goddis, that of LXV.M Britonis, war left only VI.C men on live, and war sa punist, that thay mycht be sufficient exemple to schaw quhat vengeance and sorow cumis to all pepil, for violation of thair faith and promis. Vespasian answerit, he wald heir na condicion of peace, quhill Arviragus wer brocht to his presence. Arviragus, seand na refuge, comperit in his humly maner ; quhilk thing movit Vespasian to gret reuth, seing, be chance of fortoune, that he, quhilk was sa provit that day at morow, was than sa destitute of freindis, that he desirit mercy at his ennimes. Incontinent Arviragus fel on kneis, saying, the Goddis had tane sa rigorun punition on him and his pepil, that he covet not to leif above so hie calamite. And thairfore he desirit nocht bot grace to his son and wif, quhilkis he afore had wrangusly exilit but ony falt. Vespasian seing his dolorus estait, had sic compassion, that he mycht not retene fra teris ; nochtheless, he tuke counsal how he suld behaif him in this mater. Sum gaif counsal, that Arviragus suld be send, with his wif, children, and guddis, to Rome, as lauchful pray, to abide the judgement of Romane senatouris ; to be exemplil to all pepill, quhat frute procedis of rebellion aganis the Romanis. Otheris, havand sicht to chance of fortoune, counsulit him to have reuth, and not to travel the said Arviragus to Rome, sen he was not thair lauchful pray, bot cuming under assurance of Romanis ; quhais empire was eikit be inviolat faith, and be no slichtis on thair subdittis. Vespasian, be this counsal, tuke Arviragus to his mercy, and continewit him in his auctorite ; syne commandit all the strenthis of the townis of Britane, quhilkis afore war stuffit aganis the Romanis, to

be randerit to his capitaniis; and plegis to be gevin for observation thairof. The principal man that was gevin at this time in plege, wes Guiderius, Prince of Britane, and sonne of Arviragus; quhilk passand with Vespasian to Rome, fell in gret infirmite, and deceissit. Quhen Vespasian had dantit the Britonis on this wise, he distroyit al thair awin lawis, and brocht on thaim the lawis of Romanis: and commandit that na man sal haif commission of blude within Britane, bot Plaucius, or his deputis; be quhom certane men war limit to minister justice on the Romane maner. The fame of thir lawis causit al the remanent Britonis to be yoldin to Vespasian, and gave him mony riche jewellis, in satisfaction of thair offence.

Chap. Thirteenth.

How Vespasiane wan the Towne of Camelon, and discomfist Caratak. Of his Message send to Caratak, and of Caratakis Answer.

 **N**ow was the winter cummin, and causit Vespasiane to retorne to York; quhare he abaid, all the said winter, with Arviragus. And at the nixt somer he rasit his army, and come within the boundis of Mers and Berwik, pertening to the dominion of Pichtis: quhais inhabitantis war ay maist vailyeant, and strangest ennimes to Britonis; nochtheles, thay war than sa brokin, at this time, with the battall afore rehersit, that thay nicht make litil resistance, bot war haistely yoldin to Romanis. Utheris, quhilkis war mair nobil, fled to Camelon, belewand the Romanis suld nocht cum thair, for difficill and strait passage. Vespasiane weill advertist of thair departing, come with more diligence than ony men presumit, and wan the said town of Camelon. Amang mony riche and precius jewellis, in spulyeing of this town, war found the armis of the kingis of Pichtis; and ane crown of gold, set about with precius stonis of variant colouris; and ane swerd, with heft of gold maist curiously wrocht, within ane purpour scheith. This

swerd was worne, mony yeris efter, be Vespasiane in all his weris. All the nobillis of Pichtis, that war takin in Camelon, war licent to returne hame, on thair pledgis. Vespasiane abaid, lang time efter, in Camelon; and brocht divers auld capitannis to dwell in it, and to leif under Romane lawis, instrukand the rude pepill thairof in civil maneris. He biggit ane templil, nocht far fra the said town, apon the watter of Carron, in honour of Claudius and Victory; and commandit the samin to be adorit be the pepil. Quhill Vespasian was gevin on this maner to polesy and vane religion of gentilis, he was advertist be his exploratouris, that Caratak, King of Scottis, had renewit his army, and cumand furthwart to revenge the injuris done to him be Romanis. Vespasian litill affrayit of thir novellis, abaid in Camelon, and commandit Plaucius, with ane part of the Romanis army, to meit him. Not lang efter, be sound of trumpat, baith the armyis junit, and faucht with incredable slauchter on athir side. At last, quhen thay had fochtin fra the dawing to the midday, the victory succedit to Romanis. The residew of Scottis, that eschapit fra this sorowful battall, fled to the montanis. King Caratak, evil woundit, was brocht out of the felde, with gret difficulte, to Dounstafage. Throw fame of this unhappy battall, mony pepil war yoldin to Romanis. All thay that dwelt in Brigance, havand litil confidence in thair strenthis, fled with thair wiffis, children, and guddis, to the nixt montanis. The fourt day efter, Plaucius tuk the town of Carrik, and pertit al the spulye and guddis found in it, amang his weirmen; and send ane herald to Vespasian, to advertis him of this victory, and schew that Brigance, the principal province of Scotland, was to be randerit but ony forthir rebellion. Vespasian rejoising of thir novellis, come to Carrik; quhare he ressavit mony of the pepill of Brigance to his opinion. Efter this, havand compassion of the lamentabil chance falling to Caratak, fechtand to the uter extermision of his pepill, for defence of his liberte; he send messingeris to him, saying: It was nocht ganand to him to be ony forthir repugnant to the Goddis, be quhome all victory, empire, and auctorite procedis in erd; quhais deliverit sentence hes ordanit all regionis to be subdewit to Romanis. It wes necessar, thairefore, to him and his pepill, to obey the Goddis; quhilkis hes tane ane manifest puni-

tioun on him and his pepill, for thair rebellioun : attoure, promittit, gif he wald be obedient to Romane empire, that he suld remane in honouris as afore, and to be reput as freind to the senat and pepill of Rome ; uthirwayis, gif he wald be repugnant, and perseveir be unprudent hatrent aganis thaim, he suld be degradit of auctorite, and his peple uterlie distroyit. To thir wourdis answerit Caratak, It wes na les fury than imprudence, to mortall pepill to presume, (as thay war familiar with Goddis,) to have ony cognoscance of thingis to cum. Forthir, gif the Romanis, but ony occasion of just battall, wald invaid him, he culd do na thing les than resist sa farre as he micht : for he traistit the Goddis not to be sa injust, to gif victory to injurius and wrangus pepil. Forthir, he culd nocht understand that Romanis suld defend him in his realme, sen thay have socht sa mony wayis to reif him, as thay have done to othir kingis. As to the amite and freindschip of Romanis, he thocht the same to be desirit, gif it micht do him ony commodite ; bot as than it was to be refusit, for gret dammage suld follow thairthrow to his realme and subditis. The realme of Scottis wes als fre to him, as the kingdome of Romanis wes to Cesar Empriour. And sen all pepill that will nocht defend thair awin, ar repute na les detestabil than thay that reiffis othir mennis realmes, he suld perseveir in battall aganis the Romanis to the final end of his live, in defence of his realme and liberte.

Chap. Fourteenth.

*How Caratak cumand with new army aganis Romanis, wes vincust.
Of the Deith of Plautius; and how Ostorius was send in his place,
and dantit the Britonis.*

E this answer, Vespasian tuk gret admiration ; seing Caratak of sa invinsabil sperit : quhen al the remanent princis of Albion wer subdewit, he only, pretending to fecht aganis Romanis : and, for his proud contempnition, he tuk purpos to put him and his pepill to ute rewine. Yit, becaus the passage wes difficil, and vittallis nicht not be transportit in his boundis, but huge dammage of Romanis ; he changit his mind, and maid him reddy to pas in the Ile of Man, lyand betwix Ireland and Albion : and for the expedition thairof, he brocht mony schippis and galyonis to the nixt port, reddy to the samin effect. In the mene time, he gat lettris, schewand, that baith Walis and the Ile of Wicht wes rebellit ; and uncertane gif the same procedit be persuasion of France or not. Vespasiane, traisting na thing sa gud as to meit this present truble afore it ony farther spred, supersedit his passage in the Ile of Man, and past in Britane ; leiffand behind him the strenthis of Brigance garnist with strang sodjournis, and the residew of his army with Plaucius. At his cuming in Britane, the pepill, with facill lauboure, wer sone dantit ; and the principal conspiratouris punist for thair rebellion. Vespasiane, eftir thir feliciteis, returnit be command of Claudius, Empriour, to Rome : quhare he wes ressavit with gret triumphe.

Als sone as Caratak wes advertist that Vespasiane wes departit out of Albion, he thocht time ganand to recover the landis of Scottis and Pichtis, qwhilk war reft afore be tyrany of Romanis ; and assemblit thairfore ane army fra sindry boundis of Albion, with al pepil that hatit the Romanis, or desirit to revenge thair injuris. The Romanis, weil certifyt of his cuming, met him with arrayit

ostis. Followit, ane terribill bergane, fochtin with birnand hatrent on all sidis: the Scottis desiring to recover thair liberte; and the Romanis, to tine not the landis that thay wan afore with gret difficuite and pine. This battall wes lang fochtin with uncertane victory; nochtheles, the wisdome and chevalrie of Romanis wan the victory, and put the Scottis to the flicht. Caratak, seing his army brokin, colleekit the residew of his folkis, and come to Dounstafage; quhare he, be lang consultationn afore his nobillis, tuke avisement how he nicht defend his realme aganis the Romanis; and desirit ane new army to be gaderit out of al boundis undir his dominiououn, with al support that nicht be gotten fra the princis of Ireland, thair anciant faderis, to expel the Romanis out of Scotland, or than all at anis to de. The counsal ripely avisit, with thir present calamiteis falling on thaim be frequent victorye of Romanis, thocht nocth profitable to jeoperd the realme to the last chance of battall: bot erar to suffer thair pepill to waik sumtime fra battal, to recover sum strenth, quhilkis hes bene sa oft diffait afore. Be the samin counsell, wes devisit, that certane chosin men suld lye on the bordour of Brigance, to stop the Romanis fra invasioun of the remenant boundis of Scotland, be frequent incursionis erar than plane battall: thus wes the battall prolongit twa yeris eftir, but ony gret slauchter. The samin time, Plaucius, governour of Romane army, fel in irremediable infirmite of flux; and quhen he understude clearly he nicht nouthir convales be support of nature nor medcine, he wes sa dispartit of his life, that he desirit Claudius, Empriour, sen he nicht nocth labour forthir for the common weill of Rome, to send ane prudent capitane in his place, to hald the Albianis undir Romane lawis, that the landis conquest afore with gret difficulte wer nocth tint. Claudius, at his desire, send in Britane ane vailyeant knicht, namit Ostorius Scapula; and sone eftir his cuming, Plaucius deceisit in Camelon. His body wes brint, eftir the custome and rite of Romanis, and consecratit in the Tempill of Claudius and Victory. Thus rais ane consuetude, mony yeris eftir observat amang the Scottis and Pichtis, to birne the bodyis of thaim that deis; as apperis yit, be mony signis, to our dayis: for, in the yeir of God, M.DXXI yeris, in Fyndoure, ane town of the Mernis, v milis fra Aberdene, wes found ane anciant sepulture, in quhilk wer ii lame

piggis, craftely maid, with letteris ingravitt, full of brint powder; quhilkis sone eftir that thay wer handillit fel in dros. Siclike in Kenbothen, ane town of Mar, x milis fra Aberdene, wer found two sepulturis, on the samin maner, full of brint powder. Mony othir sepulturis hes bene oft times found on the same maner, ful of brint powder. Bot we wil return to our historye, quhare we left.

The Britonis, eftir the cumming of Ostorius Scapula, beleiving to recover thair liberte, becaus he knew not thair maneris nor countrie, rebellit. Ostorius, desiring to have occasion of rebellioun, that he micht schaw his proues and manheid; rasit his camp to invaid the Welchmen and otheris Britonis, in the west partis of Britane; and finalie put thaim to discomfiture. Eftir this victory, he went on the est Britonis, fornce the France seis, quhilkis war the principal movaris of this rebellion. Thir Britonis seing na refuge, fledde to ane strait ground, quhare thay micht noct be esalie invadit: nochtheles, thay wer finalie vincust. Throw faine of this unhappy battall, all the remanent Britonis wer subdewit to Ostorius.

Chap. Fifteenth.

How Caratak, fetchand with new army aganis the Romanis, was discomfist and maid Prisoner to Ostorius, be treason of Cartumandia, his stepmoder.



STORIUS, schort time eftir, tuk ane castell, in Cumber, namit Carlyll: and eftir that he had tane gret praye of guddis out of all partis lyand thair about, he come with al his army, baith in Penthland, Carrik, Kyle, and Cunningham; and wrocht insufferabil injuris with fire and swerd, on the pepill thairof. Caratak, impacient to sustene thir offencis, determit outhir to de, or ellis to revenge the samin. Mony othir Albianis come to him on the samin mind. The army of Caratak at this time wes noumerit to xl.m men: and wes arrayit in sic maner that al thair bakkis wer set contrar ane deip rivere, but ony furde; to that fine, that name of thame may have esperance to flee. Than wes al

the agit wemen, quhilk come in gret noumer to visie the chance of this feild, set on ilk side of the battall ; to rais the spreitis of men with thair clamour, and to cast stanis at thair ennimes, and sla thaim quhen thay fell. All othir wemen, that war young and wicht, war arrayit with armour and wappinnis amang the men. Sic thingis done, the capitaniis went heir and thair about the army, exhorting thame all in general to battal ; and said, That daye, behuffit thay othir to recover thair liberte, or ellis be thirlit to perpetual servitude. And sumtyme thay maid invocatioun to the Devine Spreit of thair eldaris ; quhilkis, be thair manheid and gloriis chevalrie, dang Julius out of Albion, and maid thaim and thair posterite exonerat fra al tribut and servitude of Romanis. Than followit sa huge clamour and noyis in the army, that ilk man promittit, but ony feir, to fecht for thair realme and liberte to the deith. Ostorius wes na litil asto-nist, seing the Scottis of sa huge multitude, and brim desire of battall ; knawing weil how dangerus it wes to fecht aganis ony men in extreme disperation but refuge. Caratak, yit to gif the army more curage and spreit to fecht, schew that thair perpetual liberte wes than present to thaim in that feild, for the winning. On the othir side, Ostorius wes na les prudent in hortation of his folkis : desiring thame, be lang orison, to remember how thay wer Romanis, dantaris of all pepill ; and thair ennimes, bot rude and barbar, but huma-nite, and cassin be Nature, the crafty moder of al creature, in the remote and last nuik of the warld. Incontinent, baith the armyis, be thunderand preis of trumpat, junit, and faught with mair cruelte than evir wes herd in ony warld afore : nochtheles, the Romanis wer finalie victouris.

In this battall wes tane Caratakis wif, his dochter, and breder. And, as oft is sene, few men can haif sicker freindis in adversite : This Caratak fled to his gud moder, Cartumandia, Quene of Scottis ; quhilk, eftir deceis of his fader Cadallane, wes maryit apon one valyeant knicht, namit Venisius. Cartumandia seing Caratak disti-tute of all consolatioun, deliverit him to Ostorius, the ix. yeir eftir that the battall wes begun be Romanis in Albion. Ostorius seing Caratak brocht afore him, and reft fra kinglie dignite, had sic compassioun, that he tuke him be the hand, and said, “O Caratak, this “mischance suld be sufferit with pacience ; for thocht thou be dis-

“ titute of gud fortoun, yit thou art nocht cumin in our handis,
 “ nakit of virtew. Eschame nocht to be the pray of Romanis,
 “ quhilkis hes subdewit sa mony riche and vailyeant kingis, and led
 “ thaim in triumphhe.” To this answerit Caratak, with hevy cheir:
 “ I mon,” said he, “ suffer this aduersite, howbeit it be contrar
 “ my will. And yit na thing is sa grevous to me as Fortoun ; quhilk
 “ is sa contrarius to my governance, that scho hes dejeckit me at thy
 “ feit, to be example of hir mutabilite ; and maid me prisoner, more
 “ be treason than force : quhil my pissance indurit, I maid impedi-
 “ ment ; bot now, be treason of my stepmoder, Cartumandia, in
 “ quhom had I maist confidence eftir my discomfitour, I am cumin
 “ in thy handis. My part is now to obey to the as victour, and un-
 “ derlie the wil and plescir of my ennime : thy part sal be to use
 “ the chance of ane victorius capitane, and so mercifull, that vincust
 “ and miserable peple may have sum esperance of grace.” Als sone
 as Caratak had said thir wourdis, he wes brocht to the tentis of Ro-
 manis, and tretit with all reverence, as efferit to ane king.

Chap. Sixteenth.

*How Caratak was brocht to Rome, and how he returnit in Scotland.
 Of uncouth mervellis sene in Albion ; and of sindry nobill Clerkis,
 and of the Deith of Caratak.*



ARATAK, within few dayis eftir, wes brocht throw Italy, with his wiffe, douchter, and bredit, to Rome. The pepil, heirand his cumming, assemblit out of all partis; richt desirus to se that vailyeant king quhilk had fouchtin sa mony yeris aganis the Romanis. At his cumming, stude arrayit in the stretis of Rome, the band of weirmen, in gret ordour. First wer schawin his hors, harnes, barding, and riche spulyeis ; quhilkis war gottin in the feild aganis him : followit, his wif and douchter ; and, last of all, himself. Caratak, brocht afore the Empreour in this maner, and seing his freindis that come with him sum part astonisit ; to schaw his curage na thing dejeckit in this cala-

mite, said in this maner : “ Had I bene als fortunat in prosperite
“ and riches, as I am in hie nobilite and blud, I micht haif erar
“ cummin freind than presonere in this town ; for I wes nocth un-
“ worthy, throw my progenitouris and gret dominiouen, to have bene
“ confiderat with Romanis. This present calamite is na les honor-
“ able to the, Cesar, Empriour, than unplesand to me. I had sum-
“ time hors, harnes, men, and riches : quhat wonder is thocht I have
“ lost thaim aganis my will ? for gif the Romanis will have em-
“ pire above the warld, on force al peple man be thrillit to your
“ servitude. Had I bene randerit to Romanis, sone eftir thair cuming
“ in Albion, nothir had thy glore, nor yit my calamite bene sa
“ notable and knawin. And thocht thou punis me, that am thy pre-
“ sonere, to the deith; the memory of me sall sone evanis : yit, will
“ thou suffer me returne to my realme, it sal be ane perpetuall ex-
“ ample of thy mercy.” The Emprioure incontinent gave pardoun
and grace baith to him, his wiffe, and brether ; and deliverit thaim of
bondaige. Sone efter, the faderis convenit, and fell in sindry com-
municationis concerning the capitane of Caratak. Mony of thaim
thocht the taking of him na les honorabil to Romanis, than was
the taking of King Syphax be Scipio, or Persis be L. Paulus, or
the taking of ony othir vineust kingis be the Romanis ; and decern-
it, thairefore, ane triumphe to be gevin to Ostorius. Caratak was
commandit to returne in Scotland, leiffand his eldest brothir and
douchter in pledge.

Mony prodigeis and uncouth mervellis, war sene in Albion, that
yeir that Caratak faucht with Romanis. Ane gret battall of hors-
men war sene arrayit in the feild ; and sone eftir, with huge nois and
murdir on athir side, junit togidder : bot thay evanist so suddanly,
that na maner of signe apperit in the feild quhare thay war first
sene. In the nicht afore the battal, apperit to the wache, ane mul-
titude of wolffis, and tuke ane of thaim that war at the wache away,
and brocht him with thaim to the nixt wod ; bot on the morrow, als
sone as licht apperit, thay brocht him agane, but ony harme of his
body. In Carrick was ane child borne with ane ravin heid. Thir
uncouth signis apperit, to na les terroure than admiration of the
pepl. The devinouris intrepert thaim to signify gret trubill and
dangeir appering to Caratak, the heid of the realme : nochthe-

les, seing him returne fra Rome, but ony displeseir, thay began to interpret thaim to ane othir face. The pepill rejoising of Caratakis returning, ressavit him with excellent honouris, and convoyit him to the town of Carrik. This town, be command of the Empriour, was restorit to him, with Brigance, Kyle, and Cunningham.

Caratak past the remenant of his liffe in tender amite with the Romanis, but any uncouth or domistik weiris ; for baith his brethir and doucheris war send hame to him, be favoure of the Empriour. Caratak leiffit two yeris efter this, in gud peace, and deceissit the *xxi.* yere of his regne ; ane prince mair vailyeant than fortunat, all his dayis ; gevand his ingine and curage to defend his realme and subdittis fra servitude of Romanis, and to institute thaim in gud maneris. About this time was mony nobill clerkis, as Persius, Juvenale, Senica. The pepill began, als, in all partis of the warlde, to ryis in sicker faith of Crist ; and all vane idolatreis and superstitionis put downe.

And sa endis heir, the Thrid Buke.

The Feird Buke.

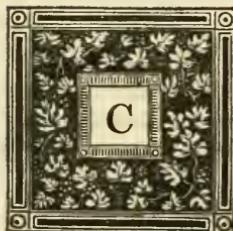
HEIR BEGINNIS THE FEIRD BUKE

OF THE

CRONIKLIS OF SCOTLAND.

Chap. First.

How Corbrede was maid King of Scottis. How the Pichtis rebellit aganis the Romanis, and slew Ostorius thair Capitane.



ATARAK beand on this maner deceissit, and beryit with funerall triumphe in Carrik, ane riche and precius sepulture wes maid for him, with hiear pillaris rising about the samin than evir wes sene afore, to his eternal glory. This prince had na airis, bot ane doucher, to succeed to his realme; and wes trublit with sic infirmite, that scho deceissit ane virgine. Eftir hir deith, Corbreid, youngest brothir to Caratak, wes maid king; for his eldest brothir deceissit, as we schew afore, passand with Vespasiane to Rome. This Corbreid wes of fers ingine, nocht far different fra his brothir Caratak in maneris. In the beginning of his empire, he went in the Ilis, Ros, and Cathnes; quhare he punist mony wekit schrewis for thair attemptatis, and rewardit all thaim that he fand defendouris of the common weill, with large commoditeis.

Quhill Corbreid wes gevin on this maner to justice, the Romanis began to decay in Britane : for the Pichtis, eftir creation of thair new King, Conkist, in hope to recover thair liberte, slew mony of the Romanis, heir and thair skatterit throw the cuntry; for thay traistit, eftir deith of Caratak, na reconuntering to be foundin. Thus had nane of the Romanis eschapit, war nocht thay hapnit more haistelie to be reskewit be support of thair strenthis ; nochtheles, mony of the principall capitaniis wer slane. Ostorius, impacient to suffer thir injuris, come with ane haisty and weil arrayit army aganis the Pichtis ; followit sone, ane sore battal, fochtin with sic cruelte and slauchter, that the Romanis wer neir discomfist. Than Ostorius ruschit sa fersly forwart to have maid thaim support, that he wes evill woundit, and narrowly eschapit untakin : nochtheles, the nicht severit thaim, with lamentable slauchter on ilk side. Followit, continewal incursionis, with reif and slauchter, as the chance succedit. Throw fame of this victory, come sindry cumpanis of pepill to the Pichtis, and gave occasioun to fecht aganis the Romanis. Bot skarsly wes the battall junit, quhen the Pichtis left the feild, and fled, as thay had bene discomfist ; to that fine that thay nicht draw the Romanis to the said place quhair thair ambuscheinment wes laid. And as thay devisit, sa succedit eftir ; for the Romanis, following in this maner, wer slane. Als sone as Ostorius wes advertist heirof, he fled with gret dredour to his tentis ; and wrait to Claudius, Emprioure, that the Pichtis were rebellit, and nicht na ways be haldin under Romane lawis. Than Claudius maid his vow to punis the Pichtis in sic maner, that thair name and memorie sall peris in Albioun ; and, to bring his purpos to effect, he send in Britane two Romane legionis : and, notwithstanding the cuming of thir legionis, the Pichtis grew ilk day more insolent aganis the Romanis ; and finalie, be suddan irruptionis, slew two capitaniis of Romane sodjouris, quhilkis wer assemblit afore to mak incursionis in the cuntry ; and partit thair spulyeis amang thair fallowis, that concurrit with thaim in the said bergane.

Ostorius, trublit with hevy curis, and doloure, rising of the woundis that he gat in this last battall, deceissit, to the gret consolatioun of his ennimes.

Chap. Second.

How Manlius Valens, Capitane of Britane, was discomfist be the Pichtis. How Didius was send in his place. Of the Messaige send be Pichtis to Corbreid; and of his Answer.



STORIUS beand decessit in this wise, Manlius Valens wes maid capitane to Romanis in Britane ; and com with mony auful legionis aganis the Pichtis. Followit, ane scharppe bergane, fochtin lang time with doutsum victory. And quhen the Pichtis stude in maist danger, come haistelie cccc. men of Kendill, quhen na man belevit, to thair support ; be quhais cumming, the Romanis war put to flicht. In this battal wes slane MMM. Romanis, and twa thousand Pichtis. Claudius, advertist of this unhappy chance falling to Romanis in Britane, send Aulus Didius, with two Romane legionis, to succeed in his place. This Aulus, at his cumming in Albioun, fand the Romanis in small felicite ; and maid him thairfore to revenge the injuris done to thaim ; and persewit the Pichtis, quhare evir thay might be apprehendit, to the deith. And first he callit all the Romanis afore him, and reprochit thaim that thay failyeit to thaim self, and war nocth sa walkrif and provident in al materis as thay suld haif ben, eftir the taking of Caratak. He mervellit eik that thay wer sa far degenerit fra Romane glore, to be schamfullie ouirthrawin with thair febill ennimes ; and finalie, he prayit tham to beleif nocth thair discomfitoure cummin be ony manheid or virtew of thair ennimes, bot onlie be thair awin negligence and sleuth ; and prayt thaim to be so obedient to thair capitane, that he have no occasioun be thaim to leis his curage. The Romanis maid incontinent thair solempne vowis, to revenge al injuris done be thair ennimes. The Pichtis, at the first brut of thir novellis, wer effrayit : nochtheles, be memorie of this recent victorie, thay began to tak gud curage ; and send incontinent thair ambassatouris to Corbreid, King of Scottis, schawing to him, thocht thay

have laitlie conquest two victoreis on the Romanis, yit the said Romanis, be more hatrent than afore, intendis to cum with awfull incursionis in Pentland, and purposit, eftir the distractioune of Pichtis, to invaid the Scottis on the same maner: and, thairfore, desirite the said Corbreid to send support, in time to occurre, the present dangeir, erar afore his pissance wer brokin, than quhen his landis wer so waistit, that he micht mak na support.

It wes answerit be Corbreid, that he knew weill how Didius wes cumming in Albion, with na gud mind to him nor his realme; intending nocht onlie to keip the landis conquest afore be Romanis, bot als to augment the samin with new regionis and landis. Yit, becaus he wes confederat with Romanis, he wald na wayis invaid thaim with battal, bot gif thay first invadit him; for he wes oblist thairto be contract maid afore be Caratak. Nochtheles, for defence of his realme and pepil, he suld cum, within ane certane day, with al his power; erar to mak impediment to Romanis, than to invaid thaim with ony battall.

Chap. Third.

How Cartumandia, Quene of Scotis, was beryit quik. How the Scottis and Pichtis faucht aganis the Romanis with uncertane victory, and war constrainit to take peace; and of the deith of Didius.



As sone as thir oratouris war depeschit, Corbreid went with anearmy in Brigance. Didius, heiring his cumming, chargit him, beane herald, to depart haistelie thairfra; and allegit, it wes the province and land of Romanis, and grantit bot onlie to Caratak, during his life: certifying him, gif he wer rebelland to this charge, he suld be repute ennime to Romanis, and doung be force out of all boundis of his realme. Scarslie wer thir wordis said, quhen tithingis come, that Cesius Nasica, lieutenant to Didius, wes entrit with ane army in Brigance. Cor-

breid incontinent gaderit all his pepill to ane gret strenth ; traistng na les honour to keip his subdittis but perell, than to wirk dammage on his ennimes : sine went to Epiak, to be consulit in this maist dangerus mater with Venisius, the husband of Cartumandia, his gud-moder.

This Venisius wes ane man of hie ingine, and wes lang time defendit fra injuris of nichtbouris be auctorite of Romanis ; yit, becaus he saw thair tyrany and proud dominioune sa importabill, he rebellit, and come to the opinioun of his native prince. Cartumandia, Quene of Scottis, and spous to the said Venisius, richt sorowfull for thir feliciteis daily succeding to Corbreid, and dredand hir to be punist, (for scho treasonabillly randrit Caratak afore to Romanis,) tuke hir husband and freindis be crafty slichtis, and held thaim in preson. Corbreid, movit for this offence, come to Epiak ; and, eftir that he had put the said Venisius and his freindis to liberte, he commandit this wekit woman, Cartumandia, to be buryit quik.

Ane cumpamy of Scottis, at this time, followit so unwarly on the chase of Romanis, that thay wer belttit about on every side with ennimes afore thay wist, and all slane. This discomfitoure maid the remenant Scottis, within thair municionis and strenthis, so effrayit, that thay might scarsly be haldin fra fleing. On the fift day eftir, the Romanis went forwart to assailye this muniticoun of Scottis with thair horsmen : bot it wes sa circulit on ilk side within ane mos, that na horsmen might invaid thaim ; and it had na out passage bot at ane part, quhilk was maid be thaim with flaikis, scherettis, and treis. Nochtheles, quhen thir Romanis knew that the Scottis and Pichtis wer within thre milis to thair army, thay left thair purpos. Incontinent, Cesius Nasica, capitane of Romanis, brocht all his army, weil arrayit, to the feild ; and abaid still, quhill the cumming of thair ennimes. On the tothir side, the confederatte pepill, I mene the Scottis and Pichtis, went so fast forthwart, quhen thay saw thair ennimes in sicht, that thay wer out of aind, or evir thay come to ony straikis. And yit thay junxit at the occasion of the sonne, and faucht continewally quhill thay wer severit be cumming of the nicht ; and than the Romanis fled to thair tentis, and the confederat kingis to the montanis.

In the mene time, Didius, the Romane legate, send ane herald to Cesijs, his leutenand, and schew gret trubill amang the Britonis in Walis; and, thairfore, commandit him, to make sum honest way of peace with the Scottis and Pichtis, that the landis, conquest afore with sa huge difficulte, war nocth schamefully tint. Thir novellis maid Cesijs to defaik sum part of his curage. The confederat kingis, brokin with this recent bergane, send thair ambassatouris, on the nixt morow, to Cesijs to have peace; lamenting the huge murdir and calamite falling to baith thair armyis be this last battall: and schew, thairfore, it was sufficient ineuch to Romanis to have the confederat kingis as thair freindis in times cuming; for thay war sa obstinat, that na thing mycht vincus thaim during thair liffe. Cesijs, havand this honest occasioun to treit peace with the confederat pepill, set ane day to common on all materis. And, at the said day, peace was finaly tretit betwix the Romanis, Scottis, and Pichtis, undir thir conditionis: The Romanis sall keip the landis be thaim conquest afore this peace, but ony ferder conques; and sall nouther invade the Scottis nor Pichtis with battall, les than the Scottis and Pichtis invade thaim first. The Pichtis sall leif on thair awin lawis; and Conkist, thair king, to regne above thaim, as afore, payand the auld tribute to the wageouris of Camelon. The jurisdictionn of blude sall be onely with Romanis. Na Franchemen nor Britonis, that ar fugitive fra the Romane lawis, sall be resset amang the Scottis and Pichtis. The Scottis sall rejose frelie all thair landis, and use thair awin lawis; providing allwayis, that thay support nocth the inhabitantis of the Ile of Man with vittallis or wappinnis, for the injuris laitly be thaim done to Romanis. And, finally, the said Scottis sall nouther support the Pichtis in Britane, gif ony of thaim happinnis to rebell aganis the Romanis; nor yit invade thaim with battall, sa lang as thay abaid at the faith of Romanis. The peace beand confirmit in this sort, all partyis returnit hame.

This peace indurit, but ony violation, sa lang as Didius was capitane in Britane. And, the saxt yeir efter, he deceissit in London.



Chap. Fourth.

How Veranius was maid capitane of Britane ; and of his deith. How Swetonius, his successoure, put the Ile of Man to sak. How Britonis maid new rebellioun on the Romanis ; and of sindry Prodigies and Mervellis sene in Albion.



IDIUS beand deceissit, as said is ; be command of Nero, Emprioure, was send in Britane, ane new capitane, namit Veranneus. Quhen this Veranneus had visit sindry provincis of Britane, he come to Camelon, and maid sacrifice in the honoure of the Goddes Victory, and Claudius, Emprioure, quhilk was laitly deceissit, and deifcat be the Romanis.

Veranneus, richt desirus to be equale to his antecessouris in glore of chevalry, socht mony occasionis to move battall on his nichbouris. So hapnit, that certane Hieland thevis of Scotland, tuke ane pray of guddis out of the Pichtis landis. Veranneus, traisting this sufficient

occasioun to move battall, socht na redres be reasoun of the peace afore contrakkit; bot send ane multitude of pepill, but ony mair tary, in the landis of Scottis; and, be frequent incursionis, brocht away ane gret pray of men and guddis with thaim in Pentland. The Scottis, movit be this outrage, ruschit haistely to harnes. Followit ithand heirschippis and slauchter on athir side; and, in the middis of this trubill, Veranneus deceissit. His last wourdis war sa full of vane arrogance and glore, as writis Tacitus, that he belevit himself sufficient, gif he had leifft two yeris mair than he did, to have subdewit all the boundis of Albion to Romane Empire.

Efter his deceis, Swetonius, ane humill man, was send in his place; quhilk, efter his cuming, renewit peace with Albianis: and, quhen he had reparit all injuris quhare thay complanit, he maid him reddy to pas on the Ile of Man; for it was full of vailyeant pepill, and generall resset to all thaim that haitit or rebellit aganis the Romanis. At his cuming in the said Ile, he fand ane strange gise of battall arrayit aganis him. First, stude ane cumpany of wod wemen, arrayit in furius habite, on the sandis, with hair hingand our thair eue, and armit with firebrandis in thair handis. Efter thaim, stude the preistis namit Druides, hevand thair handis to the hevin, and makand maist terribil cursing on the Romanis; and, in the middis of thaim, stude ane band of armit men, reddy to fecht. The Romanis war mair astonist for this uncouth sicht of furius wemen and preistis, than ony terrour of armit men: nochtheles, be hortatioun of thair capitane, thay went forthwart with displayit baner; and, finaly, baith thir wemen and preistis war discomfist and yoldin. Swetonius, efter this victory, garnist all the strenthis of this Ile with garnison of Romanis; and maid plane eversioun of all the woddis, quhare the preistis usit thair sacrifice in the honour of thair Goddis.

Quhen Swetonius had dantit the Ile of Man in this maner, he was advertist that France was rebellit; and, thairefore, to peacify this trubill, he pullit up salis, and arrivit in Bartanye. The Britonis herand his departing, thocht the time ganand to recover thair liberte, and rebellit. The motive of thair rebellioun was, that Arviragus, thair last king, left his two dochteris, and the Emprioure, heritouris to his kingdome and riches; traisting, to saif thaim fra

trubill be that way : howbeit, all thingis succeedit contrar his beleif ; for his realme was governit be Romane capitanis, and his hous put to servitude, as it had bene tane be pres of battal ; his wif, Voada, bet with straikis ; and baith his two dochteris deflorit. The Britonis, opprest with thir injuris, and dreidand ilk day mair displeseris to follow, maid plane rebellion, and socht support in all partis quhare thay nicht.

Mony uncouth mervellis war sene, about this time, in Albion. The occiane see apperit bludy, and mony deid bodyis cassin to the brayis thairof. Wemen yeid wod, and declarit terribill thingis to cum. The imagis of Claudius, beside Čamelon, fel down in dros ; and the image of Victory fell down fra the alter on hir bak, as scho had bene vincust. The spaymen said, thir prodiges signifyt gret damage appering to Romanis. The Pichtis quhilkis war in Camelon and othir munitionis thair beside, herand this answer, wer erekit in esperance of better fortoun ; and nocht only maid privat conspiration aganis the Romanis, bot slew mony of thair wageouris, afore thair rebellion was patent. The agit Romanis, in quhome the Pichtis had maist hatrent, war slane in gret nowmer, and the residew chasit out of al boundis gevin to thaim for lang service ; and, finaly, thir agit Romanis fled to ane auld tempill, within the boundis of Berwik, quhare thay war al slane be the inhabitantis of that region. Petus Cerealis, lieutenant to Swetonius, desiring to support thir agit capitanis, come with ane légion of Romanis, and ane cumpany of horsmen ; nochtheles, his legion was discomfist, and himself chasit to the Romane tentis. The nixt nicht, he fled to Cattus, procuratour of Britane, quhilk was for that time in Kent. Als sone as Cattus was advertist of the trubill ilk day rising in Britane, he fled, for feir of his lif, in France.

Chap. Fifth.

*Of the Complaint maid be Voada, Quene of Britonis, to Corbreid.
Of his Message send to Cattus. Of Cattus answer. Of sindry
Incursionis maid be Scottis on the Romanis. And of the first
cuming of Murrayis in Scotland.*



OADA, Quene of Britonis, opprest with daily injure of Romanis, send hir secretar to hir brothir Corbreid, King of Scottis, complening hir mesirie and trouble; hir dochteris deflorit; and hirself sa shamefully doung be the Romanis, that pacience micht nocht avail, bot onely to be ane place to new injuris. Sum time wes bot ane king in Britane, bot than rang two kingis, the legat, and the Romane procuratour; that ane havand power to distroy thair blude, and this othir, to devore thair substance. That man was reput maist nobill amang Romanis, that micht defoule moniast wemen, or make maist herschippis on the pepill. And, becaus na thing micht suffice to satefy the insaciabil lust and avarice of Romanis, scho requirit hir brothir, to suffer nocht hir, his onely sister, to be shamefully doung, and hir dochteris defould, but punition. And finaly schew, how the Britonis, for the infinite harmes done to thaim be Romanis, war rebellit; throw quhilk, he micht haif better occasion to invaid the Romanis with battall at this time, than ony othir time afore.

Corbreid, movit be this pieteous complaint, send ane herald to Cattus, Romane procuratour, quhilk was laityt returnit in Britane, commanding him to redres al offendis done to his sister; and, failyeing thairof, declarit him to be ennime to Romanis in times cuming. It was answerit be Cattus, that na thing pertenit to Corbreid, quhidder richt or wrang war done to Voada; als, it was ane vane foly to Corbreid, sen he was bot ane rud and barbar man, to seme curius in Romane materis, pertaining na thing to his chargis. Forthir, gif ony displesair war done to Voada, Quene of Britonis, the samin shall be eikit with doubill injuris; for the Romanis wald nocht dedenyne

thair majeste, to satefy the desire of barbar pepill in ony othir sort ; and tuke na regard quhidder he war freind or fo, or quhat he might do.

Corbreid, movit be this outrageous answer, maid new band of confideration with Pichtis. And, within schort time efter, the confederat kingis rasit ane army of all fensabil men that might be foundin within thair realmis, with sindry Ireland men, that come to thair support, and slew the Romanis, in al partis quhare they might be apprehendit, but ony ransom or piete : and in this jurnay they tuke Berwik, quhilk was than maist populus town of that region ; and, quhen they had slane all Romane sodjouris foundin thairintill, they kest downe the wallis thairof onto the ground.

The inhabitantis of the Ile of Man heirand thir novellis, thocht the time ganand to recover all thair strenthis. Sone efter, all pepil of Brigance, Carrik, Kyle, and Cuningham, come to thaim ; and past, in arrayit battall, throw sindry pròvincis of Romanis, ceissing fra na maner of cruelteis that might be devisit on thaim. The town of Carlell was nocht saffit fra this cruelte ; for, efter that it was tane, all the cieteyanis thairof war slane, and the strang wallis thairof, equat to the ground. The wemen, during this fury, war sa desirus to revenge the cruelteis done be Romanis, that they bure armour and wappinnis.

About this time, ane pepil, namit Murrayis, discending of Almane blude, and doung out of thair native region be Romane weris, come, skatterit in sindry cumpanyis, to the mouth of Ryne ; quhare they pullit up salis, with thair capitane Rodorik, to seik ane new habitation. At last, efter that they had bene lang travellit on the wilsum sees, and inhibit to land in France and Britane, they arrivit in Forthe ; quhilk is ane arme of the see deviding Pentland fra Fiffe. The Pichtis ressavit thaim the mair plesantly, that they apperit with strang bodyis to support thaim aganis thair pissant ennimes ; and war nocht only discendir of thair linage and blude, bot als war sworne, sa far as thair power might, to revenge the injuris done to thaim be Romanis.

Rodorik, brocht in Pentland with the Murrayis on this maner, went to the confederat kingis ; and, before thaim, lamentit sore the tyranny of Romanis, quhilkis, be onely desire of dominioun, hes

subdewit ane large part of Almany ; and nocht only thirllit the pepill thairof to importabil servitude, bot subjecket thaim to Romane lawis. Siclike, the Murrayis, to quhom he wes capitane, war doung out of thair native landis ; and constrainit, becaus thay might suffer na servitud, to seik new habitation. Alwayis, it wes ane gret consolatioun to him and the Murrayis, that thay, be favour of Goddis, wer brocht in thay landis, quhare thay might revenge the injuris done to thaim be thair ennimes. And, for thir motivis, he desirit the confederat kingis, to suffer him and the Murrayis to pas formast in support of thair peple ; and desirit, gif it hapnit thaim, be thair manheid and chevalry, to ding the Romanis out of Scotland, to grant thame wifis, that thay might increas under ane blude with Scottis and Pichtis : be contrar, gif it hapnit thaim to be slane, thay tuke na cure of thair deith, swa that thay had sufficientlie revengit the injuris done be thair proude ennimes. Thir desiris of the Murrayis wer the more acceptabill to the confederat kingis, that thay understude thaim enragit with maist cruell hatrent aganis the Romanis ; and, thairfore, condiscendit to all thair peticionis, traisting, be thair incredible manheid and strenth, to wirk sum hie displesair to thair ennimes.

Chap. Sixth.

Of the Orison maid be Voada, Quene of Britonis, to the confederat Kingis ; and how scho [wes] vincust [be] the Romanis, and finaly slew hirself. And of the deith of King Corbreid.



HE confederat kingis, rejoising of the cumming of Murrayis on this maner, went forthwart with diligence to meit Voada; the vailleant Quene of Britonis, quhilk wes than gaderit with ane huge noumer of Britonis, abiding thair cuming. Als sone as Voada understude hir bruthir Corbreid and the King of Pichtis wer cumin with thair armyis, scho went forthwart to meit thaim.

Eftir maist tender and hertlie embrasing on ilk side, Voada said to thame on this maner : “ Had I bene borne, maist vailyeant cam-
 “ pionis, ane man, I micht nocht have sufferit sa mony cruel and
 “ intollerable injuris as now ar done be Romanis : nochtheles, in
 “ quhatsumevir image nature hes formit me, gif ye will concurre
 “ with me to revenge the common offence done to us all, thir Ro-
 “ manis, that ar sa vailyeant aganis wemen, and sa cruel to thair
 “ subditis, sall sone se quhat vassalage may be done be ladyis, quhen
 “ extreme danger occurris. And, thocht I may no wayis devoid me
 “ of wiflie image, yit I sall not want mannis hardiment ; bot I sall
 “ fecht formest in the bront, with v.m armit ladyis, quhilkis ar all
 “ sworne to revenge the cruelteis done be Romanis. We sall pas
 “ formast in battall, but feir of deith, or bludy woundis. We sal
 “ nocht, as othir wemen usis, be affrayit for ony woundis tane or
 “ gevin be our ennimes. I can have na mercy on thaim that hes
 “ invadit my freindis with sic odius slauchter and cruelteis. Thir
 “ odius tyrannis, nakit and vode of piete, hes slane sa infinit nou-
 “ mer of pepill, and deflorit sa mony honest virginis and matronis,
 “ that thay knaw nocht thajmself, as I belief, men, nor borne of
 “ wemen. Arme yow, for this motivis, maist vailyeant kingis, aganis
 “ your common ennimes, with sic curage as ye sall se ladyis have
 “ afore yow : and beleif nocht bot sieker victory ; for the Romanis
 “ ar sa effrayit, that thay confide in na thing sa mekle as in thair
 “ fleing. And haist your army with al diligence, in aventure sum
 “ new power come nocht with Cattus, the Romane procuratoure,
 “ throw quhilk it sal be the more difficill to resist ; and, finaly, I
 “ beseik yow to rander nocht youreself, your wiffis, and barnis, but
 “ scharp bargane, to Romanis.” Quhen Voada had endit this ori-
 son, the confederat kingis apprisit hir wisdom and curage.

Cattus, advertist of thir novellis, wes effrayit : nochtheles, he come forthwart with arrayit oistis to meit the Albianis ; and thay na thing eschewit his cumming. Incontinent, baith the armyis junxit. At the first cumming, all the horsmen of Romanis wer discomfist ; and, sone eftir, the futemen, on the samin maner. Followit, ane miserable slauchter on the flearis. Cattus, evill woundit in this battal, eschaphit, and fled in France. The Albianis, proud of this victory, partit the spulye and riches of this feild amang thaim ; and slew the Ro-

manis in al partis quhare thay nicht be apprehendit. In this battall wer slane, as writtis Cornelius Tacitus, lxxiij. Romanis, and xxxiij. Albianis. Be this cruel slauchter, the Romanis wer brocht to sic calamite, that wer nocht Suetonius, the Romane legatte, come the more haistelie fra France to thair support, the Albianis had bene perpetuallie deliverit of Romane injuris. This Suetonius come in Britane with twa legionis, and xiiij. wagiouris of sindry nationis, and tuke purpos to persew the Albianis with new battall. Voada, heiring the returning of Suetonius in Britane, send to the Britonis to cum to hir but ony tary. At the day prefixit, come to hir ane huge army of Britonis, Scottis, Pichtis, and Murrayis, devidit in sindry buschementis; all atanis rejoising, be thair recent victorie, that thay had occasioun and ganand season to distroy the Romanis. The wiffis, quhilkis come with thair husbandis, as the custome wes in thay dayis, wer set in cartis on the out bordouris of the campe, to beir witnes quhay didde maist vassalage. Quhen the Britonis, Scottis, Pichtis, and Murrayis, wer ordorit in gud array, Quene Voada, nocht unworthy to be noumerit amang maist douchty championis, ruschit about the army, with hir two armit dochteris, and schew hir not cummin amang sa mony vailleant capitaniis onlie to defend hir realme and riches, bot to revenge the mony schamfull and unworthy offendis done to hir be Romanis; and had na litill indignatioun in hir mind, that the Romanis enragit in so unbridlit lust, that no estait of virginis nor matronis wer left be thame undeflorit: and, forthir, scho schew, how the Goddis, quhilkis ar just punisaris of all wrangis, wer presentlie cumin to beir witnes of the inuiteis done be Romanis; and hes recentlie punist thaim in this last battall with schame and slauchter, becaus thay movit injust battal aganis fre peple. “ Now restis nocht,” said scho, “ bot onelie to fecht aganis “ thay miserabil cativis, that wer saifft be thair schamefull flicht “ fra this last battal; and thocht Suetonius, thair new capitane, “ may exhort thaim to battall, yit he may not restore, sen thay ar “ vincust, thair curage and spreit. Will ye considir,” said scho, “ your vincust and discomfist adversaris, aganis quhom ye suld now “ fecht;—wil ye considir your awin pissance, and the occasioun of “ battal;—ye sall think it honorable, othir to be victoriis in this

" battal, or ellis al at anis to de: for nobil men suld cheis erar to .
" de honestly, than schamefully to leif."

On this othir side, Suetonius ceissit not to exhort his army to battal; for, thocht he had gret confidence in thair manheid, he requirit thaim to regard nocht the vane minassing of barbour pepill, amang quhom wes more noumer of wemen than of men. Thay wer als bot young, febill, and unarmit pepil, but ony cognossance of chevalry; and nicht, thairfore, the more esalie be discomfist, fra thay have provin the manheid and scharp swerdis of Romanis. And thocht his said army wes bot of few noumer, the more glore suld follow, gif thay, with sa few and sufficient pepill, vincust sa huge multitude of barbour ennimes. And, finalie, prayit thaim, to weild thair swerdis and dartis maist ferslie, to the murdir of thair fayis; and to have na sicht to spulyeis, quhil the victory wer cleirlie conquest; eftir quhilk, all thingis nicht succeed to thair plesour.

Thir wourdis of the capitaniis movit the armyes to brim and ardent desire of battall. The agit knichtis, be lang experience and use, had na les confidence in thair manheid and virtew, than victory had bene present in thair handis. On the tothir side, the Albianis, confiding in the huge multitude of armit men, be sound of trumpet gaif signe to june. Followit, ane bludy and terrible battall. Bot at last the Albianis wer vincust, chasit, and put to flicht with gret slauchter: and the more slauchter followit, that thair army wes circulit on every side with sic multitude of cartis, that the discomfist pepill had na place to fle. The Romanis slew all the wemen in this battall but ony piete or ransoun. This battall wes honest, bot richt unpleasand to Romanis; for the maist part of thair army wer tint.

In this battall wes slane, as Tacitus writtis, LXXXI. Albianis. The Murrayis, for the maist part, wer all slane, with thair capitane Rodorik. Quene Voadha, that scho suld nocht cum quik in hir ennimes handis, slew hirself. Baith hir dochteris wer tane; and brocht armit, as thay facth, to Suetonius. The eldest of hir dochteris wes maryit apon ane nobill knicht of Romane blude, namit Marius; for he bereft hir virginite afore; and wes maid king of Britonis be auctorite of Cesar. This Marius, eftir his coronatioun, went in Kendallie, ane part of Britane liand fornens Annandale and Brigance; and namit that land, eftir his name, West Maria, that is to say,

Westmurland. King Corbreid, brokin with this sorowfull battall, returnit with the residew of his army in Scotland; and gaif to the Murrayis, quhilkis eschapit out of this feild, all the landis liand betwix Spay and Innernes; quhilkis landis wer callit, eftir thame, Murray-land. The auld inhabitantis of thir landis, namit Vararis, wer expellit; becaus thay wer ane seditious pepill, and more gevin to civil weris, for dissentioun of thaimself and thair nichtbouris, than ony defence of the realme. The Murrayis wer than maryit on Scottis virginis, and grew under ane blude and amite with the Scottis.

Corbreid past the remanent of his dayis but ony weris: for the Romanis wer so irkit with civil battallis, that it wes gret difficulte to hold the south partis of Britane at thair opinioun; and, for that cause, thay persewit not the Scottis nor Pichtis, mony yeris eftir. This nobil prince, brokin with dammage of yeris, deceissit at Donstafage, the xviii yeir of his regne; and wes beryit amang the remanent sepulturis of his progenitouris; in the first yere of the empire of Vespasiane, Emprioure; fra the incarnation, LXXI yeris.

Chap. Seventh.

Of sindry nobill Clerkis. How Petir and Paule war martirit. How Dardannus was maid King of Scottis; and slane for his tyranny.



ONY nobill Clerkis flurist about this time in Itale; as, Statius, Persius, and Plutercus. And the faith of Christ began to spreid fast in al partis, throw preaching of the haly apostolis, Peter and Paule; quhilkis gave thair hale attendans, as gud hirdis, to instruct thair flok in the sicker faith, but ony respect to riches, or feir of thair liffis; quhill, at last, thay wer baith slane in Rome, be the wicket Nero. Peter wes hingit be the feit, in a place of Rome callit Mont Auri; and Paule, hedit be the swerd, in ane place of Rome callit Porta Hostiensis.

King Corbreid left behind him thre sonnis, so yong that nane of thaim micht succeed to the crown. Thair namis wer Corbreid, Tulcane, and Brekus. The first of thaim wes nurist in Britane, with his ant Voada, the vailyeant Quene of Britonis, with sic courtlie maneris and havingis, that he wes callit Corbredus Galdus; for yit amang us, al pepill that is componit and honest is callit Galdis. The nobillis, eftir the deith of Corbreid, that the croun micht remane hail to Galdus at his perfite age, maid Dardannus king: for he wes nepot to King Metellane. This Dardannus wes of sa large stature, that he wes callit the gros king. He wes richt plesand to the nobillis, afore he wes king, and richt tender to King Corbreid, baith in weir and peace. The pepil belevit, that he suld have followit the maneris of otheris wise kingis, his progenitoris; and, becaus he wes ane lusty person, of fair vissage and body, he wes gretumlie luffit amang the pepill. Nochtheles, his mind wes gevin to maist effeminat vices; as apperit in the end of his life. In the beginning of his empire, he usit the counsal of his nobillis, and wes nocht far discordant fra the maneris of ane gud prince: bot, within thre yeris eftir, he left all thingis pertenand to justice, and slaid in every kind of vice; and, be counsall of certane wikkit schrewis, his familiaris, he tuke all officis, concerning publik ministratioun of justice, fra wise and nobil men, and gave thame to vicious rebaldis, that assistit to his insolence and lust; and had all wise and virtews personis in na les hatrent than suspiciooun. At last, quhen he had waistit his substance and tresour be assistance of thir unhappy limmaris, quhilkis had na sicht to his honour, bot allanerlie to thair singular avantage; he become sa avaritious, desiring uthir mennis guddis but ony conscience or reason, that he slew, be vane causis, ane nobill man namit Cardorus, quhilk wes Gret Justice to the last king, Corbreid; and had na occasion to sla this innocent man, bot allanerlie becaus he reprüfuit his vices. Mony otheris, nobillis and innocent men, wer slane be him in that samin maner. Thir doingis maid him odius to his nobillis and commonis. At last, he kest his extreme besines to distroy Galdus, and his two brethir; traisting, becaus the crown pertenit to thaim eftir his deceis, to stabill the same with sicker firmance to him and his airis. And, to the same

effect, he send ane servand, namit Carmonak, quhilk wes corruptit with his money, to slay Galdus, and his two brethir, in the Ile of Man. Carmonak, instruckit in this maner, come in the said Ile; and, finaly, quhen he had socht lang time ane ganand oportunito to sla Galdus, he was tane, waytand in ane secret place, with drawin swerd, quhare he beleiffit Galdus to cum; and was brocht before the Gret Justice of this Ile, and accusit sa scharplie, that he revelit in quhat sort he was instruckit to sla Galdus and his brethir. Als sone as he had schawin this treasoun he was put to deith.

The nobillis, herand this treasoun, conspirit aganis Dardannus; for thay haittit him, afore, for his inhumane cruelteis; and, than, maist of all, seand him gevin to the slauchter of the kingis sonnis. And, first, thay slew al thaim that favourit him. In the mene time rais ane man, of vile and obscure linage, namit Conanus, quhilk was promovit to gret riches and honouris for his assistance to Dardannus; and maid him to gaddir the pepil, in gret nowmer, to support this tyrane aganis the nobillis: bot at last he was tane be thaim, and hingit on ane jebait. Incontinent, thir nobillis come with ane army aganis this odius tyrane, and maid Galdus thair capitane. Dardannus advertist heirof, and seand na refuge, wald have slane himself; bot he was stoppit be his familiaris, in esperance of better fortoun. At last, he was brocht afore Galdus, and slane. His heid was after schorne fra his body, and borne on ane staik throw all the army, to his gret schame; and his body cassin in ane maist vile closet.

This ende maid the odius tyrane Dardannus, the fourt yeir of his regne; in the sext yeir of Vespasiane, Empriour; fra the incarnatioun, **LXXV** yeris.

Chap. Eighth.

How mony Romane Capitanis, for thair febil administration, war interchangeit in Britane. How Galdus was maid King of Scottis. And how he was discomfist be Petulius.

HE Romanis, about this time, began to decay in Albion, be negligence of febil capitanis, and dammage of civil weris. For Swetonius, legat of Britane, for his arrogance and cruelte usit on the Britonis, was deponit; and Petranius Turpilianus, as mair merciful capitane, was send in his place. This Turpilianus, at his cuming in Britane, mesit all seditioun and trubill amang the Romanis; and randerit all thair provinces to ane new capitane, namit Trebellius Maximus, ane man of slaw curage, havand litill experience of chevalry. This Trebellius, seand gret sedition and trubill apperand to rise, throw lang peace, in his army; he randerit the samin to ane othir capitane, namit Vectius Velanus: quhilkis, on the samin maner, dantit the Britonis mair with amite and kindnes, than ony auctorite: and he was in the time of Galdus, of quhilk sall be oure history nixt following.

Efter the deith of Dardannus, the nobillis set ane counsal, and fand the said Galdus baith richtuous aire to the crown, and ane maist excellent person, dotat with sindry virtewis, and lie prerogativis; and, thairfore, crownit him in the fatall chiar of marbill.

Galdus, eftir his coronatioun, maid sacrifice to the Goddis for the felicite fallin to him; sine gaif thankis to his nobillis and remanent pepill, and promittit, to govern his realme be consultatioun of the maist prudent and nobil men thairof: throw quhilk he wan gret favour and luf of his pepil. He wes of young and flurisant age, and nocht unlik to Corbreid, his vailyeant fader. Forthir, he wes of nobill and anciant blude of baith his parentis: his modir wes the King of Pichtis douchter, discending be lang linage of kingis: quhairthrow, na thing failyeit to him that might conques the favour of his pepil. In the beginning of his empire he set him to punis the

wicket consalouris of Dardannus, be quhome the realme wes mis-governit, and brocht to gret truble. Sic thingis done, he past throw sindry boundis of his realme, and maid sic punitiou on trespassouris, that he stabillit his realme in gret tranquillite.

In the inene time come to him the Murrayis, and schew thaim re-josit that Dardannus, the invasour of the common weill, wes dis-troyit. The cumming of Murrayis was the more acceptabill to the king, that thay brocht sindry oppressouris and thevis to his justice ; quhilgis war sone efter punist to the deith. Nocht lang efter, ane counsall was set in Dounstafage, quhare mony nobill actis war devisit for the commoun weil ; and the wicket law of Ewin, quhare the wiffis of the commonis was fre to the nobillis, abrogat and an-nullit. And yit he could nocht purches the remanent cursit lawis of King Ewin to be revocat ; for all the young nobillis war repug-nant thairto.

Quhill Galdus was gevin to sic besines, come novellis to him, that ane new capitane, namit Petulius Cerealis, was send be Vespasiane, with ane army in Britane, to recover the landis tint afore be necligence of febill capitanis ; and purposit to cum haistely in Annan-dale and Brigance. Galdus richt astonist be thir novellis, howbeit he walde proclame na weiris quhill he war mair surely advertist, send his spyis to explore the counsall of Romanis. Thir spyis returnit with diligence ; and schew, how the Romanis war cumming, baith in Mers and Berwik, with mair awfull ordinance than ever was sene afore in Albioun ; the bestial drevin away ; the cornis and insicht brint ; and ane gret nowmer of Pichtis, quhilgis invadit the Ro-manis in defence of thair awin guddis, slane.

The Scottis, richt affrayit be thir novellis, said, the Britonis war unkind, quhilgis wald not advertis thaim of the cumming of Ro-manis ; considering thay laitly faucht neir to the nter exterminioun of thaimself, for defence onelie of the said Britonis. Nochtheles, Galdus set him to meit the Romanis afore thair cumming in his realme ; and assemblit ane strang cumpany, to the nowmer of fifty thousand men. Few Scottis that micht beir armour, war absent that day.

Quhen Galdus was passand forthwart on this maner, apperit sin-dry uncouth mervellis to his sicht. Ane egill flew all day, with gret

laubour, above his army ; to na les terroure than admiratioun of his pepill : for it was interprete, that the Scottis suld be distroyit be the egill, quhilk is the ansenye of Romanis. Nochttheles, Galdus requirit thaim to have gud esperance ; for he interpret, that the said day suld put the Romanis to gret lauboure. Ane armit knicht was sene fleing in the air ; and, quhen he had flosin round about all his army, he suddenly evanist out of sicht. The lift apperit dirk, and full of clouddis. Divers fowlis fell out of the air, full of blude, in the place quhare the battallis efter junxit. Galdus, nochtwithstanding thir sorowfull and uncouth prodigies appering sa suddenly in the face of his army, allegit, that thay signifyt gret felicite to his pepil ; and perswadit thaim to pas forthwart with gud esperance of victory.

In the mene time come novellis, that the Romanis war enterit in Brigance with mair pissance than evir thay come afore in thay boundis, with purpos nocht onely to fecht, bot, be plane conques, to sit downe in thay landis ; for thay had sic confidence in thair chevalry and manheid, that na power of erdryl creatouris nicht impesche thaim fra thair purpos. Galdus, na thing affrayit thairof, thocht to meit the Romanis with sic hard chevalry as he was lernit be his eldaris ; trasting, efter sa mony happy chancis falling to Romanis, that Fortoun, the instabill gidar of mortall creatouris, sall sum time bring the Romanis, be hid waching, to ruine : for the Goddis, oft times, ar sene favorabill to all pepill that justly defendis thaimself fra injure of ennimes. Sum men perswadit the king to invade nocht haistly his ennimes, bot to tary with ane few pepill, and suffer the residew of his folkis to returne hame ; to that fine, that the Romanis nicht be constraint, throw laik of vittallis, outhir to depart out of Brigance, or ellis to be trubillit with hunger, and othir incommoditeis. This counsall was weil apprisit be the nobillis. Yit mony of thaim dred thair vailyeant pepil to defaik curage be lang tary ; for the Scottis at thair first assemblance hes maist curage and spreit, and ar brokin with na thing mair than lang tary : and, for thir reasonis, na thing was sa gud as to invaide thair ennimes quhill thair fury indurit.

Galdus and his nobillis following this last opinioun, rasit his army, and brocht the samin, on the thrid day efter, in sicht of Romanis.

The grete multitude, and singulare manheid, of Romanis, sa oft as sailyeit with frequent victoryis, maid the Scottis sa astonist, that all thair esperance of victory was turnit in maist drery sollicitude. Yit, be hortation of thair prudent capitanis, thay enforsit thaimself to new curage; and maid invocatioun to thair Goddis to send thaim victory. Incontinent, baith the armyis junit, with uncredibil fury. The Silurianis,—I mene the men of Carrik, Kyle, and Cuning-hame,—in the same battall quhare Galdus was, faucht sa vailyeantly, that the richt wing of Romanis was nere discomfist. Quhen Petulius was advertist thairof, he send ane new legioun of Romanis in thair support. Thus war the Silurianis ourset. Thair followit yit ane cruel and terribill bargane, with untellabill murdir; for the capitanis faucht in sic ire, that thay pretermittit na thing that might pertene to forcey campionis. Petulius yit, ithandly went about the Romanis quhare thay faucht, and supportit thaim with new power quhare thay failyeit.

Quhill Petulius was fast vesiand his army on this wise, he beheld Galdus fechtand, with gret manheid and spreit, amid his fois; and incontinent, enkendelit with mighty curage, and desirus to conques sum hie honoure be notabill and soveraine vassalage, he tuke purpos outhir to slay Galdus, or than, magre his pissance, to put him to flight. Bot than rais ane battall mair vehement than afore; for mony of the maist vailyeant and forcey campionis among the Scottis, fechtand with perseverand manheid to the deith, war slane in defence of thair prince. Galdus, evill woundit in the face, montit on hors, and departit fra the feild. The residew of Scottis, disparit be fleing of the king, fled heir and thair to thair best refuge. The chais followit be the Romanis in sic ire, that the Scottis war slane in all partis quhare thay war tane. In this battall war slane xii thousand Scottis, and vi thousand Romanis. Galdus, evill woundit on this wise, colleekit the residew of his army, and returnit to ane castell of the Levynok. The Romanis abaid, the remanent of this yeir, in Epiak; and subdewit all the bundis of Brigance, but ony trubil of battall, to thair empire.

Chap. Ninth.

How the nobill Lady Vodicia invadit the Romanis with battall. How scho was finaly slane, and hir army discomfist.



ETULIUS, legate of Britane, richt insolent efter this victory, and desirand na les to eik the empire of Romanis, than to succeid in equale glore to his antecessouris; rasit his campe, to subdew the remanent boundis of Brigance. The Brigandis, be ithand incursionis and licht battallis, refusit, lang time, his weris; for it was defendit, be decretit of Parliament, after slauchter of sa mony vailyeant Scottis, to feild the Romanis with plane battall, or to jeoperde the realme undir the chance of ane battall.

Quhill the Romanis invadit Brigance in this maner, Vodicia, youngest douchter to Voada, quhilk was deflorit, as we schew, be Romanis, and exilit be wraith of Marius, hir gud-brothir; to revenge the pollution of hir body, and othir intollerabil offencis done to hir modir, Voada; assemblit ane army of Brigandis and Britonis, with the inhabitantis of the Ile of Man; and come with awfull battall on the Romanis, quhen thay belevit na thing les than hir invasion. At the first cumming of this army, was hard ane huge din and noyis, be sound of pepill, ilk ane exhorting othir to battall; and incontinent come sa thik schoure of arrowis and dartis on the Romanis, that the lift might not be sene above thair heidis. Thus war the Romanis sa astonischt, that thay knew not quhat was, in this suddand danger, to be done; for nouthir knew thay quhat ennimes thay war that did thaim so awfully assailye, nor yit had thay sufficient manheid to fecht aganis sa gret multitude of uncouth and strange pepill, cummand on thaim untimislie within the nicht.

Quhil the Romanis war in this affray, thair ennimes ruschit on ilk side, with sic hardiment and curage, that thay brak the trinschis of Romanis; and enterit perforce apon thair tentis, quhare the maist vailyeant and forcey championis amang the Romanis war slane. Thus

had the Romanis bene uterly distroyit, and the Brigandis perpetually deliverit of servitude be Vodicia, war nocth, Petulius come the mair haistely to thair support. For Petulius met this extreme dangeir sa prudently, that he, with birnand flammis of pik, roset, and brintstane, quhilke he had preparit aganis sic occurring jeopardyis, withstude his fayis, quhare gretest noyis was herd; and dang thaim, be force of rage and flambis, fra his tentis. Bot Vodicia sa craftely exhortit hir army aganis Petulius, that scho oft times renewit battall. Than was the bergane sa cruell, that al the nicht following was nocth sufficient to schaw the ende of thair laubouris. At the spring of the day, Vodicia was discomfist, and hir cumpany put to flicht. Petulius, efter this victory, dredand sum hid dangere occurring, inhibit his folkis to follow ony forthir on the chace.

Vodicia, provoket ilk day with mair injuris, past to Epiak, and brint the said town, with mony agit knichtis and wageouris of Romanis; to that fine, scho nicht revenge the injuris on the Romane garnisoun, quhilk scho nicht revenge on Petulius. Petulius, to punis thir offendis, send ane legioun of Romanis, and put Vodicia and hir army to flicht. Nochtheles, scho was finaly tane; and accusit, quhy scho durst pretend sic thingis above the spreit of we-men. Scho answerit, scho was thair ennime, and wald have slane hir ennime; and laikit na gud will, howbeit hir power failyeit: and had na thing in mair hatrent than prosperite of Romanis, for the gret cruelteis done be thaim to hir and hir freindis. The Romanis, but more tary, slew hir.

In the mene time, Petulius was advertist, that the Ile of Wicht and Kent-schire was rebellit, and Marius chasit. Apperit thus, plane rebellioune of Britonis, les than the trubill war the mair haistelie dantit. Thir novellis movit Petulius to returne in Britane; quhare he, with small deficulite, dantit the Britonis. The Romanis, that abaid in Brigance behind Petulius, war gevin mair to keip the landis afore conquest, than to persew the pepill with new conques. And, in the yeir following, Petulius deceissit.

Chap. Tenth.

How Julius Frontinus was maid Capitane of Britane. Of his message to Pichtis; and of thair answer. And how the said Julius invadit the Scottis with gret injuris.



FTER the deith of Petulius, ane vailyeant knicht, namit Julius Frontinus, was send in Albion with two legionis, and was plesantly ressavit be Marius. Julius, efter his cumming in Britane, went throw all the Romane provincis, and persuadit the Britonis, be mony reasonis, to persevere at the opinion of Romanis.

Als sone as he had pecifyit thaim of al trubill, he began to be desirus of fame and glore, as his antecessouris war afore; and tuke purpois to subdew the last Ilis of Albion to Romane empire: howbeit, thay war oft afore assailyeit, bot nevir vincust: and, to bring his purpos to effect, he left Marius behind him in Kent, to hald the Britonis under Romane lawis; sine came in Brigance with ane gret army. Yit, in his passage, he did na injure nor trubill to the Pichtis; for he belevit thaim, fra the Scottis war vincust, sone ouirthrawin. Be cumming of Julius in this maner, was na litill effray amang the Scottis; for that name was of gret renown and estimation amang the Scottis. This Julius, at his cuming in Brigance, vesvit the munitionis quhare the Romane sodjouris lay, and exhortit thaim to perseveir in gud curage; for, be thair manheid and virtew, it micht happen, the haill Ile of Albion to cum undir the empire of Romanis.

Sic thingis done, he send letteris to the Pichtis, desiring that thay and Romanis micht incres togidder undir ane freinschip and amite; and sumtimes remembrit thaim, of the misery and trubill falling to thaim be the weris led afore aganis the Romanis: and to have na cumpany with Scottis, for he was commandit be the Empriour, outhir to distroy thaim al uterly, or ellis to thirll thaim to perpetuall servi-

tude. The Pichtis had thair desiris in gret suspiciooun; and answerit, Thay had gret admiration, be quhat motive the Romanis nicht have ony just occasiou of battall aganis the Scottis: or quhat suld move thaim, nocht content of the empire of the warlde, to seik the last Ilis of the occiane sees, and to reif fra the Albianis thair native liberte; les than thay, be insaciabill avarice, war set to reif fre realmes but ony reason; havand na feir, nor dredoure of the Goddis, to be punist for thair insufferabill inquiteis. And, for thir causis, thay wald cum in battal aganis the Romanis, with al thair power, in support of thair confiderat freindis, for defence of thair realme and liberte; for the same was nocht only proffitabill for thair commoun weil, bot thay war als bound thairto, be sic contract that nicht na wayis be dissolvit.

Julius, in contemption of this answer, was the mair fers and properant aganis the Scottis; and come in Kyle, Carrik, and Cuninghame, quhais pepill war mair strang than ony pepill that faucht afore aganis the Romanis. Galdus, astunist be this new ordinance of Romanis; nochtwithstanding his hevy woundis gottin in this last battall, gaderit his folkis out of all boundis undir his dominioun, to defend his realme. Than followit continewall scarmussing with licht hors, but ony greit slauchter; for Galdus, be noy of his woundis, set him erar to irk the Romanis be lang tary, than to invaide thaim be battall. Followit, be thir incursionis, mony sindry chancis of fortoun. Sumtime, the Romanis vineust; sumtime, victorius: quhill, at last, the Scottis, be frequent slauchter of thair vailyeant capitanis, war attenuat, and brokin; and Galdus, be noy of the woundis gottin in this last battall, was sa wary, that he nicht nocht do the office of ane forcy champion, bot was brocht on an hors-litter to Argyle.

Within few dayis efter, the Romanis come in Carrik, Kyle, and Cuninghame, and slew 111 thousand Scottis; and, the remanent, vineust and chasit. And, after this victory, the Romanis returnit to thair tentis.

Chap. Eleventh.

How Julius Agricola was send in Britane. Of his frequent Victoryis maid on Scottis and Pichtis ; and how he subdewit sindry of thair Landis to Romane Empire.

N the nixt winter, Julius Frontinus fell in gret infirmitate, be immoderat flux of catter, generit of wak humouris; becaus the air was nubilus and donk, throw continual schouris of rane and sleit, proceeding be the hicht of montanis, and gret multitude of fluidis and lochis abounding in this regiouen. This infirmite incressit ilk day more, be uncouth and intemperat cauld; and micht be curit be na ingine, nor art of medcine. Domiciane, Empriour, advertist of his vehement dolour, causit him to returne in Italy, to recovir his heil be new air and fude; and send Julius Agricola, ane of the maist vailyeant capitannis that come afore his dayis in Britane, to succeed in his place.

The same time, the men of Annandale slew ane gret nowmer of Romanis on the bordouris of Brigance; and, throw the samin victory, persuadit the Pichtis and Brigandis, with the Silurianis, to rebell aganis the Romanis. Agricola, advertist of thir attemptatis, rasit his army, and come in Pentland, with mair diligence than ony man presumit; and, efter that he had tane and garnist all the strenthis of thair centre with his wageouris, he come to Camelon. Caranach, King of Pichtis, advertist of his cuming, gaif him battall; nochtheles, he was finaly discomfist, with all his army. Efter this discomfitoure, Caranach fled to Fiffe; quhilk is ane plenteous regiouen, liand betwix two firthis, Tay and Forth, full of woddis, lesuris, and valis, to the gret proffet baith of corne and bestial. In it ar mony louchis, full of sindry fische. This regiouen is now bair of woddis; for the thevis war sumtime sa frequent in the samin, that thay micht na way be dantit, quhill the woddis war bet down. Agricola, efter this, past with his victorius army in Annandale. The inhabitantis thairof, knawing his cuming, met him in thair

scharpest maner ; nochtheles, thay war finaly chasit, and slane. The remanent of thaim, that eschapit, war all slane be thair wiffis, the first nicht thay come hame. Agricola, proude of this victory, past to the Ile of Man, quhilk rebellit, mony yeris afore, aganis Romanis ; and tuke it with litill laubour. Quhen he had stoffit the munitionis thairof with Roman sodjouris, he returnit in Brigance, levand his army in the winter schelis. The nixt simer, he come throw Brigance, Carrik, Kyle, and Cuningham ; quhais passage maid the pepill sa astonist, that thay left thair townis desert, and fled to the montanis.

In the simer followinge, he brocht sindry nobill men of Albion before him, and exhortit thaim to polecy and civil maneris ; that thay might have tenplis and biggingis on the Romane fassion ; and to put thair sonnis to wise preceptouris, that, efter the end of Romane weris, thay might rise in virtew, eloquence, and gud havingis. Thus past Agricola the winter seasoun, instruckand the princes of Albion with sic thingis as apperit for thair commoun weill.

The thrid yeir after, he come to Striveling ; quhilk was callit, in thay dayis, the Dolorus Montane : for the inhabitantis thairof hard, sindry times, ane dolorus and lamentabil crying, quhilk come be illusioun of wickit spreitis, dessaving the pepill with vane superstition. Quhen Agricola saw the castell of Striveling set on sa strang place, he reparit and biggit it with sa crafty and sumptuous lauboure, that it apperit unwinnabill : and, nocht lang efter, he biggit ane brig ouir Forth, and transportit all his army be the same. On the morrow, he laid a sege to the castell of Montbennart, traisting to have found the King of Pichtis in it : bot the Pichtis war so astonist be the cuming of the Romanis, that thay left the castell, and come with gret diligence, under nicht, to cast down the brig of Striveling, laitly biggit be Romanis ; that the said Romanis might be inclusit betwix Tay and Forth, but ony refuge. Agricola, weill advertist thairof, returnit fra the sege of Montbennart ; and followit with sic diligence on the Pichtis, that thay war constrainit to geif battall. Nochtheles, thay war finaly vincust ; and thair king, Carranach, chasit to the watter of Tay, quhare he gat ane bait, and eschapit. The remanent Pichtis, for feir of this victory, war randerit, with all thair munitionis and strenthis. Than Agricola past throw

all boundis of Fiffe, Fothrik, and Erne; sumtimes biggand, and sumtimes castand down, the strenthis of the cuntre, quhare he plesit.

Chap. Twelfth.

How the King of Pichtis send his Ambassatouris to Scottis, desiring support aganis the Romanis. How Agricola invadit the Scottis, baith be see and land. How the King of Pichtis was slane, be sedition of his Army.



ARANACH, King of Pichtis, brokin be this last discomfiture, fled to Dunde: quhare sumtime was ane strang castell; bot it wes cassin down in the time of King Robert Brus, becaus it micht not be keipit fra Ingismen, as we sal efter schaw. The Pichtis convenit to the said castell, and exhortit Caranach, thair king, to have na disperation, howbeit his pepill war brocht to gret affliction and trubill; for gret nowmer of thaim was yit on live, baith unbrokin with weris, and sufficient, gif the Goddis war propiciant, to ding the Romanis out of Albion. For it micht happen, that the Romanis, proud and insolent efter sa mony hie victoryis, may fal, quhen thay beleif leist, in sic invy to Fortoun, to be vincust be the pepil quhom thay held of vilest reputatioun: for this instabill Goddes turnis, with suddand quhirle, the governance of mortall creaturis. Scho hes rasit mony othir realmes with gret feliciteis, afore the Romanis had dominiououn; and brocht thaim, quhen thay war in thair hie and soverane honouris, to finall rewine. It is nocht, thairfore, to be supponit, that the empire of Romanis, sen it began with mortal pissance, sall perpetually indure; bot necessar sum time to have rewine. Thocht thir and sic persuasionis of Pichtis war apprisit be thair king, yit nane of thaim micht rais his spreit and curage to ony gude esperance aganis Romanis; bot traisting thair majeste and pissance sa montit above the hicht of naturale chance, that na pepill may resist thairto.

Eftir lang consultatioun, it wes concludit, to send ambassatouris to Galdus, to have support aganis the extreme dangeir apperand to baith thair realnes, according to the band sa mony yeris continewit betwix Scottis and Pichtis. Galdus glaidlie condiscendit to thair peticionis: for he had na les indignatioun aganis the Romanis, for thair wrangus conques maid be thaim on the Pichtis, than on Scottis; and thairfore determit, erar to haisart his realme to extreme jeoperde of armis, than to leif ilk day in ithand displesour, and, finaile, be subdewit to servitude.

Quhil the confiderat kingis wer gevin in this sort to resist thair ennimes, the Silurianis, be plane rebellioun, slew all Romanis, quhare thay micht be apprehendit: and not onlie recoverit thair munitionis, bot brint all thair cornis and vittallis, except sa mekill as micht be caryit with thaim; to that fine, that na thing thairof suld remane to the proffet of thair ennimes.

Agricola, weil advertist of thir motionis, come so haistelie on the Silurianis, that he dantit and punist thame in maist rigorously wise. Nocht lang eftir, he wes advertist, that his ennimes wer gaderit in gret buschementis, uncertaine to quhat effect, aganis the Romanis. Incontinent, he followit thaim with gret violence, and chasit thaim ouir Clyde. This riveir is dividit, ane litill space, fra the riveir of Levin, quhair thay fal baith, nocht far fra othir, in the Ireland seis. And, nocht far fra the said riveir of Levin, is ane castell, more strang be strenth of ane crag than ony artificiall laubour, namit, be the pepil, Auld Cleuch; bot now callit Dunbriton, that is to say, the Castel of Britonis. Alwayes, it wes so stuffet with men and vittallis, that it micht na waye be tane.

Agricola, occupit with thir and sielik besines, ouir-past the fourt winter: and, in the spring of the nixt yeir, he causit the Romane navy, quhilk abaid, with his ordinance, in the Ile of Wicht, to cum to Lochfine, beside Argyle; that his ennimes micht understand, na landis nor seis fre fra Romane dominioune. And, quhen he had brocht his army ouir Clyde, he fand thair the men of Lenax, ane pepill unknawin afore to Romanis; and tuke purpos to subdew thaim to Romane empire. In the mene time, he gat writingis, that the Pichtis wer rebellit; and, becaus he dred gret truble to rise, bot gif

the samin wer the more haistelie dantit, he left his first purpos, and come in Pentland with ane legion of Romanis, and dantit the Pichtis. The nixt simer, he began to serche all the havinис and portis of Argyle and othir Ilis thairabout, with his schippis; and come land-gait ouir the riveir of Levin, to tak the munitionis and strenthis of the cuntry. The Romanis wer first irkit with scharpe and difficult passage, full of breris and thornis, to thair gret impediment; bot, quhen they considerit the virtew and manheid of thair anciant faderis, na thing apperit difficult to thaim: and sa, with curage ay more incressing, they dantit na les the difficult passage of the cuntry, than the pepill thairof; and, finalie, returnit, with huge pray of men and guddlis, to thair tentis.

Sic thingis done, Galdus maid ane conventioun, in Athole, of all pepil under his empire: abiding the cumming of the King of Pichtis; to that fine, that baith thair armyis beand junct togidder, they mycht the more esalie resist the Romanis. Now war the Pichtis cumand ouir the montanis of Granyebane, quhilkis rinnis fra the fut of De to the castell of Dunbritone, and wer nocht five milis fra the army of Scottis, quhen they, be unhappy chance, wer devidit in two factionis, and faucht amang thaimself, to the gret murdir of baith the partis, for ane vane cause. The King of Pichtis, seing this lamentabil cais, ran feirslic, but his coit armour, amang the preis, quhair they wer maist keinly fechtand, to have put thaim sindry; and wes slane thair, unknawing quhat he wes. The residew of Pichtis, quhilkis war left on live fra this unhappy bargane, knawing the slaughter of thair king, skalit, and returnit hame.

Chap. Thirteenth.

*How Galdus pecifyit all seditioun amang the Pichtis. And how he
faucht aganis the Romanis, and was discomfist.*

 ALDUS heirand the deith of his tender freind, the King of Pichtis, become richt sorowfull; for it constraint him to superseid his army aganis the Romanis. Nochtethles, he callit his nobillis to ane counseal: quhare he schortlie, detestand the inopertune seditioun rising amang the Pichtis, prayit thaim to ripely avise, how his realme micht be defendit in sa hie dangeir thairto approching. Eftir divers opinionis, it wes decretit to resist the Romanis, erar be frequent incursionis than set battall, fra ony forthir conques. Attour, prudent men sal pas to the Pichtis, to peacifie thaim of al seditionis; and ambassatouris soll pas in Ireland, Norway, and Denmark, to seik support aganis the Romanis.

Be this counsall, ambassatoris wer send to the Pichtis; and schew, that sic dammage and cruelteis procedis of civil weris, that na realmes may stand in sicker firmance quhare the same induris. Finalie, the Pichtis wer aggreit amang thameself of al debatis; and Garnardus maid king in place of Caranach afore deceissit. The Pichtis, as wes devisit, send thair ambassatouris in Norway and Denmark, to the effect aforesaid.

Qubil sic thingis wer done be Pichtis, Galdus assemblit aye army fra all boundis of his realme, and dividit the same in divers buschementis; be quhais wisdome and ithand jeoperdis, the Romanis wer stoppit, all the simer following, fra ony forthir conques on the Scottis. The winter following wes sa tempestuous, that na weris micht be sustenit. And, in the nixt summer, quhilk wes the viii yere of the weris maid be Agricola, come aye gret cumpany of Ireland men to Galdus and Garnardus, at Athole, quhair thay wer present for the time, with al the nobillis of baith thair realmes. On the tothir side, Agricola, knawing weill the ordinance of Scottis and Pichtis, dividit his army in thre battallis, abiding thair cumming.

Galdus, weill advertist in quhat sort Agricola purposit to invade him, changit haistely his purpos; and come, within the nicht, on ane strang legion of Romanis, quhilkis wes not far fra his army. Now had the Scottis slane the wache of this legioun, and fechtand ferslie within thair tentis, quhen suddanlie Agricola, weill convoyit be his exploratouris, come with strang buschementis, baith of futmen and horsmen on thair bakkis. Nochtheles, the battal wes fochtin with gret crueltie and slauchter on all sidis; quhill the Romane baneris, schining in the cleir Morrow, schew Agricola, with al his army, arrayit fornens thaim in battall. Incontinent, the confederat pepill gaif bakkis; and fled, throw desertis and mossis, to thair best refuge.

Chap. Fourteenth.

How sindry Almanis and Danis come in support of Scottis and Pichtis. How the Romane Navy perist in Pentland Firth.



E this unhappy battall, the confederat kingis wer so brokin, that thay defendit thaimself, thair bestiall, and guddis, al the simer following, mair be frequent incursions, than ony set battall; abiding the cuming of Danis and Norowanis to thair support. Bot the Romanis, ilk day more feirs and insolent, be frequent victoryis, and traisting na thing possibil to resist thair soverane virtew; come throw the wod of Calidon, with purpos to serche all the last boundis of Albion: and becaus thay wer stoppit be strait ground thairof, thay come ouir the watter of Awmond, and set down thair tentis nocht far fra Dunkeld, quhair Tay rinnis deip, with few furdis, in the Almane seis. This reveir, beside Dunde, is two milis braid, deviding Fiffe fra Angus. The Pichtis, effrayit be cumming of Romanis sa far within thair landis, brint ane riche town, namit Inchcuthill, quilk stude upon the riveir of Tay, that the samin suld be na refuge to thair ennimes; and fled with thair wiffis, children, and guddis, to the

montanis of Grandyeben. The samin time, arrivit in Forth, ane company of Almanis, namit Usipianis, banist out of thair native landis, for slaughter of ane Romane capitane and othir pepill undir his band ; and becaus thay bure extreme hatrent aganis Romanis, thay wer plesandlie ressavit, and ordanit to have certan landis to thair habitatioun, beside the Murrayis, for thay wer baith of a blude. And nocht lang eftir, arrivit in the firth of Tay, ane vailyeant capitane, namit Gildo, with x.ii Danis, to support the Scottis and Pichtis. Thir Danis wer the more plesandlie ressavit be Garnardus, King of Pichtis, that his common weil wes approcheand to hie dangeir. Galdus, richt glaid, and rejoising of the cumming of Gildo, come to Dunde, to gif thankis to him and the remanent folkis that come to support thair freindis ; and eftir maist hertlie embrasing, Galdus said in this wise : “ I have na litil caus of joy, maist vailyeant Gildo, seing the, with sa mony fair and lusty personis, cumin but truble in Albion, for defence of Pichtis, thy anciant linage, and us, thair confederat brethir, standing now in sic extreme dangeir and perell. We abaid mony dayis your cuming ; and now we ar mair reosit thairof than may be schawin at this time, and randeris to the and thy pepil infinite thankis thairfore ; for, be thy cuming, sic esperance is rasit in our curage, that we beleif, be your support, to vincus our ennimes, and banis thame furth of our rowmes. For quhen I behald the and thir thy vailyeant pepil, apperis sikker victory present in my handis.” To this answerit Gildo, he was cunnin to fecht for defence of his tender freindis, aganis the Romanis, and perseveir in thair opinioun to his end ; of quhilk thay suld have sone experience.

Within ane schort time efter, the confederate kingis, with Capitane Gildo, went to Forfair ; in quhilk sumtime was ane strang castel, within ane loch, quhare sindry kingis of Scottis maid residence, efter the prescription of the Pichtis, thocht it is now bot ane popil town. Efter thair cuming to Forfair, thay tuk lang consultation, be quhat ingine the Romanis micht be resistit. At last it was concludit to ceis quhil the winter season ouirpast, to eschew the vehement stormes quhilkis haboundis in this region ; and to maik thair ordinance aganis the nixt simer : als ordanit ane band of chosin men to be vigilant in sindry partis, to stop vittallis cuming to Romanis,

and that none of thame sal ische to invade the cuntre ; and to stop that na brig war maid ouir Tay, that the Romanis cum not, be the samin, within thair landis.

In the simer following, Agricola returnit to his navy, lyand that time on the Ireland sees, and commandit thame to pas about all the boundis of Albion, to that fine, that na part thairof suld be unknawin to Romanis in his time. The marinaris, as he commandit, pullit up salis, and brocht the Romane navy about the outmaist boundis of Albion ; be quhilke viage thay saw al the Ilis thairof, with Orknay, Sky, and Lewis. Bot quhen thay war cuming nere Pentland Firth, quhilk devidis Caithanes fra Orknay, thay war advertist of the dangerus flude rinnand, thair, with sa quhirlland and contrarius tide, that na schippis may pas the samin but extreme dangeir ; nochtheles, thay conduit certane fischaris, quhilkis had perfite cognoscence of the said parellis, and promittit large proffet, to gide thame throw the said dangeir. The fischaris and othir landwart pepil quhom thay conduit to the effect aforesaid, traisting na way to revenge thair deith bettir than to caus sa mony vailyeant weirmen and crafty marinaris de with thaim at anis, led the Romanis quhare maist dangeir occurrit. Thus wes ane pert of the Romane navy drevin, be violent streme, on craggis, and brokin : and otheris kest thair ankeris, to eschew the craggis ; nochtheles, be stormy wallis, thay firit thair takillis, and sank down in the middis of the see. Ane certane of thame come to land on burdis and tabillis ; nochtheles, thay war all tane, or ellis slane be the inhabitantis of the cuntre. The remanent navy of Romanis seing this calamite fall to thair fallowis, abaid abak ; and returnit, but ony perell, the same way thay come.

Chap. Fifteenth.

How Agricola brocht his Army ouir Tay. How Galdus come in defence of the Pichtis with xl.m Scottis; and of his Orison maid to exhort his Army to Battal.



GRICOLA, na thing knowing the calamite falling to his navy, beildit ane brig of tre ouir Tay, and transportit his army be the samin, nocht far fra the fute of Granyeaben; sine left behind him mony gret buschementis of weirmen, to keip the said brig unbet down be gile or violence of ennimes. The Pichtis, richt affrayit of his cuming, send thair ambasatouris to Galdus, to schaw him the dangeir appering to baith thair realmis, and desirit him to cum with al his power.

Galdus gaderit, afore thair cuming, xl.m chosin men, out of all boundis within his realme, al of ane mind to de at anis, or ellis to recovir thair liberte be extreme jeoperde of armis; and, finaly, he brocht the said army, with na litil labour, ouir the montanis of Granyeaben, quhare he met the remenant army of Pichtis and Danis abiding his cuming. Efter lang consultationis, Galdus, becaus the charge of battal was gevin to him, said in this maner: “ Als oft as I behald the caus of battal, and our necessite, vailyeant championis, my spreit risis; traisting this day, be your consentis, sal be the beginning of liberte to al Britane. We ar yit fre of servitude; and thair is na land nor see beyond us sickir in timis cuming, for feir and minassing of Romane navy. The preis of armis and chevalry ar na les refuge to febill creaturis, than honour to vailyeant championis. The battallis afore past, quhare sindry chancis of fortoun hes occurrit, war ay led be our manheid and prudence; and we, as maist vailyeant pepil of Albion, dwelling within the bosum thairof, hes keptit us evir unthirllit to Romane dominion, be strait ground, and remote situation of us in the outmaist partis of the wrold. Now ar the Romanis cumin to the last boundis of Albion, traisting to schaw thair magnificence in na thing mair than

“ in subdewing of unknawin and outmaist regionis to thair empire.
“ Beyond us ar na pepil nor refuge, bot only desert roukis, and
“ streme of sees; and within us ar our ennimes, garnist in our mu-
“ nitionis, quahais proud tyrannyis can not be eschewit be meiknes
“ or service. The Romanis, revaris of the warld, now quhen na
“ thing restis unspulyeit be thame, serchis baith erd and sees. Gif
“ the ennime of Romanis be riche, thay ar avaricius; gif thair en-
“ nime be pure, yeit thay ar ambitius, and desiris glore in thair sub-
“ dewing. Nothir may the est nor the west pertis of the warld sa-
“ ciat thame. Thay ar the only pepil of the warld that regardis po-
“ verte and riches be equal affection. Thay stele, thay sla, and
“ reiffis kingdomis be injust conques; thay ar nevir in peas, bot
“ quhen thay ar solitar. The children, quhilkis nature hes ordanit
“ maist deir to thair parentis, ar drawin be Romane army to servi-
“ tude: our wiffis, virginis, and matronis, quhilkis detestit thair un-
“ bridillit lust, ar deflorit, outhir be fenyet amite or feid. The frutis,
“ quhilkis nature hes producit of our ground, ar expendit be thaim
“ in maner of tribute. Our handis worne with thair surfet laubour.
“ We ar injurit nocht only with unpleasand wordis, bot maist vio-
“ lently strikin in our bodyis. Quhairthrow we ar mair thirlit than
“ ony brutall beistis to lauboure: for sic beistis quhilkis bene borne
“ to servitude, ar coft and nurist be the biar; bot we ilk day byis
“ and fedis our awin servitude: and, as new servandis ar in deri-
“ sioun amang the quent servitouris, sa we, as vile and last pepill of
“ the warld in thair sicht, ar daily invadit to the deith. Now restis
“ na kind of lauboure, service, nor punition, to saif us fra thair ty-
“ ranny; for all pepil ar the mair suspect to Romanis, the mair fe-
“ rocite and manheid be knawin with thame. Thairefore, maist vail-
“ yeant championis, sen hope is nane to have the Romane benivolence,
“ spreit yow with curage, and have mair respecte to your eternal
“ glore, than to youre fragill livis: for gif Voditia, the vailyeant
“ lady, micht birn ane towne, quhen it was strangest with Romane
“ sodjouris, and deliver the Brigandis perpetually of servitude, gif
“ fortoun had bene propiciant; it is nocht to be traistit bot we,
“ quhilkis ar mair vailyeant, sal recover our liberte at our first
“ meting. And traist nocht bot Romanis may be vincust. Quhat
“ nowmer of thame bene laitly slane in the wod of Calidon! Be-

“ leve ye, that the virtew of Romanis be als gret in time of battal
“ as thair lust is in time of peace. Thay conques honour be our
“ civil weiris and dissension: thay turne the vices of thair ennimes
“ to the glore of thair army; quhilkis is gaderit of divers pepill un-
“ der divers mindis, and sall, thairfore, skaill als fast sindry, quhen
“ adverseite occurris, as thay assemblit togidder now in thair maist
“ prosperite. Traist ye, that Franchemen, Almanis, and Britonis,
“ quhilkis ar ane gret part of thair army, sal have ony othir affec-
“ tion or faith to thair ennimes, bot invade thaim quhen thay se oc-
“ casioun. Traist na thing other, bot dreid and terrour ar sa un-
“ sicker bandis of luf, that quhen the same ar removit and put
“ aside, extreme hatrent sproutis in thair place. Mony persuasionis
“ apperis in us, to have victory: for the Romanis hes nocht thair
“ wiffis present, to exhort thaim to curage; nor yit thair agit faderis,
“ to reproche thame of fleing. Few of thame hes ony certane cuntry
“ or habitation, les than it be reft; thairfore, the Goddes, in puni-
“ tioun of thair iniquiteis, hes laitly randerit ane certane of thane
“ vagabound and vincust in oure handis. Be not astonist, I pray
“ yow, for this vane visage and schining of gold and silver; quhilk
“ may nocht defend nor wound yow. Lat us find our handis in the
“ bront of ennimes. The Britonis sal knew thair caus of battall;
“ the Gallis sall remember thair anciant liberte; al pepil of uncouth
“ nation sal leif thame at thair first juning. Na occasioun remanis
“ of dredour. Our castellis ar left be thaime wast; the townis quhare
“ thair agit capitaniis dwelt, betwix evill obeisance and injust em-
“ pire, ar brocht to servitud. Heir ar your capitane and army, to
“ win glore and riches: yondir ar your ennimes, to put yow to sur-
“ fet tribute, or ellis to condampne yow to winning of mettellis, or
“ sum othir kind of punition; the quhilkis sal be perpetuall to yow
“ and your posterite, les than the samin be recoverit in this battal.
“ Quhen ye, thairfore, ar to pas fortwart, remember baith your el-
“ daris past afore, and your posterite and successouris to cum.”

Chap. Sixteenth.

Of the Orison maid be Agricola to his Army; and of the huge victory falling to Romanis be discomfitour of Scottis.



FTER this orison of Galdus, followit, in the army, gret noyis and clamoure, be desire of battal. On the tothir side, thocht Agricola beheld his army richt impatient of lang tary, yit he said to thame as followis: “ Now is “ the viii yeir, gud companyonis, sen ye, be felicite of Romane “ majeste, with trew and faithfull laubouris, hes conquest Annan-“ dale, the Ile of Man, Carrik, Kyle, and Cuninghame, with mony “ othir regionis, quhilkis was nevir subdewit nor knawin afore to “ Romane empire. Ye have sustenit na les fortitude aganis your “ fais, than pacience and laubour almaist aganis nature. Ye have “ na caus to be penitent of me your capitane, nor I to be penitent “ of yow, my gud men of armis. Ye have subdewit may boundis “ of Albion than ony armyis did afore; and I have won mair ho-“ nour than ony othir capitane did afore me. We have not socht “ the last boundis of Albion be rehers and fame of otheris, bot per-“ sit the samin be strang army and camp. Quhen ye, my gud com-“ panyonis, war oftimes wery, ouirpassing the difficill montanis, “ mossis, and fluddis of this regiouun, I had gret compassion, and “ knew every ane of you be your voce, criand, ‘ Quhen sal our en-“ nimes haif curage? quhen soll thay meit us?’ Now thay ar cum-“ and furth of thair dennis, quhare thay war hid. Now may your “ manheid and virtew be sene. Every thing sal be plesand to thaim “ that ar victoriis, and unpleasand to thaim that ar vincust. And, “ as na litil honour apperis to us quhilkis hes ouirset sa mony strait “ montanis, woddis, fludis, and dangerus firthis of this region; sa “ soll it be ane vassallage of soveraine honour, howbeit it be dange-“ rus, to withstand fersly oure ennimes, and put thaim to flicht. “ And, thocht mony placis of this cuntry be unknawin to us, and “ hes na gret plenty of vittallis, yit we laik na manheid nor curage,

" in quhilk lyis the haill frute and glore of armes. Forthir, sa far
 " as pertenis to me, I think, nothir is the capitane nor the army
 " siker that gevis thair backis to ennimes; thairfore, honest deith
 " is better than schamefull lif; and hele and honour ar situat baith
 " in ane place. Forthir, it war na gret schame to our honoure, how-
 "beit we war defait heir in the last and outmaist partis of the wrold.
 " Gif ye war now to be assailyet be uncouth and strange ennimes,
 " I suld exhort yow to fecht, be vassalage of othir vailyeant pepill.
 " Now have e to your honoure, and knew, that thir pepil that
 " standis with face arrayit aganis yow, ar nocht bot the refuse of
 " thay febil cativis quhilikis war discomfist laitly within the nicht
 " be your onely noyis and clamoure. Thay ar the maist febill bo-
 " dyis amang all the Britonis; and remanis, for that caus, sa lang
 " on lif. And as maist forsy and strang bestis, be thair awin jeo-
 " perdyis, ar oft slane; and as maist cowart and febill bestis saiffis
 " thaimself for dangeir, and fleis quhen thay heir the sound of ony
 " cumpaines: sa, all the vailyeant Britonis ar slane, and nane of thaim
 " ar now on lif, saif thay onely that be cowart flicht hes debaitit
 " thair miserabil livis, and wald pretend na resistance, war not
 " thay ar now tane but refuge: quharthrow ye may haif honest
 " victory. Pas, gud compayneonis, throw your ennimes, and finis
 " the LI yeris weir with this solempne day; that it may be put in
 " kalender, as end of all your weris. Do sa, that nothir your lang
 " tary, nor rebellioun of ennimes, may be impute to youre necli-
 " gence."

Skarsly was this orison endit, quhen baith the armyis, be birnand
 desire of battall, junit. Agricola arrayit his folkis in sic crafty or-
 dour, howbeit thay wer of les nowmer than thair ennimes, that thay
 sall nocht be assailyet nothir on ane side nor othir. Galdus, with
 na les providence, arrayit the formest part of his army on ane hie
 mote, to discomfis the wingis of the Romane army; and exhortit
 thaim, with schill voce, to perseveir in ithand bergane, and outhir
 to conques immortall glore, or perpetual servitude; for that was thair
 last day, in quhilk thay nicht win outhir honour or schame. The
 first battall was fochtin on dreich: for the Albanis, Danis, and No-
 rowanis, schot ane huge nowmer of arrowis and ganyeis at thair first
 contering; nochtheles, the Romanis eschewit the samin with thair

targis. The bowmen, efter flicht of arrowis, faucht with swerdis and litil buklaris, as we do yit in our days, mair semand for nicht-boure weir, than ony defence of realmis; throw quhilk oure pepill hes gret dammage, quhen thay meit with ennimes of uncouth realmes. The battal of speris, quhilkis stude nixt the bowmen, in the brount with Galdus, ruschet furthwart at anis, and bure mony of thair ennimes, with mony bludy woundis, on thair backis. Followit the billis, axis, lang swerdis, and ledin mellis, with sic slauchter, that the Romanis had bene all utterly discomfist, wer nocht ane band of Almanis, quhilkis war send laitly in Britane, come the more haistely to thair support. Attour, this Agricola was sa circumspect, that he stoffit his army with thir Almanis in al partis quhare he saw ony danger occurring. The Albianis seing thaimself, heir and thair, sa cruelly ourset, war astonist; nochtheles, seing na refuge bot in thair handis, thay ruschet al togidder in ane knot, but ony feir of deith or woundis, with deliverit mind, to fecht for thair realme and liberte to the deith. Followit, ane sorowfull battall; for the confederat pepill facht mair be force than craft of chevalry. Mony of thaim, sloppit throw the body, fel downe above thair slaaris; otheris offerit thaimself wilfully to be slane; otheris, efter thay had eschapt thair ennimes, slew thaimself. The place quhare thay faucht was bludy; all onercoverit with leggis, armis, and wappinnis, skatterit throw al boundis thairof. Baith the armyis faucht with perseverand hatrent, quhill the nicht constrainit thaim to sever.

The confederat pepil and thair freindis quhilkis war left on live efter this unhappy battall, fled to the nixt montanis, quhare thay biggit firis to ourpas the nicht. Than come to thaim gret confluence of men and wemen, seikand thair freindis with mony sorowfull sichis, murning, and teris. Incontinent Galdus, that thir dolorus spraichis and cryis sall nocht be patent to his ennimes, commandit all his army to schout with schil nois and sang, quhill the wemen war expellit fra his camp. The confederat kingis seing, on the morow, thair power sa brokin that thay micht nocht renew battall, commandit thair folkis to returne hame; and left behind thaim ane huge fire, birnand with bald and vehement flammes, on the said montanis, to the hevin, that thair ennimes micht have na presumption of thair departing.

In this unhappy battall war slane XII thousand Romanis, and XX thousand Scottis and Pichtis, with mony othir pepill that come to thair support. Gildo, the vailyeant capitane of Danis, ruschand our feirsly on his ennimes, was slane on the samin maner with the maist part of his cumpany.

Chap. Seventeenth.

How Agricola reparit his navy, to pas about the Ilis of Albion, and brint sindry schippis of Danis. Of uncouth Mervellis sene in Albion. And of the deith of Agricola.



HE day following this unhappy nicht, maid the discomfiture of Scottis patent to thair ennimes: for thair camp was void, and plenist with nocht bot deid bodyis; but ony quhispering on the montanis, quhare maist gild was hard afore. The Romanis, traisting thir tithingis proceeding be slight, inhibit ony forthir chace to be. Otheris, proud, efter thir feliciteis, commandit vailyeant and chosin men to serche all the woddis and strenthis, to espy gif ony hid waching of enimes war within the samin. Ane certane of Romanis following this last counsal, followit sa unwarily, that thay war all slane.

On the morrow, Agricola, seand his army sa brokin that he nicht nothir renew the samin, nor yit pas ouir the montanis of Granyebene but extreme dangeir, past, with his victorius army, in Angus; quhare he abaid al the nixt winter. And, in the mene time, he was adverstist, how the maist part of his navy was lost; and the residew thair-of, brokin with gret calamite, arrivit in Argyle. Agricola movit nocht his contenance for thir novellis; for he fermely belevit his army, for this smale calamite, deliverit of all othir trubill that was appering thairto, be invy of Fortoun, efter sa lang prosperite and victoryis. Incontinent, he reparit his schippis, with new marineris, and otheris quhilk had sicker experience of al dangeris and firthis in the occiane sees; and commandit thaim, as he war to fecht aganis all chance of fortoun, to pas the samin way, thay yeid afore, about

the Ilis of Albion. This navy, be prosper windis, arrivit finaly in the mouth of Tay, and brint the flot of Danis, quhilk lay in the said firth all the winter afore.

Sindry mervellis war sene in Albion, afore this last battal that Galdus faucht with Romanis. Mony birnand speris war sene fleand in the air. Ane gret part of the wod of Calidon apperit birnand all nicht; howbeit na thing apperit thairof in the day. Ane flot of schippis was sene in the aire. Ane schoure of stanis was in Athole; siclike, in Angus, ranit paddokis. Ane monstoure was borne in Incheuthill, with doubill membris of men and wemen, with sa abhominabill figure, that it was distroyit be the pepill. Thir uncouth and wonderfull mervellis maid the pepill astonist: for thay war interpret to sindry facis; sumtimes to the gud, sumtimes to the evill.

The Empriour Domiciane, heirand thir hie and vailyeant dedis of Agricola, was richt sorowfull in his mind, havand na litil indignatioun, that the fame of ane private man suld obscure his imperiall estait; and, thairfore, send haisty writtingis to him to returne, al excusatioun ceissing, to Rome, to ressasse the governance of ane new province, namit Syria, vacand be deceis of Actilius Ruffus, last legat thairof.

Agricola, sone after his cuming to Rome, was poisonit be invy of the said Domiciane, Empriour.

Chap. Eighteenth.

How Tribellius was send in Britane. How the Romanis fell in gret divisioun amang thaimself. And of the huge victory gottin on thaim be Galdus.

FTER the deith of Agricola, Gneus Tribellius, was maid capitane of Britane, and fand the Romanis in gret felicite. Howbeit the samin schort time indurit; for ane gret contention rais betwix this new capitane, Tribellius, and ane othir capitane, namit Tribellianus, quhilk of thame suld have maist auctorite above the army. The first was au-

torist be the army, for he was cosing to Agricola; the secund was autorist be the Empriour. Efter lang contentiou, Tribellianus deparlit with ane nowmer of chosin men in France.

Galdus, knawing weil this seditioun amang the Romanis, come, with ane army of Scottis and Pichtis, in Angus, quhair this new capitane, Tribellius, wes, with the residew of Romanis, for the time. Trebellius, astonist be his suddane cumming, tocht al thing wes to be done than erar be manheid and gud werkis, than be ony consultation; and, nochtwithstanding that his army bure hatrent aganis him, he went forthward with displayit baner. At last, the army seand him nocht do the chargis of ane vailyeant capitane, dischargin him of auctorite; and chesit Sisinnius, quhilk wes brodir to Trebellianus afore rehersit, to governe thaim in that maist dangerus aventure. Sisinnius refusit this charge, and said, gif he ressavit auctorite in sic extreme dangeir, it suld be occasioun of gret divisioun and truble within the army.

Quhill the Romanis wer at sic debait, Galdus come, with arrayit hoist, in sicht. The Romanis, be suddane cuming of Galdus, micht nocht array thaim in thair best avise; notheles, baith the armyis junxit, with birnand desire on ilk side. The confederat pepill faucht with perseverand manheid: quhill, at the last, Sisinnius, woundit to the deith, fled out of the feild, and mony othir Romanis with him. Incontinent, all the army of Romanis gaif bakkis, and fled to the nixt wod: on quhom followit the Scottis and thair confederat freindis, with ithand slauchter; quhill, at last, Galdus, dredand sum dangeir to fall be thair continewal feirsnes, callit thame, be sound of trumpet, to his standart. Nochttheles, thay wer sa far enragit with hatrent aganis the Romanis, thay couth nocht be brochit thairfra, quhil the nicht bereft thaim the licht.

The confederat pepill passit the nicht following with gret joy, and blithnes of dansing, singing, and playing; siclike as wes usit in thay dayis. On the morrow, the preistis come with processiou, in thair maist reverend habitis, and gaif thankis to the Goddis; quhilkis, eftir mony calamiteis sustenit be thaim, mair than L yeris, in continewall battall, had grantit anis ane honest victorie of thair ennimes.

Chap. Nineteenth.

How the Romanis war doung out of all partis of Scotland, and sindry times vincust, be the vailyeant Galdus.



HE Romanis, brokin in this maner, and seing na sickirnes, to abide in Angus, aganis sa feirs and cruel ennimes; rasit thair tentis, and come, within the nicht, to Incheecuthill: and, quhen thay had transportit the residew of thair army ouir Tay, thay brak the brig thairof, that thair ennimes suld nocht follow.

Galdus, advertist of thair fleing, partit the riche spulye that wes gottin in this last feild, amang his army, effering to thair manheid and vassalage; and, on the morrow, he tuke consultatioun quhat wes best to be done. Be this consultatioun it wes concludit, that the Scottis sall persew the Romanis, and ding thaim furth of all partis of Albioun. The Scottis incontinent ruschit to harnes, with all the army of Pichtis concurring to thair opinioun, and followit on the Romanis; that the injuris so oftimes done be thaim suld be anis sufficientlie punist. At last, quhen thay wer cumin to Incheecuthill, thay fand the brig bet down; and returnit, thairfore, to Dunkeld, quhair thay transportit all thair army be ane brig of tre.

The Romanis, heirand thair cuming, ordourit thaimself in gud array, and chesit ane new capitane, namit Chelius, to governe thaim in this maist dangerus battall. Sone eftir, baith the armyis junit, and faucht lang time with uncertane victorie: quhill at last the Romanis wer vincust, and chasit with ithand slauchter, quhill thay wer drevin to the wod of Calidone. In this battall were slane v.m Romanis, and ii.m of Scottis and thair confederatis.

Sindry cumpanyis of Britonis, eftir this victorie, come to Galdus. For als sone as it wes schawin in Walis, that the Romanis wer twyis vincust be the Scottis and Pichtis, incontinent all the princis of Britane maid rebellious: and eftir that thay had slane the Romanis in al partis, quhair thay micht be apprehendit, thay send am-

bassatouris to Galdus, with mony riche jowellis ; schawing thaim rejosit, that eftir sa lang rage of Fortoun aganis him, he began to be victorius and fortunat.

In the mene time, the Romanis send thair ambassatouris to Marius, King of Britonis ; lamentand the hevy injuris done to thaim be Scottis and Pichtis ; and schew, gif thay gat nocht support in time, thay suld be shamefully doung out of all boundis, conquest with sa gret difficulte afore be Romanis. Marius answerit, Throw rebellioune of Britonis in sindry partis aganis him, he stude in dailie feir of his life. Attour, the young wenchis, gestouris, and commoun pepil, sang dailie ballattis, in derisioun and skorne of Romanis : and be that way, he knew not quhay wer freindis or fayis to him in Britane. Attoure, Domiciane, Empriour, wes so haitit for the cruell slauchter of the senat and cieteyanis of Rome, that nocht appetit bot civil battallis : thus nicht na support come in Britane. For thir causis, his mind wes set, erar to keip ane part to him of Albion with sicker firmance, than shamefully to tine the hail empire thairof. This answere maid na litill affray amang the Romanis.

In the mene time wes schawin, that Galdus wes within ten milis fra the tentis of Romanis, with ane army, baith of men and wemen that nicht beir wapinnis, to ding the Romanis out of all boundis of his empire. The Romanis, for feir of his cuming, left the wod of Calidon, and fled in Brigance. Galdus, weil advertist be] quhat passage his ennimes wer departit, set him, with maist diligence, to follow on thair bakkis ; that he nicht distroy thaim, but ony recover, afore thay gat ony support fra Rome. In this voyage, Galdus left the seging of the castellis and strenthis stuffit be Romanis, and come with gret diligence in Brigance. And, thair, met him ane huge nowmer of pepill, sic as haitit the Romanis, all rejoising atanis, that the said Galdus, brokin with sa mony calamiteis and truble, wes nevir disparit, bot evir reserving him and his pepill to better fortoun. Galdus ressavit all thir pepill with plesand visage, and persuadit thaim to have gud esperance : for, as than, he wes nocht passand to battall, bot erar to sicker victorie ; and the hard fortoun sa lang rageand aganis him and his pepill, wes brokin : and, thairfore, tra-

tit, behind sa mony cruell extorsionis done be ennimes, to have, sumtime, ane gloriouſ victory of thaim.

The Romanis, ſeing the confiderat pepil cum in Brigance with ſa hie curage and spreit, wer affrayit. Nochtheles, conſiding in na thing mair ſurele than in thair handis, thay went forwart in thair best array, ſayng, That day wes othir the gait to thair triumphant glore, or than perpetuall ſchame. Than ilk ane exhortit othir to have hope of victory, ſen thay wer to fecht aganis ane vane and barbar peple; and to haif in memory the gret manheid and virtew of thair eldaris, with more respect to thair common than ſingular weill; and erar to de in the battal, than to incurre the ſchame and dishonour that thay miſt nevir eftir do away. Quhil the Romanis wer exhorting thaimſelf with thir and ſiſlike wourdis, come haiftely ane hevy ſchoure of arowis and ganyeis, ſchot on thaim be thair ennimes.

In the mene time, ane cumpany of Britonis, quhilkis wer laitlie ſend be Marius in ſupport of Romanis, come to the Scottis and Pichtis. Mony of the Romanis, be fleing of thir Britonis, defakit curage: otheris, ſeing na remeid, tuke the more spreit, and, with gret force, ouirſet the wingis quhair the wemen faucht. Than Galduſ, richt circumſpect in all his werkis, ſend ane cumpany of fresche men to thair support, be quhom the Romanis wer drevin ſum part abak. The wemen wer more cruel than ony men, quhen thay ſaw thair ennimes vineſt.

Thus had the Romanis bene invadit on ilk ſide, wer nocth thay had thair tentis at thair bakkis. Mony of thaim perſeverit in battal, and wer ſlane; otheris fled to thair tentis: on quhom the Scottis followit ſa fast, that thay ſlew thaim, heir and thair, and keſt thaim in the fowſeis; intending, be filling of the fowſeis with deid bodyis, to make ane reddy gait to thair tentis. Nochtheles, the Romanis defendit thair tentis with incredibill laubour and manheid, and wald not ſuffer thair ennimes to entre on thaim: quhill the nicht perſeverit thaim on ilk ſide.

Chap. Twentieth.

Of the Message send be Romanis to the confederat Kingis; and of thair answer. How the confederat Kingis gaif peace to the Romanis.

The Scottis, nochtwithstanding the cuming of the nicht, went to the mixt wod, to bring treis to fil the fowseis, quhare the tentis of Romanis lay; otheris maid sindry instrumentis to breke down thair trinschis; otheris wacheit all nicht to stop thame fra fleing, and abaid the cuming of the day with birnand desire.

The Romanis, seing, on the morrow, sa gret ordinance reddy at anis to invade thaim, desirit assuverance of the wache, to send oratouris to the confederat kingis, to treit peace. Part of Scottis said, Na conduct suld be gevin to Romanis, and na alliance to be maid with thaim; bot victory to be usit with maist rigoure, and all the Romanis, that fled to thair tentis, slane; that, be thair slauchter, al othir pepil may take exampil, how odious it is baith to Goddis and men, to invade realmes and pepill but occasioune of injure. Otheris said, Best was to use thair victory with mesure, and not to be ouir insolent and proud for this felicite; sen every pepill ar thirlit to sic uncertane lawis of fortoun, that aftir adversite cumis prosperite, and aftir prosperite cumis adversite: and, for this reason, the Romanis suld be herd, and thair ambassatouris saiffit be the law of pepill. This last counsal wes apprisit.

Incontinent, come four honorabil men, with fair vissage, cloithit, in thair maner, with na les precious than semand abulyementis, and fell on kneis afore the confederat kingis. Als sone as thay wer rasit, ane of thaim, to quhilk the charge wes committit, said in this wise: “The Romane army and capitaniis, dantouris of the wORLD, desiring “your amite and freindschip, invincibill Kingis, requiris you humilie “of grace, quhom thay have, thir mony yeris, persewit with auful “and kene battall; and traist fermelie, na thing nicht have cumin,

" be glore of marciall dedis, sa hie to your honour, or mair worthy
 " to have memory, than to have the ambassatouris of Romanis, be
 " quhom all kingis and realmes bene subdewit, dejecket at your feit,
 " and humilie desiring grace. Ye have vineust us, we grant; our
 " life and deith now depending in your handis, be hatrent of Goddis,
 " quhilkis ar commovit aganis us for the injust battall that we have
 " led aganis yow. Use now sic victorie as ye think respondent to
 " your honoure; and vincus your ire, sen ye have vineust us, the
 " dantouris of the warlde: and, gif ye can nocht refrane your ire,
 " than sla us all, as we have weill deservit. Nochtheles, sen ye,
 " quhilkis ar heir in the farrest nuik of the warlde, precellis all pe-
 " pill in manheid and virtew; understand, that na thing may schaw
 " your humanite mair than to be mercifull eftir sa huge victory.
 " We knew now the hatrent of Goddis; we knew your chevalry;
 " and desiris peace, under quhat conditionis ye pleis."

Than Galdus maid answere to thame, and said, The Scottis and Pichtis, the last pepill of the warlde, sen thair first beginning, desirit na landis bot thaim onlie that wer gevin to thaim be benivolence of Goddis, and faucht nevir bot in thair pure defence. The Romanis wer knawin to thaim first as cursit revaris of realmes, be insaciabill avarice. Eftir that thay had maid weir on Britonis ane hundredth and fifty yeris, with sindry chancis of fortoun; and quhen thay had subdewit the warlde, and the maist part of Albion, to the gret damage of pepil thairof; thay ar vineust be the pepill quhome thay held maist rude and febill; and, finalie, drevin, but esperance of better fortoun, to thair last refuge within thair tentis; to be ane notabill exempill, in times cumming, how unsicker bene the stait of man be chance of fortoun. And thocht sindry nobill men in his army counsallit, this victory to be usit on thaim with maist rigour, traisting thair injuris na othirwayis to be eschewit; yit he wald be more propiciant, thinkand sufficient, baith for the time present and to cum, that the ambassatouris of Romanis, dantouris of the warlde, wer dejecket at his feit, humilie desiring mercy. Nochtheles, it plesit him weill, be consent of his confederat bruthir the King of Pichtis, to gif peace under thir conditionis: The Romanis sal pas out of all boundis pertenand to Scottis and Pichtis; and rander all

munitionis and pledgis, with the guddis reft fra thaim during the weiris; and sall gif thair gret aith, nevir to invaid Scottis nor Pichtis, bot evir to stand thair gud freindis in times cumming.

The Romanis ressavit peace in this maner, and departit but ony forthir injure

Chap. Twenty-first.

How all the strenthis of Scotland war recoverit fra the Romanis, be conditioun of peace; and of the deith of Galdus.



E Gneus Tribellius, the Romane army was nowmerit, quhen Agricola left it, to LX thousand men; bot at this time, throw frequent victoryis maid on thaim, thay war skarsly xx thousand left on live. Efter thair departing, all the boundis of Scotland quhilkis war garnist afore be Romanis, war randerit to Scottis and Pichtis. Efter this, Galdus skaillit his army, and went to Epiak, quhilk was the principal eiete of Scotland, and began to institute his pepill in civil maneris. And, to the fine, that na man of his realme, be occasion of sleuth, sall use reiffis on the cuntry, he send all superfew pepil to be wageouris to the Britonis; sine rewardit his nobillis, ilk ane after thair vassalage provin in his weiris. Than Galdus went throw all boundis of his realme; and, at his entres in ilk town, the pepill met him with sound of trumpat and clariona, to his honour and loving.

Quhill the pepill war gevin to laude and magnifie thair prince on this maner, rais gret contentioun betwix the Scottis and Pichtis, for certane debaitabill landis, that lay betwix thair realines. This contentioun rais be evill-dedy men, that nicht suffer na peace, bot socht occasioun to breke the cuntry. Nochtheles, the two confederat kingis met finaly togidder in the wod of Calidon, and pecifyit all debaitis amang thaimself.

Galdus ragne mony yeris efter in gret felicite, and occupyit his pepill in virtewis laubouris and exercition; and deceissit at Epiak, the xxxv yeir of his regne, maist vailyeant prince that evir rang

above the Scottis: fra the incarnation of God, c.iii yeris; fra the beginning of the warld, v.m.ccc.ii yeris. His body was buryit beside Epiak, with funerall pompe, and gret lament of pepill. To quhome ane maist precius sepulture was rasit: in quhilk was in-gravin, how he recoverit his realme, be soverane manheid, fra the Romanis. Mony huge pillaris war rasit about his sepulture, to testify his precellent virtew, and glore of chevalry; and, that his memory sall nevir peris, be decreit of Parliament was commandit, that the landis namit afore Brigance, sal be callit, in time cumming, Gal-dia; becaus this nobil prince maid ane end of all his weris in thay partis. In our dayes, that region is callit Galvidia, be corruption of langage; that is to say, Galloway.

This history, in sa far as we have schawin of Caratak, Corbreid and Galdus, Kingis of Scottis, is drawin, sum part fra vulgar Croniklis, sum part fra Cornelius Tacitus. For we have nocht onely writtin his sentence, bot als his wordis; that the redaris, baith of Romane story and Scottis, may understand ilk history concordant with othir, and knaw, be testimoniall of oure ennime, how vailyeantly our nobil elderis hes fochtin, for this realme, aganis Romanis. And, to the mair pruffe heirof, we have inserit the eloquent orisonis of Galdus and Agricola, word in word as Cornelius Tacitus rehersis thaim, in this our quhatsumevir werkis.

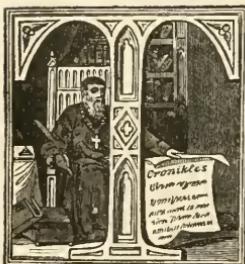
And sa endis heir the Fourt Buке of thir Croniklis.

The Fift Buke.

HEIR BEGINNIS THE FIFT BUKE OF THE CRONIKLIS OF SCOTLAND.

Chap. first.

Of the vicius King Lugtak; and how he was slane for his unhappy life and tyranny.



HE vailyeant prince Galdus endit, in maner afore rehersit; succedit his sonne, Lugtak, ane odious and mischevous tyrane. He was als far haitit with the pepill for his vice, as his fader was luffit for his virtew. He was far different fra his fader, baith in maneris and ingine; gevin to his eis and lust. He slew mony of all the riche men in his cuntry, for na othir caus bot allanerly to confiske thair guddis. He gaif the ministracion of justice to maist wrangus and avaricius men; specially sic men, that war gevin to conques guddis to him but ony reason, or sicht to justice. Followit, continewall reiffis, in al partis of his realme, but punitioun: gretest schrewis maist autorist, and virtuous personis maist ouirthrawin. This odious tyrane persewit his nobillis be

vane causis; sum of thaim banist, and othiris slew, that he micht conques thair landis and guddis. He had sic affectioun to reiffairis and oppressouris, that he namit thaim brethir and counsalouris in his wrtingis; and luffit nane sa weill as him that culd find ingine to reif his subdittis. The remanent dedis of his unhappy life ar sa detestabill, that thay ar mair worthy to be hid, than drevin in ony mannis eiris. For he, with unbridillit lust, fulyeit his anttis, his doucheris, his sisteris, and his sister doucheris; and was penitent of na thing, bot only that he micht nocht suffice to compleit his lust with thaim all.

His horribill dedis war sufferit twa yeris be his nobillis. Bot na thing movit thaim sa mekil, as his scornefull detractioun; be quhilk he callit thaim auld dotand fulis. He had nane sa familiar to him as fidlaris, bordellaris, makerellis, and gestouris, and siclike men of vile estimatioun; and cled thaim with publik auctorite, beleving all thingis to succede weil be thair governance. Bot his cruelteis and foly micht nocht be lang unpunist. For, sone efir, ane counsal was set be him at Dounstafage, to punis sindry men that reprevit his vice: in the mene time, rais sic debait betwix him and his nobillis, that he was slane, with all his cursit cumpany, in quhome he gaif baith the governance of his body and realme, in the thrid yeir of his regne. He was buryit with riche pompe in Dounstafage; bot the bodyis of his unhappy counsalouris war left on the feildis, to be devorit be the houndis.

Chap. Second.

Of King Mogallus; and how he come with an Army aganis the Romanis. Of his Orisone maid to the Sepulture of Galdus.



UGTAK, the tyrane, endit in this maner, Mogallus was maid king; for he was nepote to Galdus, gottin of his doucher. This Mogallus, after his coronation, set him to follow the wisdome and maneris of Galdus, his gudschrif; and to kepe the faith and promis to Romanis and Britonis, be the peace afore contrackit. And, that his pepil might leif in quiete but ony seditioum, he reparit every thing that was afore misgidit be the tyrane Lugtak; and restorit the religioun of Goddis, with the samin ceremonis as thay war first institute: traistning, fra he had gottin the benivolence of his Goddis, quhilkis war ennimes to his pepil for the abhominabil life of Lugtak, that al thingis suld succede the better. The Scottis began to rise ilk day in esperance of better fortoun, seing thair king follow the behavengis of his gudschrif, Galdus, and reddy to reforme al enornmiteis of his realm.

Nocht lang efter, come ambassatouris fra Pichtis to Mogallus, desiring support aganis the Romanis and Britonis; quhilkis war laitly cumin, with fire and swerd, in Pentland, and slane ane gret nowmer of pepill, in defence of thair awin guddis. Siclike, the men of Galloway and Annandale complanit, that ane huge pray of guddis war tane be Romanis out of thair landis.

Mogallus, havand ingine na les gevin to chevalry than werkis of peace, rejosit to have occasioun of battall; that he might, be sum notabill vassalage, be comparit to his vailyeant antecessouris: nochttheles, he send his ambassatouris, desiring redres of the dammage be thaim done. Thir ambassatouris gat nocht bot ane answer full of hie contemptioun and skorne. Than Mogallus tuke the Goddis in witnes, that baith the faith promittit to him be Romanis was brokin, and his message contempnit. And, sone efter, he rasit his army, and come in Galloway: quhare he visyit the sepulture of Galdus,

his gudschir ; and, quhen he had maid certane ceremonis, after the custome of thay dayis, he fel on kneis, and said : “ O vailyeant and “ invincibill prince, quhilk, efter sa gret adverseite of fortoun, did “ recovir the realmes of Scottis and Pichtis with huge difficulte ; “ and dang thy pissant and riche ennimes, be favoure of Goddis, “ out of thir boundis, with na les honoure than manheid ; we, thy “ native pepill, quhilkis wirschippit the, on live, with mair reverence “ and lufe than may be tauld, fallis now on kneis, with lamentabill “ voce, before this thy eternall sepulture, the last refuge to us in “ extreme neid, beseking humly thy funerall goist to be our helper “ aganis our ennimes, quhom thou sumtime maist vailyeantly vin- “ cust in thir boundis ; and prayis the, gif thou hes ony auctorite “ afore the Goddis, for thy singulare virtew schawin to us in the “ erd, to suffer nocht us, thy posterite, to be ouirthrawin with dis- “ pitefull ennimes, quhilkis invadis us but titill of battall. Suffer “ nocht thy fame, O vailyeant campiou, to decay now amang us, “ be victory of thy injust ennimes ; sen thay ben sa oft vincust be “ the in thir boundis, and drevin, be thy singulare manheid, to im- “ plore thy mercy in thair last refuge : quhairthrow, thy name em- “ paring sall na wayis bot evir indure in terroure of thy fais.”

Als sone as Mogallus had maid his prayer to Galdus in this maner, all the army began to embras his image ; and maid thair prayer thair-to, for happy passage, and returning in thair jurnay. The wod weimen, sic as war inflammit with divine spreit, skurgit thameself, to make thaim seme the mair religious ; and, be advise of Druides, the solempne preistis afore rehersit, thay maid solempne cursimis on the Romanis, for violation of thair faith and band, afore contrackit.

Chap. Third.

How the confiderat Kingis come with thair Armyis aganis the Romanis. Of the Orison maid be Mogallus and Lucius Anthonius to thair Armyis; and how the Romanis war discomfist.

 OGALLUS come, not lang eftir, in Annandale, to meit Unipane, King of Pichtis; for he abaid his cumming, with ane weil arrayit ost of Pichtis. Als sone as baith thair armyis was assemblit togidder, thay went baith in Westmurland and Cumbir, quhilkis war, as than, provinces of Romanis. And, first, thay brocht ane huge pray of men and guddis fra the samin; and the residew, that micht nocht be tursit, put in fire. The inhabitantis, for feir of thir injuris, fled to York; and complanit to Lucius Anthonius, Romane capitane, of the cruelteis done be Scottis and Pichtis. Lucius than assemblit ane strang army, and went forthwart, with greit ordinance, to dant his ennimes.

Mogallus, seing his ennimes in sicht, callit his men to the standart, and said in this maner: “ I find na thing, vailyeant campionis, “ that bringis nobill men soner to loving and glore, than to resist “ the injure of ennimes, fechtand for thair realme and liberte to the “ deith, that thay be nocht subdewit to schamfull servitude; as “ may be weill provin, baith be example of uncouth pepill, and be “ singulare virtew of our vailyeant antecessouris. Remember be “ quhat manheid and wisdome King Edere supportit Cassibilane, “ King of Britonis, quhen Julius, the Romane consull, was doungin “ out of Albion; be quhilk he conquest na les honour to himself, “ than to his posterite. Sielike, the nobill Caratak was na les de- “ corit be his virtew in merit of loving, quhen he, fechtand sa oft- “ times be sindry chancis of fortoun, micht nevir be vincust. And “ thocht he had ane hard fortoune, and brocht as presoneir to Rome, “ be treason of Cartumandia, yit he had invincibill spreit, defend- “ ing ay his realme to his last dayis: and was haldin, thairfore, in “ sic reverence and dredour amang his ennimes, that he was finaly

" restorit baith to his realme and honouris; to be exampill to all
 " othir after him, to have excellent fortitude aganis all trubil. Sik-
 " like, Corbreid, his bruthir, in defence of his liberte, faucht sa
 " cruelly aganis the proude Romanis, and brocht thaim to sic irre-
 " coverabill affliction and slauchter, that they micht nevir invade
 " this realme during his liffe. Remember, alsua, my guds chir,
 " Galdus, maist vailyeant prince that evir was afore his dayis: how-
 "beit, he was invadit with perpetuall trubill, fechtand nocth only
 " aganis Romanis, bot aganis Fortoun: sa oft vineust, and chasit;
 " his army brokin; ilk calamite incressing above othir: yit, with
 " michty curage, he perseverit ay in hope of better fortoun: quhill,
 " at last, be lang battall of virtew aganis his unhappy infortuniteis,
 " he ouirthrew Fortoun, and conquest, be merciall prowes and man-
 " heid, sa interminabil victory and glore, that he vineust his en-
 " nimes with III sindry battallis; and brocht thaim, be fleing to
 " thair tentis, to sic subjectioun and mesiry, that quhare thay culd
 " nocth be content afore of the haill boundis of the wrold, thay micht
 " nocth weill defende thaimself within thair sorowfull tentis: throw
 " quhilk he gan the excellent glore, that nevir afore succedit to levand
 " creature; havand the ambassatouris of Romanis, be quhome al
 " kingis and realmis be subdewit, dejeckit at his feit, desiring grace.
 " In mair witnes heirof, the place quhare thir Romanis war defait,
 " is callit Galloway; that the fame of his illuster werkis sall nevir
 " evanis, bot ay remane in recent memorie. Forthir, the mair
 " strang, the mair pissant that his fais war, the mair glore succedit
 " to him, and his pepill. Heirfore ye, my gud cumpayneonis,
 " quhilkis ar the posterite of thay forcey campionis that sumtime
 " faucht aganis the Romanis with the said Galdus, remember that
 " your battall is, this day, only aganis thame quhilkis hes afore sa
 " oftymes bene vineust be your chevelry, and remanis only on live
 " be your mercy. Consider weill quhat ye ar: for ye ar victouris,
 " unbrokin of curage, and defendouris of your realme, liberteis,
 " wiffis, barnis, and native Goddis; and ar to fecht for na ambu-
 " tioun nor avarice, bot allanerly be constant virtew. Consider als,
 " quhat schame it is to thinke that Romanis may nocth be vineust;
 " sen thay have bene sa oft before defait. Traist fermely, the same

" virtew and fortoun is into youre handis, as was in youre eldaris. " Pas forthwart, vailyeant championis, for victory is present in your handis; and put your vineust fais to flicht: for all thingis sal fol " low as ye pleis, gif ye have curage." Mogallus, be thir wordis, inflammit the mindis of his army to battall.

On the tothir side, Lucius Anthonius was na les diligent perswading the Romanis, be vehement orison, to do vailyeantly, be exemple and imitation of thair forebearis; and to remember thaim, be quhat difficill laubouris thay lel battallis, and vineust thair forcey and strang ennimes. Remembring thaim als, how thay war than to fecht aganis ane barbar pepill, but virtew, and movit to battall be wodnes and fury; be quhilk baith thair manheid and reason was confundit, and movand thaim to battall be fuliche hardiment: and, thairfore, quhen maist dangeir occurrit, thay war sone discomfist and brokin. He desirit thame als, to have confidence in the Romane virtew, and take na feir of thair bludy, cruell, and unarmit ennimes, devidit amang thaimself be perpetual sedition; and nocht assemblit for luf and weill of thairself, bot onely for hatrent of thair fais. " Take youre " wappannis," said he, " with sicker esperance of victory, and ye " sall conques infinite glore but straik, and recovir the landis tint " afore be sleuth of Gneus Tribellius."

Skarsly war thir wordis said, quhen baith the armyis junit, with mair ardent ire than may be tauld. The Romanis schot thair dartis, and the confederat pepil thair arowis, ganyeis, and stanis. Quhen the wemen, of quhilkis gret nowmer was in this army, had cassin incredibill multitude of stanis, thay tuke thair awful wappannis, and faucht above the cruelte of men; ruscheand on thair fais but ony feir of woundis or deith. The strenth of the ground was na les support to oure folkis than impediment to oure fais; for thay knew nocht the ground, and fell sometimes in swardis of mossis, and sum time in well-eys, throw quhilk thay war oft times devidit in thair fechting. Yit the battall was cruelly fochtin in all partis; specially in the middis, quhare the capitaniis inflammit the curage of thair army: the Romanis contending to saif thaim fra thirlage of barbar pepill; and the Scottis, to keip the victory gottin be manheid of thair eldaris. Efter lang and laborius battall, thay left thair swerdis, and faucht with schort dageris. And, becaus sa innowmerabill slaunch-

ter was on all sidis, and nane of the armyis appering to geif place to othir, the capitaniis on athir side war penitent that thair armyjunit that day. At last the Scottis and Pichtis, be innative ferocite, began to put thair ennimes abak; nocht as thay war discomfist, bot eschewing sum thing the fury of battall, becaus thay nicht na forthir resist the multitude of thair ennimes. Quhill Lucius beheld sa hie dangeir appering to his folkis, and was exhorting thaim to renew battall, he gat sic ane straik with ane arow, that he nicht na mair tary, bot fled out of the feild. Incontinent, all his army fled to the nixt woddis. Ane cumpany of thaim war stoppit to cum to thair fallowis; and, nocht knawing quhare to fle, war slane be Scottis, becaus thay wald nocht be takin presoneris.

Chap. Fourth.

How Adriane, Emprioure, come in Britane; and biggit ane strang wall, to saif the Britonis and Romanis fra Scottis and Pichtis. How he returnnit in France, and left Victorine to be Capitane of Britane.



Ow was the sonne fast tending to his occasion, quhen the confederat pepill, be sound of trumpat, collectit the residew of thair folkis fra the chace, and passit the remanent of that nicht with incredibill blithnes, singing, dansing, and karoling. At the spring of the day, thay gaderit the riche spulyeis of slane men.

And in the mene time, quhen the two kingis war takand consultatioun for the weill of thair army, was schawin that ane cumpany of Romanis quhilkis war eschapit fra this last battal, war within twa milis to thair army, gangand will, and nocht knawand be quhat cuntre or partis thay nicht maist esaly fle. Incontinent, ane band of Scottis went to thaim, and left none of thaim on liffe; for thay refusit to be takin. On the morow, the confederat kingis maid sacrifice, as the gise was in thay dayis, to thair Goddis, for the victory falling to thame: sine tuke diligent examinatioun quhat personis

did maist vassalage in this last battall, and rewardit thaim thairafter.

Lucius Anthonius, vincust in this maner, send to the Emprioure Adriane, schawing quhat trubill was laitly fallin in Britane be weris of Scottis and Pichtis, and desiring him to send, haistely, support in Britane; otherwayes the Romanis sal be shamefully doung out of all boundis thairof, or ellis subdewit to servitude of barbar peple. Adriane, Empriour, to dant this rebellioun, come with ane huge army in Albioun. Eftir his cuming, he wes advertist how the Scottis, with more cruelte than afore, wer cuning in the Romane landis, ceissing fra na maner of cruelte that micht be devisit on the inhabitantis thairof. Adriane, astonist, and richt desirus to revenge thir offendis, come to York; quhare he remanit, with the remanent army of Britonis, quhill he wes providit with twa monethis vittallis, to pas on the Scottis and Pichtis. Sone eftir, he rasit his campe, and, with gret difficulte, brocht the samin our Tyne; and on the fourt day eftir, he come in the landis quhilks wer waistit be the Scottis. And becaus he fand every thing that micht nuris his army, distroyit, he began to inquire, of quhat life and condition thir pepill benc, that maid sic extorsionis in the Romane landis. It wes schawin, thay wer ane rude and undantit pepill, and lay thairfurth all winter, nochwithstanding the cauld frostis and stormis; and lay at sic strenthis and mossis, that thay micht not be persewit but extreme dangeir to thair invasouris. For thr causis, he left purpos to pas ony forthir: and to keip thaim fra all incursionis of ennimes in times cuming, he beildit ane huge wall of fail and devait, richt braid and hie in maner of ane hill, fra the mouth of Tyne, fornens the Almane seis, to the flude of Esk, fornens the Ireland seis. This wal was LXXX milis of lenth. It is said in our croniklis, that this dike wes begun be Adriane, and endit be Severus, the Romane Emprioure; and callit The Wal of Seveir. Bot we, following Veremond, callis it The Wal of Adriane, fra the first foundoure.

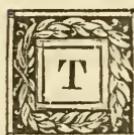
Sone eftir, Adriane past in Westmureland and Walis, quhare he wes advertist of new rebellioun maid aganis him be the inhabitantis of the said land: nochtheles, he behavit him sa prudently in this mater, that the principall movaris thairof wer punist, and the centre restorit to his opinioun. Eftir this, he come to London and Kent,

and rewardit the nobillis of Britane, for thair faith and obedience kepit to Romanis. Sic thingis done, he returnit in France, with Lucius Anthonius, quhilk wes than trublit with gret infirmite; and left Victorine in his place. This Victorine, eftir the departing of Adriane, stuffit all the castellis and strenthis of Britane with new munition and wageouris, to resist the violence of Scottis and Pichtis. Followit, mony yeris eftir, gret tranquillite amang the Britonis.

Chap. Fifth.

How Scottis and Pichtis partit the landis beyond the Wall of Adriane.

How King Mogallus was degenerit in corruppit lif; and slane, for his tyranny.



HE Scottis and Pichtis partit amang thaim al the landis of Britane lyand beyound the wal of Adriane, in this maner: All the landis fornens the Ireland seis wer gevin to Scottis; and the landis fornens the Almane seis, to Pichtis. The strenthis lyand nixt the wal of Adrian war garnist with gret munitionis, to keip the countre fra injure of Romanis. Bot we returne to our historie.

The residew of Mogallus liffe was in quiete, but ony uncouth or domestik weiris: nochtheles, this huge victory of Romanis maid him degenerit fra virtew in maist detestabill vices; for he was sa gevin to avarice and lust in his eild, that he eschamit of na maner of vice nor oppresioun done aganis his liegis; defloring the wiffis of his nobillis and commonis, but ony schame, or respect to thair estait; and nocht onely deforsit virginis and matronis, bot annullit all constitutionis and lawis maid for punitioun of sic horribill dedis. Attour, to aggrege his tyranny, he gave licence to theiffis and revaris to take the gudis of thair nichtbouris, gif thay wantit; but punitioun; and slew all the riche men of his cuntry be vane causis, and confiscat thair gudis. He was the first king that statute, the gudis of banist or condamnit personis to be confiscat to the kingis use, but ony respect to thair wiffis, children, or dettouris. Afore that

time, the gudis, landis, and possessionis of all condampnit personis come, but ony pley, to fre dispositioun of thair wifis and children. This law, quhilkis schawis weill the cursit avarice of Mogallus, is yit observat, but ony revocatioun, in this regiou. And yit the horribil dedis of this tyrane nicht nocht be lang unpunist: for the nobillis and commonis, impacient to suffer sic tyrannyis, conspirit aganis him, and instruckit certane men to wait ganand place and time for his slauchter.

Mogallus, knawing the nobillis conspirit aganis him on this manner, tuke consultatioun of certane juglouris, quhilkis war reicht frequent in thay dayis, to fle in the Ilis; and to dissimill his passage, he went to his bed sonar than he was wont, as he had bene strikin with suddane infirmite. Sone efter, he armit him with his halkrig, bow, and arowis; and fled, with two servandis, to the nixt wod: and left behind him the residew of his cursit cumpany, as ane tyrane dois, that confidis in no creature. The nobillis that war conspirit aganis him, beand advertist of his fleing, followit on him sa scharply, that he was finaly comprehendit and slane; the xxvi yeir of his regne; fra the incarnation, CXLVIII yeris: Anthonius Pius beand Emprioure, and Phiacus Albus regnand above the Pichtis.

The heid of Mogallus was borne on ane staik to the nixt towne, quhare ane multitude of pepill war gaderit, to his perpetuall schame. It was devisit be the pepil, that his body suld be cassin to the houndis and revanus beistis; nochtheles, the nobillis, movit be the worthy dedis of Galdus, his gudschir, commandit his heid and body to be buryit amang the kingly sepulturis of his progenitoris. This shameful and unhappy end maid Mogallus, degenerat fra the vir-tew of his antecessouris.

Chap. Sixth.

Of sindry nobill Clerkis. Of the vicius King Conarus; and how he was degradit of all auctorite, and his servandis hingit for thair wicket counsal.

 RA the deith of Dardannus to thir days, war mony excellent clerkis in sindry partis of the wold: as Quintiliane, oratoure; Serapio, medicinar; Philo Jow, philosophour and oratour; Caius Plenius, secundus, that wrait the History Naturall, in xxxviii bukis, with na les treuth than eloquence; Cornelius Tacitus, writar of historyis, quhom we have followit in this werke; Cecilius Plenius, secundus, oratoure; Suetonius Tranquillus; Ptolomeus, maist excellent in mathamatik, quhilk brocht the cosmography of Ptolomy, afore rehersit, to ane better knawlage, with mony new additionis; L. Apuleus, oratour; Aulus Gellius; Plutercus Cheronius, philosophour. And in thay dayis war excellent poetis: as Juvenale, Silius Italicus, Mercialis, with mony otheris.

About this time the Romane princis persewit Cristen pepill with gret cruelte, and brocht gret nowmer of thaim to marterdome, nocht knawing quhat constance was in the religioune of Cristin faith; quhilk incressit ay the more strenthy, that it wes persewit be tyranny; and agmentit with na thing sa mekle as be secharp persecutioun. Bot we will return, quhare we left, to our historie.

Mogallus micht weil have bene nouemerit, in the beginning of his empire, amang maist nobill princis: bot, in the end, he wes nothir worthy to be king, nor yit ane levand creature, and deservit weil the end that he gat. Forthir, his sonne Conarus, quhilk succedit eftir him, had litil better fortoun or maneris; for he instrukit his men, with hid waching, to sla his fader, and so be unnaturall cruelte he succedit to the crown. In the beginning of his empire, he dissimilit the vices to quhilkis he wes naturally inclinit. Als sone as the realme wes stabillit to him in sicker peace, he waistit al the pub-

lik rentis pertenand to the crown, in his infamit lust; and gave braid landis and riches to maist vile and diffamit creaturis, becaus thay lovit his corruptit maneris and vice: and be counsall of thir wickit schrewis he governit his realme, detesting all nobill and virtewis men of his realme; and set him to induce his peple to superflew and riatus bankettis, contrar the temperance of his antecessouris. At last, quhen he had waistit all his treasour and substance in mony schamful wayis, he convenit his nobillis to ane counsal; in the quhilk he schew, be lang orison, the honest and triumphant cheir of his hous, as na litill glore suld be gevin thairto. And becaus his rentis and treasour wes noct sufficient to sustene the samin as he usit, he desirit ane generall stent to be tane throw the realme, of ilk person eftir his faculte, to sustene his hous and servandis according to his estait riall and honouris. It wes answerit be his nobillis, that thay nicht noct gif ane haisty deliverance in sa gret ane mater; becaus he desirit certane thingis, quhilkis wer nevir desirit be ony othir princee afore: and for that cause, thay suld degestlie avise, and schaw to him thair mind concerning the same, on the morow. Thir nobillis, in the nicht following, convenit to thair secreit counsall. And becaus thay fand the king of evill governance, thay concludit to degraid him of his auctorite and kingdome. On the morow, thay convenit with thair king in counsall, and said to him, that thay had na litill wounder, that the rentis pertenand to the crown nicht noct suffice als weill to him, havand his realme but ony trubill, in peace, as it did to othir maist nobill princis, his progenitouris, afore, baith in weir and peace. The nobill Galdus, that recoverit his realme, desirit nevir stent of thaim, for na maner of chargis that he sustenit aganis his ennimes; knawing weil how odius it was to the pepil, to seik ony new exactionis on thaim. And yit the governance of Conarus was unlike to the nobill Galdus. For Galdus, be counsall of prudent men, removit all provocatioun of lustis fra his army, with all othir thingis that nicht maik thaim effeminate; gevand his lauboure to defend his subdittis, and to resist his ennimes. Be contrar, Conarus was drownit in lust, passing his life amang maist vile and abhominabill creaturis; pretending ay to governe the realme, quhen hieast besines occurrit, be thair unhappy counsall; disherising the nobillis of the realme, to

maik up his mischevous limmaris. And finaly, efter sa mony importabill wrangis done be him, he had socht ane thing richt uncouth and odius to thaim, to be ane preparative to othir kingis, his successouris, in times cuming, to seik new exactionis on thaim, that all thair riches and guddis micht cum finaly in his handis. Bot his unhappy counsalouris, and misgidaris of the realme, sall nocth one-ly be frustrate of thair intentionis, bot brocht to sic estait, that thay sall mister litill reward or riches fra him in times cuming. For thay war profoundlie resolvit, baith to degraid him of his kingdome and honouris, and to punis his wicket consalouris to the deith; that all pepil of vile and obscure linnage may take exempill to abuse realmes and kingis, and that kingis may understand quhat dangeir is to thaim to be injurius tyrannis to thair subdittis.

Conarus, heirand thir wourdis, said, " How dar ye, mischanc " fulis, pretend sic thingis aganis me and my servandis? This trea- " son, that ye have devisit aganis me, sall turne in dammage of " yourself; and ye sall be punist in maist cruell maner that may be " devisit." The nobillis answerit, that he was unworthy to be thair king; for he sufferit the realme to be distroyit be insolence of vicious limmers. Incontinent rais ane huge nois and clamour amang thaim; and in the mene time, certane wicht and rank men tuke him be the middill, and bure him, perforce, to ane quiet chalmer: quhare he remanit, the residew of his dayis, in miserie. His servandis, that wer occasioun of his corruptit life, nurisand him in vice, wer tane and hinggit on jebaitis, as thay deservit.

Chap. Seventh.

How Argadus was maid Governour of Scotland, during the time of Conarus in presoun. And of his life and governance.



ONARUS beand degradit in this maner, the nobillis chesit Argadus, capitane of Argyle, to be governour of the realme, sa lang as Conarus wes in presoun. This Argadus, in the beginning of his auctorite, tuke gret

laubour for ornament of commoun weill; and stanchit theft, reif, and slauchter, and all othir sic exhorbitant crimes, with mervellus craft and prudence: havand sic moderatioun, that he semit nothir to slaw, nor yit to cruell, in administratioun of justice: throwe quihilk, he wes traistit to be ane mirrour of virtew to all nobill princis. And yit, as oft occurris, gud forton turnit his mind fra justice: For he set aside al gud maneris, and governit his realme, quhen hieast chargis occurrit, be domistik counsall, and nurist seditionis intestine betwix the gret princis of his realme, to cause thaim have the may erandis with him. He maryit the Prince of Fiffis doucher, and be affinite thairof drew the Pichtis to his freindschip, that he mieht be the more strang amang his awin pepill. The nobillis, impacient to suffer his viciis, callit him to ane counsall: quhare he wes scharply reprevit, that he, chosin governour be thair auctorite, for the virtew than appering in him, suld make him nocht onelic to follow the vicious tyranny of Conarus, quhom thay deprivit for his detestabil dedis, bot als to mary with uncouth blude but thair avise; and giding the realme be privat counsall, to the gret dammage of the common weil; and hes tint schamefully the gud name that he conquest afore, in the beginning of his auctorite.

Argadus, heirand him reprochit in this wise, set furth mony teris, and desirit his nobillis to have him excusit for that time be thair benivolence, and nocht to punis him according to his demeritis: for he promittit to amend al enornmiteis done be him, in quhat sort thay plesit. The nobillis, movit be his humill wourdis, continewit him still in auctorite, and kest al his counsalouris in presoun.

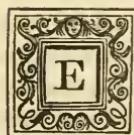
Argadus, correcket be his nobillis in this maner, governit the realme in gud justice, and did na thing, in times cumming, concerning publik materis, without consultatioun of his nobillis. And becaus divers townis and cieteis of the realme had ouir large previlege in administratioun of justice, he minist mony of thair prerogativis, and commandit thaim to punis na thing bot small crimes; all hie offencis to be replegit to his gret justice. He maid extreme deligence to serche thevis, revaris, and oppressouris; speciallie thaim that maid heirschippis in Argyle, ilis, and othir partis adjacent: And ay, quhare thay wer apprehendit, thay wer hingit, but ony mercy, on jebaitis. He commandit all personis, that had ony office or aucto-

rite of him, to abstene fra sic thingis as micht mak thaim inebriat or dronkin, to cause thaim have sum preeminence and wisdome above the commonis. He commandit al scudlaris, tavernaris, dronkartis, and othir sielike vyle pepill, devisit more for lust than ony necessar sustenance of men, to be exilit within ane certane day. The day beand run, he commandit thair guddis to be confiscat, quhare evir thay micht be apprehendit.

Finalie, the commoun pepil, sum part be benivolence of Argadus, and sum part be thir institutionis, wer reformat in gudde maneris. Quhill at last Conarus, be lang seiknes and malancoly, quhilk he tuke for his incarceration, deceissit the xiv yeir of his regne; Anthonus Aurelius beand than Empriour.

Chap. Eighth.

Of King Ethodius the First, and how he pecifyit the Ilis. How the Scottis and Pichtis brak down the wall of Adriane; and faught aganis the Romanis, with sindry chancis of victory.



FTR deith of Conarus, the nobillis, be generall convention, maid Ethodius king: for he wes nepot to Mogallus, gottin on his sister. Ethodius, eftir his coronation, rewardit Argadus, governour, with landis and riches, for his gud ministracion of justice during his time; and maid him generall lieutenand of his realme.

This nobill prince past in Ilis, and pecifyit the same of all debaitis. At his returning in Albion, he wes advertist that the Romanis had brokin down the wal of Adrian, and in place thairof hes beildit gret strenthis of treis, stanis, and devaitis; and be the samin, maid mony heirschippis in the landis of Scottis and Pichtis, of quhom ane gret nowmer wer slane, in defence of thair awin guddis, and the remanent discomfist.

Als sone as Ethodius hard thir novellis, he send ane herald to Victorine, desiring redres to be maid within xv dayis; with certificatioun, gif the samin wer nocht done within the said tyme, he suld

recovir the samin be force of battal. It was answerit be Victorine, that this last pray of guddis was takin be Romanis, to recompens sindry othir heirschippis maid afore be Scottis and Pichtis; for thay war ane seditious pepil, and confiderat only for dammage of thair nichtbouris; as apperit cleirly, becaus thay brak first the said wall of Adrian, and beildit sindry strenthis fornens the samin, to trubill the Romanis and Britonis, but ony sicht to peace afore contrackit. Ethodius, movit be this answer, send his ambassatouris to the King of Pichtis, and desirit him to cum, with his folkis, agane ane certane day, to recover thair guddis, tane be Romanis. The King promittit to be reddy, as was desirit.

The Romanis, weil advertist of thir materis, providit ane huge ordinance of battall aganis thair ennimes. The confiderat pepil rasit thair armyis at the day prefixt, and brak down the wall of Adrian in mony partis, and enterit, with maist cruell heirschippis and slauchter, in the landis of Romanis. In the nicht following, the Romanis slippit by the tentis of Scottis and Pichtis, and come, baith in Mers and Berwik, to draw thaim out of the Romane landis. The confiderat kingis, weil advertist thairof, come, with gret diligence, on the morrow, to rescours thair landis. Incontinent, baith the armyis ruschit togidder, and faucht, with sindry chance of victory: for the richt wingis war victorius on ilk side, and the left wingis discomfist. The mid batallis faucht ithandly, quhil the nicht bereft thaim thair sicht. And sa baith the said batallis severit, on thair awin will, but ony victory. On the morow, al the wemen that followit the Scottis and Pichtis to this battal, seing the feild desert, gaderit the spulyeis of slane men, and returnnit with the samin in Scotland.

This battall was sa sorowful, that the yeir nixt following was in quiet, but ony motioun of weiris.

Chap. Ninth.

How Victorine was deprivit of auctorite, and Calphurnius Agricola send in his place. How Calphurnius reparit the wal of Adrian, and returnit to Rome.



ICTORINE, seing his army brokin in this maner, wrait to Aurelius, Emprioure, and schew all this trubill that fell to Romanis be this last battall, with every circumstance afore rehersit.

The Emprioure, traistin this trubill fallin to Romanis be febill curage of Victorine, deprivit him of all auctorite, and send Calphurnius Agricola, quuhilk was nepot to Julius Agricola, afore rehersit, in his place.

Calphurnius, at his cuming in Britane, assemblit ane large power of Britonis and Romanis at York, to invade the confederat pepill: and first maid sacrifice to the goddis, to have victory on his ennimes; sine rasit his camp, and come beyond the wall of Adrian: quhare he fand, be frequent weiris, al the landis waist, but ony cornis or frutis; all the townis brint be Scottis, that na lugeing suld remane to thair ennimes. Calphurnius, nochwithstanding thir direptionis, went forthwart with his army, and invadit baith Mers and Pentland with irrecoverabil skaithis, and slew the inhabitantis thairof, in al partis, but ony mercy or ranson. Sic thingis done, he returnit to York, and remanit thair, the winter following, with the residew of his army; makand provision to invade the Scottis and Pichtis agane the nixt simer.

In the mene time, he gat letteris, that Welchmen, with sindry othir pepill of Britane, wer rebellit; and, be the said rebelliou, mony cieteis and townis that stude at the opinioun of Romanis, brint and heryit, and the inhabitantis thairof cruelly slane. Calphurnius, dreidand to tine the landis conquest afore be sa huge dificulte, in persewt of new rowmis; left the Scottis and Pichtis, and maid him, with all diligence, to renew the wall of Adrian, that the

samin nicht be ane targe, in times cumming, aganis the violence of Scottis and Pichtis. Sone efter, he gat sindry craftsmen to clenge the fowseis, and to repair the said wall in all partis, with touris and bastailyeis rising in the strangest maner that nicht be devisit. And quhen the wal was reparit in all partis, he left ane band of weirmen to debait the samin fra violence of ennimes, and went with the residew of his army on the Welchemen: and thay, with na les diligence, met him in arrayit battal. Noclicheles, thay war finaly vineust and chasit.

Skarsly was this battall pecifyit, quhen haistely followit ane othir, be rebellioun of the Ile of Wicht. The inhabitantis thairof come with proude baner aganis the Romanis, and war vineust on the same maner as afore. The confederat pepill, scand the Britonis dantit in this wise, held thaim in thair awin rowmes, but ony invasiooun of Romanis; dreidand the samin chance of victory, in this Calphurnius Agricola, that was afore with Julius Agricola, quhilk subdewit sa mony regionis of Scottis and Pichtis to Romane empire.

Calphurnius, heirand, be thir exploratouris, how the confederat pepill war skalit, but ony molestatiooun done to his pepil; maid him to meis al seditionis, gif ony war rising, amang the Britonis. And quhen he had pecifyit thaim on all debaittis, he returnit, be command of Anthonius Commodus, Empriour of Rome.

Chap. Tenth.

How Trebellius was send in Britane, and was vincust be the Scottis and Pichtis. Of the rebellion of Britonis aganis him; and of his message send to the Empriour.



FTER the departing of Calphurnius, ane new capitane, namit P. Trebellius, was send in Britane be the Emprioure. This Trebellius governit Britane mair be benivolence and favoure, than ony auctorite. He usit the counsall of Britonis in his hie besines; and did gret honour to Lucius, King of Britonis, commanding him oftimes, be his writingis,

to the Emprioure, that he was baith luffer of the communoun weil of Rome, and ennime to all thaim that hatit the empire thairof. Trebellius come in sic favour to Lucius, King of Britonis, be thir commendationis, that he belevit na thing might succede to his dammage in Britane: and began, thairfore, to schaw his fenyet mind, as man of insaciabill avarice; for he slew mony riche men in Britane, only to confisck thair gudis, and otheris banist, to the same effect.. Thir cruelteis maid him sa odius, that he had bene oftmes invadit and slane, war nocht he was ithandly supportit be the said Lucius.

The confiderat pepil, knawing the hatrent of Britonis aganis Trebellius, thocht the time expedient to revenge auld injuris. And efter that thay had gaderit ane army, with all provisioun that might be devisit, thay brak down the wall of Adriane, quhilk was reparit afor be Calphurnius, and wrocht intollerabil cruelteis on the Britonis that obeit to Romanis. Trebellius, movit be thir displesouris, went with ane army of horsmen and futemen aganis the Scottis and Pichtis. At his first juning, the Britonis and Frenchemen, quhilikis wer ane gret part of his army, left him: throw quhilk he was esaly vincust, and all his army put to flicht. And thocht the victory succedit to Scottis and Pichtis in this battall, yit innowmerabil slaughter was maid on thaim, als well as of Romanis. Trebellius, discomfist on this maner, colleikit the residew of his army, and returnit to York.

The Scottis and Pichtis become richt insolent efter this victory: And to revenge the slaughter sa mony yeris maid on thaim, they slew al the prisoneris quhilkis war takin in this last feild; and come with new army on the pepil that dwelt in Westmureland and Kendale, and invadit thame with sic cruelte, that thay war disparit, but refuge. Howbeit Trebellius was gretumly commovit at thir offendis, he durst nocht assailye his ennimes with battall; for he had na les suspicion aganis the Britonis than aganis the Scottis and Pichtis. Nochtheles, be frequent jeoperdyis, he slew his ennimes, ay quhare he might apprehend thaim, but ony miseration.

In the samin time rais mekill trubill in Britane: For the comonnis, seing thaim ilk day mair injurit be the Scottis and Pichtis, but ony esperance of redres; chesit Caldorus, ane vailleant knicht of Pichtis blude, to be thair capitane in thair rebellion: for he was

mony yeris accustomit with thair maneris, havand na thing in mair hatrent than tyranny of Romanis. Trebellius, knawing the gret dangeir appering be this trubill, tuke lang consultation, be quhat industry and laubour he nicht best resist thairto. Efter degeist advisement, he tuke purpos to fecht with Britonis; for gif thair power war midlit with Scottis and Pichtis, the samin nicht not be dantit but gret slauchter of Romanis. The Britonis, becaus thair army was colleekit of commonis, wer astonist be his cumming: nochtheles, be impulsion of Caldorus, thair capitane, thay junit with thair ennimes in gret ferocite and spreit. Followit ane bludy and terribill battall, fochtin with doutsum victory: bot at last the Britonis war vincust. Caldorus eschapit out of this battall with certane his freindis, and returnit in Pentland, rejoising in his mind that sa mony Romanis and Britonis wer slane be his industry. Mony nobillis of Britane wer in this feild aganis the Romanis, howbeit thay wer cloithit under landwart habit; and quhen thay saw the Romanis be rageand fury sla sa mony of the commonis, thay discoverit thameself to Romanis, traisting, becaus thay wer nobillis, to be the erar saiffit, and tane prisoneris. Quhen Trebellius wes advertist how thay dissimulit thair habit, and wer the caus of this rebellion, he gart hing thame, in presens of al the pepill, on jebaitis. This cruelte maid Trebellius richt odious to the Britonis: for on the morrow thay tuke als mony Romanis, and hangit thaim on the samin maner.

Trebellius, dreding gret dangeir appering in al partis, complanit to the Emprioure of the treason of Britonis, and injuris done be Scottis and Pichtis; and desirit support to be send haistely, or ellis the Romanis suld be doung shamefully out of Britane.

Commodus Anthonius, Empriour, to dant this rebellion of Britonis, Scottis, and Pichtis, send ane vailyeaunt knicht, namit Pertenax, in Britane; quhilk, eftir his cuming, dantit the ennimes of Romane Empire mair be benivolence than ony preis of armis: howbeit, ane certane of thaim, that wer of smal reputatioun, wer punist to the deith. Eftir this, he rasit his camp, and com beyond the wall of Adriane, quhare he invadit the Scottis and Pichtis with heirschippis and slauchter. Bot quhen he suld have procedit forwart, he gat writingis, that Commodus, Emprioure, wes slane be treason of his

familiaris; and, sone eftir, he returnit to Rome, quhare he wes chosin Emprioure. And eftir his coronatioun, Trebellius wes send agane in Britane.

Chap. Eleventh.

How Argadus, Lieutenand to King Ethodius, was slane, and his Army discomfist, in the Ilis. Of sindry lawis and actis maid be Ethodius; and of his slauchter.



UHIL sic thingis wer done in Britane, succedit gret trubill to Ethodius in Scotland. For sindry gret Clannis of the Ilis, to revenge the slauchter of thair freindis, quhilkis wer slane be Argadus, quhen he wes governour, arrivit, with ane gret power, in Argyle; and maid slauchter and heirschippis in all partis thairof, but ony miseratioun of estait. Ethodius, to punis thir attemptatis, send Argadus, his lieutenand, with ane cumpany of chosin men, in Argyle; and come with ane army, baith of Scottis and Pichtis, to the wall of Adriane, to fecht with Romans and Britonis, gif thay wald invaid him. The Clannis of the Ilis, knawing the cuming of Argadus, convenit suddanlie with thair capitane to meit him; and left ~~xx~~ Irelandmen, quhilkis come with thaim for spulye, hid under craggis and covis of that land, to take Argadus, gif thay micht, at sum avantage. Als sone as thir Irelandmen persavit Argadus cuming by thaim, thay russhit al at anis apon him with ane schout. Argadus, seing him invalidit on athir side, turnit all dredour in maist fury, and faucht with incredibill manheid to the deith; and wes finalie slane, with ~~ii~~ thousand men of his army, and the residew put to flicht.

King Ethodius become richt displeasant to the Clannis of the Ilis for this offence; for he come, sone efter, with ~~xx~~ thousand men, in Argyle. The Clannis of the Ilis, advertist of his cuming, pullit up salis, to have fled in the Ilis; nochtheles, thay wer drevin agane in Argyle, with contrarius windis. King Ethodius, knawing thaim disparit men, and nocht abill to be vineust but hie dammage and

slauchter of his pepil ; brak thaim mair be wisdome than ony violence of battall, and brocht thaim to sic necessite, that thay wer constrainit, for falt of vittallis, to seik peace ; quhilk wes grantit to thaim, under thir conditionis : The principall capitane, and twa hundreth, quhom the king wald cheis of thair cumpany, sal be deliverit, to underly the wil of him and his nobillis ; and the remanent to return hame, but thair swerdis, in the Ilis. Thir Clannis, and men of the Ilis, seing na refuge, tuke peace on the samin condition, and deliverit sa mony as the king plesit ; quhilkis wer justifit, and put to deith. The residew, seing thair capitane and thair freindis slane, come with ane huge nowmer of stanis, becaus thay wantit thair swerdis, on the kingis army, as rammist and wod creaturis, to have revengit the slauchter of thair freindis ; nochtheles, ane gret end of thaim, with litill lauboure, wes slane, and the remanent put to flicht.

The Ilis dantit on this maner, and the Britonis levand in servitude under Romanis, Ethodius had his realme in peace, but ony uncouth or domistik weiris, mony yeris eftir. And, eftir that he had visit all boundis thairof, he chesit sindry prudent men to be jugis, for administratioun of justice to his subdittis. And, that he suld nocht dull, be approching of age, in sleuth, he gave his ingine to hunting, as he wes lernit in his youth ; and commandit the lawis, maid afore be his nobill antecessouris concerning hunting, to be observit. And, first, he commandit, that na haris be slane, quhen thay ar lyand, with clubbis, arowis, dartis, or ony sielik instrumentis ; nor yit tane be nettis or girnis : becaus haris wer oftimes murdrist be sic maner, but ony game. He commandit als, gif the haris had forrun the hundis be lang renk, to be na forthir persewit : siclike, that na man sla ane baggit hind, nor yit thair calffis. It wes defendit als, to sla ane hair with ony othir ingine than chace of hundis : and na hunting to be usit during the season of winter and weir ; for, in that season, the erd is so ouir coverit with snawis, that the deir ar constrainit to descend fra the montanis to the planis to serche thair fude, and oftimes murdrist but ony game. Thir lawis wer maid be Ethodius ; for he detestit na thing mair, than the honorabill game of hunting, quhilk wes ordanit for his nobillis and gentill men, to be destroyit be sic febill slichtis, but solace. Attoure, quhen this

prince vikit fra his hunting, he wes gevin to honest plesiris; and nurist with him crafty menstrualis of all sortis. Bot, at last, he wes treasonably slane, under nicht, be ane menstrale of the Ilis, quhorne he had in gret delite. This menstrale wes finalie tane be the kingis gard; and, quhen he wes accusit, quhy he slew his native prince, that wes so familiar and tendir with him, he answerit, that he slew the king, becaus the king slew mony of his freindis afore in Argyle; and, sen he had so condingly revengit the slauchter of his freindis, quhilk he wes determit mony dayis afore to do, and his vehement affectioun satifit be his vailyeant deid, he desirit to leif na langar: and bad thaim use quhat cruelte thay list for his offence; for his durage was na les reddy to sustene the deith, than it was to sla the king: attoure, thair was na kind of deith sa cruell to be devisit on him, that might cause him to repent the kingis slauchter, sen he, be the samin, hes so condingle revengit the slauchter of his deir freindis. Skarsly wer thir wourdis said be the said menstrale, quhen his body wes drawin sindry with wild hors.

Ethodius wes slane, the xxxiii yeir of his regne; and beryit in Dunstafage, amang the sepulturis of his progenitouris. His regne come to the empire of Severus, Emprioure.

Chap. Twelfth.

Of mony nobill Clerkis. How Britane tuke the faith of Crist. Of the vicious King Satrahell; and of his deith.



BOUT this time flurist mony nobill Clerkis, in sindry partis of the warld: as, Galiane and Ipocrates, medicinaris; Appollonius, oratoure, quhilk wes martyrit be Gentilis, for making of ane orisone in loving of the glorius Virgin Mary.

Mony pepill began, in this time, to detest the erroris of Gentilis, and tuke the sicker faith of Crist. Lucius, King of Britonis, heir-and, be the Romanis under Trebellius, of the miraclis and religion of Cristin faith, send writingis to Elethurius, quhilk wes the xiv

Paip fra Sanct Peter, to gif the Cristin faith to him and his pepill. Sone eftir come in Britane, two haly men, Fugatius and Damanius; quhilkis brocht the said Lucius and his pepill to the sacrament of baptyme, and put doun al vane superstitionis and idolitris. The yeir that Britane tuke the faith of Crist, wes, fra his incarnatioun, ane hundredreth LXXXVII yeris. Bot we wil return to our history.

Eftir deth of Ethodius, his sonnis wer of so tender age, that thay might nocht succeid; and, thairfore, Satrahell, his brothir, wes maid king. This Satrahell wes ane man of sle and fals ingine; and gevin to sic cruelte and treason, that he slew, be fenyet causis, mony of all the freindis of Ethodius, to defraude his airis of the crown. He wes so unmerciful to the commonis and nobillis, that he spulyeit thaim baith of thair guddis and landis; and mony of thame, for vane causis, put to deith. Thus grew he ilk day richt odius, baith to his commonis and nobillis. Sone eftir, followit' discord, dissension, and domistik weris, amang freindis and nichtbouris, to the gret dammage of the common weil. Thir, and mony othir damagis, appering in plane exterminioun of the pepill, come throw sleuth and imprudence of this unhappy tyrane: for he durst nocht cum to licht, to punis trespassouris; becaus the pepill had him in extreme hatrent for his cursit tyranny. Quhil, at last, he wes slane be ane of his familiaris, within the nicht; the fourt yeir of his regne.

Chap. Thirteenth.

Of King Donald the First. How the Britonis wer inhibit be the Romanis to have ony King of thair blude. And how thay solistit the Scottis and Pichtis to assist to thair rebellion.



ATRAHELL slane in this maner, Donald, brothir to Ethodius the First, wes maid king; ane just and humil prince, richt far discordand fra the maneris of the last tyrane: nocht gevin to slichtis nor falset, bot settand his mind to meis all contentionis and truble amang his liegis. And quhen he had peacifyit his realme of all debaitis, he began to vesy

all boundis thairof; makand residence oftimes in his honorabil castellis with his nobillis, and doing justice to his subdittis but ony respect of the party; and punist all crimes, effering to the offence thairof: throwe quhilk the pepill, that wes wild and undantit afore, be negligence of evill princis, wes brocht to civil maneris, and abill to withstand thair ennimes quhen dangeir occurrit. This nobil prince had ane gard of chosin men, reddie for all chargis, baith in time of weir and peace.

About this time, Lucius, King of Britonis, deceissit. The Romanis, eftir his deith, knawing the kingis of Britane wes occasioun of sa frequent seditioun in times bygane, inhibit, that ony of thair blude suld regne in times cuming: throw quhilk gret trubill succedit in Britane. For Fulgenceius, quhilk wes discendit of the blude riall of Britane, richt commovit that the noblis thairof suld be disherist of the crown, convenit mony of the nobillis thairof to ane counsall; and complenit the gret tyrannyis done be Romanis, in plane eversioun of thair native lawis and liberte; thair virginis, wedowis, and matronis, fulyeit be insaciabill lust of Romanis; thair guddis escheitit; new tribute and exactionis ilk day desirit, beside mony othir infinite oppressionis; and, last of all, the nobill blude disherist of the crown: and, thairefore, gif the samin wer nocht haisately reparit, na nobill blude, but onlie commonis, suld be left in Britane. The Britonis, movit with thir reasonis, set ane day to meit him in thair best maner, to invade the Romanis.

Sone eftir, Fulgenceius send ane herald to Donald, King of Scottis, schawing the rebellioun of Britonis aganis the Romanis, and desiring support to expell thaim out of Albion; for the samin micht be done that time with les truble than ony time afore: for the empriour wes agit, and brokin with sa mony calamiteis, that he wist nocht quhat wes to be done; attoure, sa mony pepill wer rebellit aganis him in France, Almany, and the eist partis of the wORLD, that na help micht be send fra him in Britane. King Donald, rejosing of thir tithingis, and glaid to have occasioun of battall, becaus his pepill micht nocht leif but civil weris amang thaimself, quhen thay have na externe weris on othir pepil; promittit to cum, at ane prefixit day, with his power, to invaid the Romanis. The Pichtis promittit thair support in the samin maner.

Fulgentius, knawing the punitioune of Scottis and Pichtis maid to the effect foresaid, come, with ane army of Britonis, to the wal of Adriane, fornens the Ireland seis; and brak doun ane gret part thairof, agane the cuming of Scottis and Pichtis: and thay, with na les diligence, met the Britonis. Als sone as the Albianis had mengit thair armyis togiddir, thay come forthwart to York, traistint to have found Trebellius, with othir sindry Romane capitaniis, in it. At last, quhen thay had lie lang time at the sege of this town, and understude the principal Romanis, quhom thay desirit maist, fled in Kent, thay left the sege; and maid incursionis, with heirschippis and slauchter, on all pepill that obeit to Romanis.

The commonis, astonist be thir cruelteis, and nocht of power to resist, past to the confederat kingis in thair plesand maner; and resavait thaim within the portis of thair town. Thair armyis wer lugit utouth the town so lang, as ony thing might be gottin to thair sustentation; and than thay went to othir placis, ay makand sic like heirschippis as afore, nocht ceissing fra thair cruell fury: quhill the intollerable and cald stormis of winter constrainit thaim to skail and returne hame.

Chap. Fourteenth.

How Severus, Emprioure, come in Britane, to revenge the oppressionis done to Romanis. How the Britonis fled in Scotland. How the Scottis and Pichtis, fechtand in support of Britonis, war discomfist.



REBELLIUS, impacient to suffir thir offendis, wrait to Severus, Emprioure, how the Britonis nocht onlie wer rebellit, bot als hes invadit the Romane landis with sic crueltie and heirschippis, that it wes necessar othir to send ane new army, or ellis to cum himself in Britane.

Severus, Emprioure, glaid to have occasioun of battall, that he might conques siclik honour in subdewing of Britonis as he had won afore in subdewing of baith the eist and north partis of the

warld, tuke his wayage on ane hors litter; and come finalie, with gret lauboure and diligence, howbeit he was agit, and pinit with the gout, in Britane: and brocht with him baith his sonnis, Anthonius and Getas; to that fine, that he nicht draw thaim fra corrupt and sensuall plesouris, to merciall werkis. At his cuming in Britane, he gaderit the residew of Romanis, with his new army, to invaid the Britonis.

Fulgentius, and the remanent Britonis of his opinion, astonist be suddane cumming of the Emprioure with ane huge power, send oratouris to excuse thaim, and desirit peace. The Empriour dipeschit thir oratouris with plane repuls. Than Fulgentius, frustrat of his desiris, convenit the nobillis to ane counsall: perswading thaim, be lang orisoun, to recover thair liberte, and to restore the blude royall of Britane to the crown; revengeing the intollerable outragis sa mony yeris done be Romanis: and declarit how na thing nicht move him to take this maist dangerus mater on hand, bot onlie to recover the liberte of Britane, and to banis uncouth blude fra the croun. And thocht he persuadit thaim sumtime to battall, sayng, the Romanis wer ane army gaderit of divers opinionis and mindis, and nicht thairefore be the soner vincust, fra Scottis and Pichtis, quhilkis wer maist ennimes to Romanis, wer cumin to thair support: yit he thoecht mair proffitable to brek the Romanis with smal incursionis, than ony set battal; traisting, gif the goddis wer propiciant, that Britane nicht be perpetuallie deliverit of Romane servitude. The Britonis, movit be thir wourdis, come out of Britane, with thair wiffis, children, and guddis, to the montanis beyond the wall of Adriane.

In the mene time, Fulgentius gaderit ane company of the noblest Britonis of his opinion, with purpos erar to defend thaimself than to invaid thair ennimes: and sone estir, the Scottis and Pichtis come to him, reddy to assailye all maner of jeoperdeis for thair common weill.

Severus, Empriour, knawing all the wayis of the Albianis, left na thing undone that nicht pertene to the provisioun of his ordinance: and quhen al thingis wer providit as he desirit, he left his yongest son, namit Getas, to governe the Britonis under Romane lawis; and come with al his ordinance to York, quhair he wes res-

savit with gret honour and triumphe. Eftir his intres, he went to the templis, and maid his salutationis to the goddis; sine past to the castell, quhair Trebellius wes, with sindry Romane sodjouris, and tuke lang avisement how the barbar pepill micht be best dantit. Nocht lang eftir, he rasit his campe, and come forthwart with displayit baner.

The Britonis quhilkis wer of Fulgentius opinioun, seing na refuge, tuk purpos to fecht aganis the Romanis, and othir to de maist vailleantly, or ellis to leif with victory and honour: yit quhen thay saw thair ennimes, with sie multitude of pepill, in sicht, thay changit purpos. Nochtheles, thay junxit with maist fury, and faucht lang time with uncertane victory; quhill at last thay wer vineust, and the Scottis and Pichtis put to flicht on the samin maner. Fulgentius wes brocht out of the feild be his freindis, in esperance of better fortoun.

The Scottis and Pichtis, eftir this discomfitour, gaderit the residew of thair army, and returntit hame. In this unhappy battall wer slane of Scottis, Pichtis, and Britonis, xxx thousand.

Chap. Fifteenth.

Of gret cruelteis done be Severus, Emprioure, aganis the nobillis of Britane. Of his weris aganis the Scottis and Pichtis. How Anthonius reparit the Wall of Adriane: and of the Empriouris deith.



HE Scottis and Pichtis, brokin with this calamitie, send in Ireland, Norway, and Denmerk, for support of freindis, to resist the Romanis; and Fulgentius, on the tothir side, ceissit not to hire all pepill that he micht get for money.

Eftir this battall, the Empriour Severus past throw all boundis of Britane, and slew all the nobillis thairof, quhom he micht apprehend; havand miseratioun onelie on the commonis, for thay did no offence, bot followit thair maisteris. Als sone as he had reparit

all dammagis done be negligence of febill captanis, he retournit to York; and left his army in thair winter schelis.

In the nixt simer, the Scottis and Pichtis, seand na support come fra Ireland, set thaim erar to defend thair awin, than to invade thair ennimes. Fulgentius, with the Britonis that stude at his opinoun, in esperance of better fortoun, fled to the Scottis and Pichtis.

Sone efter, Severus, Emprioure, rasit his campe, and come beyonde the wall of Adriane: throw quhilk followit ithand incursionis, be sindry chancis of fortoun; sumtime the Scottis, sumtime the Romanis victorius: for the strait montanis and mossis of the cuntry war gret defence to the Scottis and Pichtis, fleand thairto in time of dangeir, and invading thair ennimes quhen thay saw occasiou. Thus war the Romanis lang taryit fra battall.

In the mene time, the Empriour fell in sic infirmite, that he was constrainit to returne hame, with Getas, his youngest son, and to leif Anthonius, his eldest son, to governe Britane, with all chargis pertenand thairto.

Anthonius, litill astonist of his ennimes, maid his residence, with his campe, nocht far fra Tyne; and commandit the wall of Adriane, quhilk was than brokin down, to be beildit agane, with mony strang touris and bastailyeis rising in it: ilk toure na farrar fra uthir than the sound of trumpat might be hard. He put, als, trumpatouris in ilk toure, that, be the sound of trumpat, the cuntry suld be warnit to withstand thair ennimes, quhen dangeir occurrit.

Als sone as this wall was reparit with sindry ingine of craftsmen, Anthonius set his besines to governe the Romane army in sic maner, that thay might knew him, and nocht his brothir Getas, as lord and senyeoure above thaim. Bot Getas was sa sorrowfull, be compassion of his faderis infirmiteis, that he tuke litil sollicitude of the empire; and seand his fader incres ilk day with mair pine, he sollicit the medicinaris to haist his fader to the deith. Quhill at last his fadir, the Emprioure, brokin mair with dolour than ony lang yeris, deceissit; maist vailleant Emprioure in glorie of merciall dedes, that was afore his dayis.

Chap. Sixteenth.

How Anthonius slew his brothir Getas, to make himself Empriour.

How Scotland tuke the faith of Crist, and cunyeit money. Of mony nobill Clerkis in sindry partis of the Warld, and of King Donaldis deith.



EVERUS deceissit on this wise, Anthonius, his eldest sonne, solistit the capitaniis of Romane army to give onely the empire to him, that he nicht succede but ony colleig. Howbeit he culd noct purches the samin; for thay had baith him and his bruthir in equall affectioun and honouris.

Anthonius, frustrat of his desiris, maid confederatioun with Scottis, Pichtis, and remanent Britonis of Fulgentius opinioun; sine returnit to his moder and brother at London. The moder, desiring to bring hir sonnis to concord, tuke freindis to intercommone on thir debaitis: and efter that scho had aggreet thaim, mair be violence than ony gud luf, scho devidit the empire, with equal honouris, betwix thaim; and departit out of Britane to Rome: berand with hir the powder of thair fader, in ane goldin poke, with mony aromatik odouris. After thair cumming to Rome, Anthonius, impaciente to have ane fallow equall to him in dominion, slew his brothir Getas in presence of his moder; and succedit, be his slauchter, to the haill empire. Bot we will returne to our history.

Quhen Donald had reparit all faltis in his realme, and brocht the samin in better estait, he passit the remanent of his dayis in gud peace, be inspiratioun of Crist, our Salvior, Prince, and Lord of peace. For in the time of the said Severus, Emprioure, King Donald send his oratouris to Sanct Victore, the xv Paip fra Sanct Petir, and purchest certane devoit and religius personis to cum in Scotland, to instruct him, his wif and barnis, in the Cristin faith; and to geif thaim the sacrament of baptisme. Than King Donald ressavit the Cristin faith, and all the Scottis on the same maner. The

yeir that Scottis tuke the faith of Crist, our Salvioure, God and Man, was fra his incarnatioun CCIII yeris; fra the beginning of the realme of Scotland, D.XXXIIII yeris; fra the beginning of the warlde, V.M.CCCXCIX yeris. And thocht the Britonis tuke the faith of Crist afore us, yit thair has bene ay ane braid difference betwix us and thaim: for efter that thay tuke the faith, thay have sindry times left the samin, be persecutioun of Gentilis; bot we bene evir sicker, but ony roust of heresy, sen oure first beginning thairin, to thir dayis.

King Donald was the first King of Scottis that prentit ane penny of gold or silver. On the ta side of this money was prentit ane croce, and his face on the tothir. The Scottis usit na money, bot marchandice, quhen thay interchangeit with Britonis and Romanis, afore thir dayis; except it war money of the said Romanis or Britonis: as may be previt be sindry auld hurdis and treasouris, found in divers partis of Scotland, with uncouth cunye. For in the yeir of God M.DXIX yeris, in Fiffe, nocht far fra Levin, war certane penneis found, in ane brasen veschell, with uncouth cunye: sum of thaim war prentit with doubill visage of Janus; otheris with the stam of ane schip; otheris had the figure of Mars, Venus, Mercurius, and siclike idolis; on otheris war prentit Romulus and Remus sowkand ane wolf; and on the tothir side war prentit S.P.Q.R., quhilk signifyis, Senatus populusque Romanus; that is to say, the senat and pepil of Rome. Siclike, in Murray-land, beside the see, in the ground of ane auld castell, the yeir of God M.CCCCLX yeris, was found ane veschell of merbill, full of uncouth money; on quhilkis war prentit the image of ane ganar fechtand with edderis: this veschell of merbill was in na les admiratioun to the pepill than the uncouth cunye. Be thir exempillis may be provin that uncouth money hes bene amang us.

At last King Donald, richt illuster in civill and religious werkis, deceissit, the XXI yeir of his regne; and wes buryit be religious men and preistis in ane kirk, efter the maner of Cristin princis, with devout ceremonyis. His regne come to the time of Alexander Severus, Romane Emprioure.

In the time of King Donald war mony nobill clerkis; as, Ulpianus, the floure of legistis in his dayis; Origenes, ane singular man

of piete and doctrine, with sa properant ingine, that he wald dite fastar than sevin practicianis micht suffice to write. This Origenes wes efter brocht out of Antiochia, be instance of Mammea, moder to Alexander, Emprioure; and turnit hir efter to the Cristin faith: throw quhilk the Empriour began, nocht allanerly to favoure the Cristin pepill, bot als inhibit ony persecutioun to be maid on thaim; and kepit the crucifix in the maist secret partis of his chalmer. In the samin time was Plotinus, with mony othir clerkis of singular eruditiooun, sum Gentilis, and sum of thaim Cristin pepill. This was the first time that the Scottis began to leir theologie and haly writ, be clerkis quhilkis war send be Victor, the Pape, for thair eruditiooun, in Albion.

Chap. Seventeenth.

Of King Ethodius the Secund; and how the nobillis, finding him unabill to gide the realme, governit the samin be thair auctorite, in gret justice.



ONALD deceissit in this maner, Ethodius, the secund of that name, sonne to Ethodius the First, was maid king. He was nurist in the Ile of Man, under the wise preceptouris thairof: howbeit, it was uncertane in quhat maneris he wald incres, quhen he was put to liberte; for quhen he was declarit king, and freely deliverit of his preceptouris, he apperit of dull ingine, mair abill to gadder riches be his insaciabill avarice, than to governe ane realme. And becaus the nobillis persavit him of evill governance, thay gidit the realme be thair prudent constitutionis. Gude justice followit; and prudent men put in every schire, baith to punis criminall personis, and to kepe the pepill but ony extorsionis. Sic diligence was maid, that misdoaris war punist, and na man punist bot according to the lawis. It was defendit be the samin, to speke for ony criminall personis in jugement; and he that spake for the said personis war reput as participant with thair crime.

Attoure, quhare ony trubill apperit be seditioun, the samin was haistely mesit.

The Britonis levit al this time in gude peace, under tribute of Romanis; and durst pretend na rebellioun aganis thaim: for Severus, Emprioure, tuke sic pleggis of thaim afore his deith, that thay war constrainit to leif in peace. Siclike, the Scottis and Pichtis, during the time of Ethodius, nothir did nor tuke injure of Romanis nor Britonis. Quhill at last King Ethodius was slane be his gard, the xvi yeir of his regne, becaus he was ouir mekill gevin to avaricious gadering.

And sa endis heir the Fift Buke of thir Croniklis.

The Sext Buke.

HEIR BEGINNIS THE SEXT BUKE OF THE CRONIKLIS OF SCOTLAND.

Chap. First.

How Athirco was maid King of Scottis. How the nobillis conspirit aganis him, for his cursit tyrannyis; and how he slew himself be desperation.



OCHT lang efter the slaughter of Ethodius, the nobillis convenit to publik counsall, and maid Athirco, sonne of Ethodius afore deceissit, king: and thocht he was young, yet he was dispensit be the nobillis, notwithstanding his age. He apperit, in the beginning of his empire, prudent and gratius to his subdittis; deliting in doctrine of letterit men, sic as knew the haly writ, or the history of his progenitouris. He was weill exercit in wersling, and all othir corporall exercition cuming be ingine or strenth of body; and sa liberal, that he tystit the pepill to his favoure: and yet he grew nocht in virtew as he grew in age; for after that

he had roung viii yeris, he become ilk day mair unplesand, and ay the mair vicious, that he procedit in yeris; like ane monsture, degenerat fra al honest exercitionis; gevin to unsaciabill avarice; and doing ilk thing mair be ire or dredur, than be benivolence or gud counsal. Thus tint he, be avarice, al the freindis that he conquest afore be his liberalite: and nocht onely was he involvit with thir crimes, bot with all kind of corruppit vice and lust that nicht make him effeminat; and tuk sic delite in singaris, sportouris, and mensstralis, that he eschamit nocht to pas in sicht of al the pepill, playng on ane flute.

The nobillis thought unworthy to be governit be sic ane monsture, that desirit erar to schaw him ane fidlar than ane virtuous prince: and war commovit, eik, that young men, be his wikit exemplil, war ilk day mair drownit in lust, to the dammage of thair commoun weill, and laik of justice; seand thair king sa involvit with every kind of vice, that he tuke na solicitude of the governance of his realme, bot gaif occasioun ilk day mair and mair aganis him.

Than was in Argyle ane man of gret auctorite, namit Nathalak, quhilk had two doucheris of excellent beawte. Athirco, advertist of thaim be his corruppit rutouris, ceissit nocht quhill he had deflorit thaim baith; and quhen his lust was saciat, he causit his mischevous rebaldis to fulye thaim on the samin maner. Nathalak, herand thir cruelteis done to his dochteris, seirchit his ingine be quhat way he nicht best revenge the samin: and in the mene time he maid consolatioun to his doucheris, knawing weill thair bodyis mair violat than thair mindis. On the morrow, he convenit his freindis to ane counsal, and complanit heavily the defloration of his dochteris: incontinent, all his allia and freindis ruschet to harnes, and maid solempne votis to punis this tyrane for his demeritis. On the morrow, mony of al the nobillis assistit to thair opinion; and com to Dounstafage, quhare this vicius king remanit for the time. The nois and ratling of armit men maid na litil effray amang the commonis, at thair first cuming: nochtheles, fra the caus wes manifest of thair assemblance, the pepil gaderit fast out of all partis to assist to thaim. Few was than in that army, that thocht nocht baith this tyrane worthy to be degradit of auctorite, and punist to the deith.

Athirco, advertist of this conspiration, was sa astonist, that he wist nocht quhat was to be done: yit he gaderit the pepill, that he nicht rais for that time, and went forthwart with displayit baner; traisting that his nobillis, fra his baner war displayit, suld geif bakkis: and quhen he fand thaim litil affrayit, and his awin cumpany havand him in contemptioun for his unhappy dedis, he raif of his coit armour, and maid him with all diligence to fle in the Ilis, to eschew the dangeir appering. Incontinent, the pepill, that was ar-rayit to fecht in his opinioun, war randerit to Nathalak, becaus he left thaim in that extreme dangeir.

Athirco, in this maner discomfist, gat ane bait to pas in the Ilis; bot he was drevin agane, be contrarius windis, to the land, quhare his ennimes war: and quhen he saw na way to eschaip, he slew himself, the XII yeir of his regne, in the IV yeir of Valeriane, Empriour. This Valeriane maid ane miserabil end, howbeit he had na les ex-perience in morall doctrine than chevelry: for he was tane be Sapore, King of Pers, and his army discomfist; and eildit in sa mis-erabill servitude, that Sapore maid ane stule of his bak, to leip on his hors.

Chap. Second.

How Nathalak usurpit the crown, and persewit all the linnage of Athirco with gret cruelcis; and finally, was slane be his familiar servand.



THIRCO slane in this maner, his brothir Doorus, havand litill confidence in the nobillis, fled with Findok, Curance, and Donald, the sonnis of Athirco, in Pentland; dredand to be invadit be Nathalak. And as he dred, sa followit: for Nathalak send his traist servitouris in Pentland, baith to sla Doorus, and thir thre sonnis of Athirco. Thir men, that war send to this effect, slew ane man nocht unlik, in habit, visage, and yeris, to Doorus. Nathalak, traisting Doorus, as he belevit, slane, convenit his nobillis to ane counsall; and efter that he had brocht

ane buschement of armit men to fortify his desiris, he said on this maner : “ I am rejosit, gud freindis, of the recent sloucherter of “ Athirco, quhilk he maid be just punitioun on himself. Nane is, “ I beleif, amang yow, nocht knawing the motive and just occasion “ of our rebellioun aganis him. Now sall it be your part to concurre “ with me, erar to revenge the cruelteis be him done, than to suffer “ the samin proceid ony forthir. Howbeit his sloucherter be schame-“ ful and odius, ye ar innocent thairof; and hes victory but ony “ blude. The treason wrocht be this odius tyrane was na les re-“ pugnant to your singular than commoun weill: nochtheles, the “ samin is punist condignely, as he deservit, sen he was burio to “ himself mair shamefully than we micht devise. Necessar it is “ to punis the invasour of the commoun weill; for our eldaris pu-“ nist the treason of Durstus and Ewin, effering to thair demeritis: “ siclik, the cruelteis of Lugtak war nocht lang unpunist. Mony “ otheris wilkit princis hes bene amang us, and ay put down, fra “ thay war injurius to the commoun weill. Now suld ye nocht “ only geif thankis to the Eternal God, that hes deliverit yow, youre “ wiffis and barnis, fra tyranne of Athirco; bot to take degeist “ advisement, be quhat way al otheris tyrannis, in times cuming, “ may be maist esalie eschewit. Bewar, I pray yow, to suffer ony “ of Athircois linnage to regne above yow: othirwayis ye sal be “ uterly distroyit, for the hatrent thay bere aganis yow; or ellis “ constrainit to seik a new habitatioun, your guddis confiscat, and “ de in misire.”

Thir wourdis movit mony of the nobillis to his opinioun; otheris understude his dissait, and war richt sorrowfull that the sonnis of Athirco suld be disherist: for thocht thay war gottin be ane wekit fader, thay maid na offence; and sen thay war just heritouris, outhir suld the crown be gevin to thaim or sum of thair blude, that it micht remane haill to thaim at thair perfite age. Utheris, that war corruppit be Nathalak, thocht expedient name of Athircois linnage to succede, for causis afore rehersit; and declarit all his sonnis rebellis, and ennimes to the commoun weill: syne ordanit Nathalak to be king. The residew of the nobillis, constrainit mair be force than ony kindnes, assentit thairto.

Nathalak, maid king in this maner, tuke the aithis of fidelite fra his nobillis, in presence of the messe; and went to Dounstafage. And to stabill the realme in mair securite, he gaif his guddis, with gret liberalite, amang thaim that he suspekit. And efter that he had conquest thair benivolence, he began to do sindry thingis pertenand to ane gud prince. He schew, eik, how he tuke the charge of the empire for na proffet to himself, bot onely to make the nobillis of the realme different fra the commonis in honour and riches; and that men of vile and obseure linnage may knaw thaimself thirllit to servitude of the nobillis. Alwayis, sa lang as he governit the realme in honest constitutionis, few war repugnant to him: nocht heles, unstabill fortoun brocht all his felicite unto ane drery fine; for within ane schort time efter, he tuke ane woman be adventure, quhilk usit to pas betwix the nobillis and Athircois sonnis; and fand sic writingis with hir, that he understude perfityl Doorus, quhome he traist slane, on live, with all the sonnis of Athirco: throw quhilk he wox sa tene, that he gart drown this woman nocht far fra the place quhare scho was takin, and kepit the writingis secreit, quhil he saw his time; and finallie, slew all the nobillis quhom he suspekit be thir letteris.

The freindis of thir nobillis, quhilkis war slane in this wise, ruschet haistly to harnes, to revenge thair slauchter: and sa this Nathalak, traisting to make the crown sicker to him and his airis be slauchter and tyranny, maid it maist unsicker.

Als sone as he understude his nobillis conspirit aganis him; be counsall of his familiaris, he fled in the north partis, to gader ane army out of Murray and Ros, to dant this rebellion. At last, seand himself frustrat of support, he turntit him to wicheis, divinouris, and spaymen, to inquire quhat suld be the end of his life; or gif ony dangeir war approcheand to him be occult hatrent of his familiaris. To dres this mater with mair diligence, he send ane of his maist tender and secreit servandis, namit Murray, to Comkill, quhare ane crafty wiche was dweland for that time. This Murray, efter his cumming, demandit the wiche of every point in ordour, as he was commandit: and scho, be craft of necromancy, gat knawlege of all his petitionis, and said, "The empire of King Nathalak sall have ane haisty and miserabill end, be ane of his maist familiaris." This

Murray, nocht content of sa general responce, prayit hir to schaw his name in speciall, that suld sla the king: scho answerit, "Thou " sall sla him." Than this Murray began to chide with the wiche, saying, " Thow can devine nocht, bot sayis as thow pleis, be flattery " or malice. Thow sall be fals; for I sall refuse na kind of deith, " or I attempt sa odius cruelte."

This Murray, havand na othir answer, was richt astonist, and maid him to return to the king. Yit afore his cuming to the king, he changit purpos; oft revolving in his mind quhat dangeir micht follow, gif he revelit the answer, as the wiche schew, to the king; oft musand the gud and the evil thairof, and knawing weill in quhat dangeir he stude, gif the king tuke ony suspiciooun of him. Efter lang musing, he was fullely resolvit erar to sla the king, as the wiche schew, than ay to leif in dangeir of his life. At last, quhen he was cumin to the kingis secrete chalmer allone with the king, he began, be lang circumstance, to schaw the wounderful slichtis and operatioun of this wiche. In the mene time, the king was sa trublit be flux of wambe, that he was constrainit haistely to pas to his eis. Als sone as this Murray saw the king at quiet, he pullit furth his dageir, and drove the king to the hart, suspeckand na thing les than sic treason, and kest his body down in the closet; sine stall away be ane private postrome, and was the first man that schew the deith of the king to his conspiratouris.

This end maid Nathalak, the xi yeir of his regne; fra the incarnatioun, cc.LII yeris: in the time of Galienus, the maist febil Empriour that was afore him; for in his time, xxx tyrannis invadit the commoun weill of Rome with gret afflictionis, but ony resistance in the contrar.

Chap. Thirđ.

*Of King Fyndok; and how he dantit the Ilis, and was slane be twa
men thairof.*

 ATHALAK, the tyrane, slane on this maner, the nobillis send this Murray in Pentland, to bring the thre sonnis of Athirco to Dounstafage; and the eldest of thaim, namit Fyndok, ane lusty and vailycant prince, was maid king. He kepit gud peace with his nichbouris, the Romanis and Britonis; and conquest freindis mair be benivolence, than ony feir of minassing. Bot, as oft fallis amang us, lang peace intertenit with uncouth pepill, generis civilis contentionis amang ourself.

Donald of the Ilis, to revenge the slauchter of Nathalak, come with ane gret power in Murray and Ros, to the gret heirschippis and slauchter of the pepill; becaus thay favorit the slaaris of Nathalak, his freind. Fyndok, to punis thir attemptatis, come haistely in the Ilis, and faucht with Donald, and put him to flicht. Donald, discomfist in this maner, fled to the sees, quhare he fand ane bait; and enterit with sic multitude of folkis, that scho sank within ane mile to land, and all the pepil in hir perist. Howbeit the men of the Ilis war brokin be this chance of battal, thay ceissit nocht fra thair undantit malice; bot chesit Donald, quhilk was sonne to Donald afore perist, to be thair capitane; and invadit the cuntry with mair trubil than afore.

Fyndok, to punis thir conspiratouris, returnit in the Ilis, and slew all that war apprehendit of thair opinioun; syne kest down the strenthis of the cuntry, that na refuge sall remane at thair returning. Donald, afore the kingis cuming, fled in Ireland; and efter the kingis departing, returnit in the Ilis: and seand the cuntry heryit, and his freindis slane, he kest him to do the thing be slight, that he micht nocht do be force; and send ane messingeir, as he had bene penitent of all offence, to Fyndok, and desirit grace. The king, movit of piete, condiscendit to thir desiris: sa the said Donald

come, with the principal movaris of this rebellion, but wappinnis, to Dounstafage, to underly his will.

Donald, nocht content to have peace in this maner, chesit erar to underly the chance of fortoun, than the kingis will: and thairfor, to complet the treasonabil purpos be him devisit, he send two men of subtile ingine to Dounstafage, to await sum ganand time to sla the king. Thir two men fenyteit thaim gentillmen of the Ilis, and ennimes to Donald: and at thair first cumming, they gat litill credence; bot at last, be menis of Carance, the kingis brothir, they war admittit to the kingis presence, and maid sa familiar, that they war deput be the king to sit baith on his privat and publik materis. At last, quhen they persavit Carance set in slauchter of the king, to conques the crown, they opinnit thair mind to him; and he na thing suspendit thair purpos, bot with large promes tyistit thaim mair to the samin.

Within schort time efter, the king went to ane hunting, beside Dounstafage, to sla ane wolf; and sat down on ane mote, nocht knawing how thir limmaris war set for his slauchter. At last, quhen the faid had brocht in the wolf afore the houndis, the skry arais, and ilk man went to his gam. Thus wes the king left his alone, but ony cumpany except thir two Ilis men. Than ane of thaim began to hald the king in talk, quhill the tothir tratourusly come behind him, and drove him throw the body with ane hounting staffe. Als sone as thir tratouris had slane the king, they left the staf stikand throw his body. The huntaris returning fra thair game, and finding the king slane, followit sa fast on his slaaris, that they war baith takin, and demandit, be scharp punitioun, for quhat occasioun they slew the king. Thir tratouris, with spreit litill affrayit, confessit pertly the crime, schawing how they war instruckit be Donald of the Ilis, and Carance, to sla the king. And quhen they had discoverit the treason, as said is, they war baith put to maist terribill deith.

King Fyndok was slanè, the x yeir of his regne, quhilk was in the time of Floriane, Empriour. His body was buryit efter the use of Cristin princes, with gret lament of pepil, in ane riche sepulture, nocht far fra Dounstafage.

Chap. Fourth.

How Carance was banist for his brotheris slauchter ; and Donald the Secund maid King. Of his deith ; and of sindry nobill Clerkis.



ARANCE, the secund sonne of Athirco, herand the treason sa manifestly confessit be the slaaris of Fyndok, fled in Italy, quhair he wan gret fame and honouris in the weris of Dioclesiane and Aurelius, Empriouris : as we shall eftir schaw. Fyndok, slane in this maner, his brothir Donald, the secund of that name, and thrid sonne to Athirco, wes maid king. This prince wes takand avisement of his nobillis, be quhat maner he micht maist esalie revenge the slauchter of his brothir Fyndok : quhen suddanlie come tithingis, that the said Donald of the Ilis wes cumin in Ros, and invading the pepil thairof with heirschippis and cruelteis.

King Donald movit for thir attemptatis, come haistelie in Murray with ane certane chosin men : and commandit be generall proclamatioun, under pane of deith, al fensabill men to follow him, but ony tary. At his cumin in Murray, becaus he wes bot ane few nowmer, he partit his army at ane gret strentch, to abide the cuming of the remanent army.

Donald of the Ilis seing the king of small power, tuke purpos to jeoperd him to the chance of fortoun : and, but more tary, he come with sa scharp battall on the king, that the king micht nocht use his ordinance of bowis and speris, bot constrainit haistelic to fecht with swerdis. Followit, ane terribill and scharp bargane. Quhil at last, King Donald, ourset with gret multitude of pepill fechtand aganis him, wes tane, with MM men of his army, and III thousand slane. King Donald finalie tuke sic malancoly, that he deceissit ; the thrid day eftir that he wes tane, in the first yeir of his regne.

In thir dayis wer mony clerkis of singulare eruditiooun : as, Quintus Tertulianus, that wrait mekil aganis the errorris of Gentilis : Pylocratis, Bischop of Ephesei ; in quhais time wes gret contentioun

concerning the ceremonis of Pasche : Cipriane, oratoure, quhilk renuncit the erroris of gentilis, and become Cristin ; and eftir, wrait sindry bukis for the eruditiooun of Cristin pepill.

Chap. Fifth.

How mony haly men war martyrit for the faith of Crist. How Donald of the Ilis, the thrid of that name, usurpit the Crown, and was slane be Craithlint.



HE Cristin faith sufferit gret persecutioun at this time. Mony haly men and wemen martyrit : as, Cipriane, Sextus, Laurence, Hipolitus, Barbara, Cecilia, Agatha, with mony otheris, throw tyrany of Decius, Empriour. And in this time the Scottis began to be richt profound in theologie and haly writ, be doctrine of certane monkis quhilkis wer callit, in thay dayis, Culdei ; that is to say, the honoraris of God : for than al priestis that honorit God war callit Culdei. Thir prestis, be general vocis, chesit ane bischop, to have auctorite and jurisdiction above thaim ; and he wes callit the Bischop of Scotland. Bot we will return to our historie.

Eftir deith of King Donald, gret truble followit in the realme ; for Donald of the Ilis had sa mony nobillis tane in this last battall, and held thaim in sic captivite, that nothir thay, nor thair freindis, durst attempt ony thing aganis his desiris : throw quhilk he tuke the crown, and nocht onlie habandonit all the cuntry, bot thirlit the nobillis to his assistance. Howbeit, thay lay ay in wait to sla him, quhen time and place nicht appeir. Donald, knawin thair hatrent aganis him, tuke sic feir of his life, that he gaif na man credit ; bot, as the use of tyrannis is, had every man in suspition and dredour. Thus grew he, ilk day, more terribill and odius to his pepill, and governit the realme with na better yeil than he gat it. At last, his dredour procedit sa far, that he durst cum in na opin place but gard of armit men about him, with halbertis and axis ; and inhibit, that ony othir man beir wappennis saiffing his awin gard. Finalie, he

culd nocht be satifyit in his minde, quhill he had slane all thaim that he suspeckit, and confiscat thair guddis, in favour of thame that assistit to him ; intending, as ane bludy monstoure, to conserve the crown with siclike cruelte as he gat it. He slew als mony othir nobillis, be vane causis, to promove men of vile and obscure linnage to riches and honouris, but ony sicht to virtew : and rejosit in na thing sa mekill as to gener frequent seditionis amang his subdittis ; traisting, be thair seditioune, to have felicite ; and, be thair concord, to have trubill in his crown.

It wes said, this cruell tyrane leuch nevir bot quhen he hard discord and slauchter of his nobillis : and als sone as he hard the same, he confiscat all thair guddis, but ony sicht to wrang or reason : and said oftimes, amang his familiaris, Na sicht micht be mair plesand to him, than to se men murdir othir ; attour, the slauchter of nobillis and riche men ar richt necessar to the tranquillite of all realmes, becaus thay ar ennimes baith to the king and commoun weil.

And quhen this tyrane had roung XII yeris in maist cruelte above the pepill, but ony titill, he come to Enverlochte, with purpos to pas in the Ilis ; bot he wes slane, the first nicht he come thair, be Craithlint, sonne to King Fyndok, afore reheirsit, the XII yeir of his regne. Craithlint, eftir the slauchter of this tyrane, schew to the nobillis how he had put doun the tyrane, Donald of the Ilis : restit, thairfore, ganand occasioun to revenge the gret oppression and cruelteis done so mony yeris be his unhappy counsalouris. The nobillis, glaid of this tyrannis slauchter, ruschit haistely to harnes, and slew, that samin nicht, cc of the principall assistaris to his opinioun, and the remanent chasit in Athole ; quhilkis wer all slane sone eftir, be the pepill, quhen thay wer advertist of Donaldis slauchter.

Chap. Sixth.

Of King Craithlint ; and how the Scottis and Pichtis fell in contentioune be thair hunting, and faucht with gret slauchter on all sidis.



O NALD, the tyrane, slane in this maner, the crown wes restorit to the blude of Athireo ; for Craithlint, son to Findok, becaus he slew this last tyrane sa vailyeantlie, wes maid king. Craithlint, glaid of this felicite, gaif thankis to his subdittis ; and detestit, be lang orison afore the counsal, the tyranny of Donald of the Ilis, usurpar of the crown, but ony titill ; and giding the samin with treason, falset, reif, and slauchter of nobillis : and exhortit the pepill, sen this tyrane, be his prudence, wes distroyit, to rejose, and to suffir nane of the said Donaldis blude on live, in aventure thay nuris sic displesour to thaimself, be thair non advertence, as sum time did King Donald, fechtand unwarily with the said Donald of the Ilis : quhairthrow, the nobilitie of Scotland was oppressit xii yeris with sic tyrannyis, that na man micht resist the samin. And for thir reasonis, he desirit thaim to assist to him to repare all oppressionis done be cruelte of the said Donald of the Ilis : quhilk thingis beand done, all materis micht succede, within schort time, as thay desirit.

The nobillis, na les movit be his excellent beawte, and lustines of person, than be his wordis, swore to take his part in al materis. Nocht lang efter, al the linnage of Donald Ilis was socht in all partis, and slane, but ony difference of thair estait.

Sic thingis done, Craithlint chesit wise and prudent men to do justice throw al boundis of his realme ; syne past, with ane certane his nobillis, to the montanis of Granyebene, to pas his time in hunting. In the mene time, come to him, the ambassatouris of Thelargus, King of Pichtis, schawing him rejosit, that the tyrane Donald of the Ilis was slane, and the crown restorit to the native blude ; and desirit, thairfore, the auld band of peace to be renewit, for the

weill of baith thair realmes. Thir desiris war plesandly grantit, and the ambassatouris honorably depeschit.

Nocht lang efter, certane nobillis of Pichtis come to hunt with the king in Granyebene. The Pichtis, in thair hunting, stentit strang nettis on lesuris and medois, and drave the hertis apone the nettis with thair hun'lis: and quhen the beistis eschapit, thay cloithit thaim with branchis and levis of treis, like stalkaris; sine slew the deir with braid arrowis and dartz, quhen thay war lyand wery. The Scottis, na thing content of this game, becaus it was contrar thair lawis; gart remove thair nettis, and hunt on thair maner, takand the pray be swift houndis allanerly. The Pichtis, seand thair houndis of les reputatioun than the Scottis, baith in bewte, swiftnes, lang renk, and hardiment; desirit ane certane of every kind of houndis to be gevin to thaim, that the samin micht be bred amang thaimself. And quhen thay had gottin every kind thairof gevin to thaim, as thay desirit, thay stale ane certane houndis, and went hame with the samin, but ony advise of Scottis. Amang thir houndis tane, as said is, be thir Pichtis, was ane quhite hound, plesand, and mair speedy than ony othir, quhom Craithlint had in maist delite. The maister of huntis, astonist throw the wanting of this hound, followit sa scharply, that he fand the samin; and was sa fervent in recovering thairof, that he was finaly slane.

The skry arrais after this slauchter, and maid the nobillis and commonis of Scotland to returne in maist fury to revenge the same. The Pichtis, on the samin maner, gaderit on the tothir side, with na les fury to resist: throw quhilk followit ane haisty and mischevous battall, with gret slauchter on ilk side; nane of thaim knawing the motive nor occasion thairof. In this unhappy bergane wer slane, LX Scottis gentilmen, with gret nowmer of commonis; and of Pichtis mo than ane hundredth.

The fame of this unhappy battall, divulgat in the euntre, movit the freindis of thaim that war slane, to seik vengeance with mair hatrent than afore. Thus gaderit thay agane on al sidis, and faucht, but capitane, baner, or ordour of chevelry, neir to the uter distruction of thaim baith. Alwayis the Scottis war discomfist, **mmm** of thaim slane, and **mm** Pichtis.

Be this slauchter, thir two pepill, that was sa lang confiderat togidder, fra the time of Fergus, the first King of Scottis, to thir dayis, ay rising under ane blude, amite and kindnes; grew in maist hatrent aganis otheris, for ane sponk of small occasioune of unkindnes; throw quihilk nane of thame apperit to ceis fra ute extreminion of othir. Followit, sa mony bludy incursionis, day and nicht, that na houssis, nor respect of age, micht be defence or refuge contrar thair cruelte and slauchter on athir side.

Chap. Seventh.

How Carance, brothir to Findok, returnit out of Italy, with gret riches, in Albion. How he conquest Westmureland, and maid peace betwix Scottis and Pichtis.



HELARGUS, King of Pichtis, richt agit, and nere consumit be yeris, was sorrowfull for this contention falling betwix the two pepill sa lang confiderat, cumin be sudane pertinacie of undantit personis: and send his oratouris to Craithlint, schawand him na les displesit for the slauchter and trubill falling to Scottis, than to his awin pepil; for the same tendit to the dammage of baith thair commoun welis: attoure, na crime micht be impute to him; for he nevir consentit thairto. And sen the said trubill was cumin mair be privat than publict auctorite, he thought that pepill sa lang confiderat, suld put end to thair weris, and have peace with othir: for, gif thay perseverit with ire and hatrent aganis othir, nocht sal follow bot ute ruine of baith thair realmes, and the samin to fall in pray to Romanis. Forthir, he was reddy to repair al offence and injuris done be his pepil to Scottis; and desirit to have peace, that baith the pepil micht earar returne to concord, for defence of thair realmes, than to perseveir in battallis, to the finall eversion of thaim baith.

The Scottis war sa impacient for the recent slauchter maid on thaim be Pichtis, that thir oratouris micht skarsly purches licence to schaw

thair message. Nochtheles, thay gat finaly presence, and schew thair desiris to Craithlint, in maner afore rehersit.

It was answerit be King Craithlint, that na thing nicht cum sa displesand to him, as suddane trubill falling amang thay pepil, quhilkis hes bene so lang considerat togidder in amite and blude. And thought peace war mair plesand to his pepill than battall, yit, the recent sloucher is sa deip ingravim in thair breistis, that thay refuse to gif peace. Nochtwithstanding, he wald gif, of his awin auctorite, thre monethis trewis; that the nobillis of baith thair realmis may be profoundly resolvit to pas and repas, to decerne quhat is to be done.

The trewis, tane in this maner, war plesant to the King of Pichtis, beleving thairthrow to put ane end to thir debaitis, and to all displesouris following be the same. Yit, nochtwithstanding thir trewis, sindry incursionis war maid on athir side.

Quhill sic thingis occurrit betwix Scottis and Pichtis, Carance, the secund brothir to Findok, quhome we schew banist afore for his sloucher, wan gret honouris in Italy. This Carance, efter his proscripition, was ane man of armis in the Romane weris, howbeit nane knew his nobil blude; and wan sic fame be his manheid and proues, that na capitane was repute mair worthy to haif chargis be the Empriour.

Nocht long efter this, Carance was send be Dioclesiane, Empriour, with ane flote of schippis, to defende the costis of Normandy and Picardy fra injure of Saxonis, Franchemen, and othir pirattis, quhilkis invadit the samin with frequent injuris. At his cuming, he wald nocht jeopard him aganis his ennimes, quhil thay war ladin ful of riches and guddis; to that fine, that fra the pray war tane, he nicht be enrichit thairwith. Yit, becaus he nothir deliverit the pray thairof to the Empriour nor his capitanis, he was haldin suspect, and persewit to the deith. Als sone as Carance understude the Empriour movit with sic hatrent aganis him, he pullit up salis, and come, with his weirmen and riches, be the Ireland seis, in Westmureland, ane part of Britane nocht far fra the landis of Scottis and Pichtis, traisting to have sum rescours of thaim aganis the Romanis. Sone efter, he set his army on land, and with smal difficulte gat all the pepil thairof randerit to him. Sic thingis done, he send his ora-

touris to Craithlint, his nepot, schawand, thought he was banist for suspitioun of the slauchter of his brothir Findok, be invy of wikit personis, and brocht in gret misery and trubil thairthrow ; yit he was innocent thairof, and had governit him sa wisly, efter sindry chargis gevin to him be the Empriour, that he was send with ane flote of schippis to pecify the occiane seis ; and, be the samin, hes won gret honour and riches. Yit, becaus the Empriour was movit aganis him be invy of detractouris, he was cuming with sic army and riches in Westmureland, that he hes brocht the inhabitantis thairof to his opinion. Thus had he ferme esperance, gif the Scottis and Pichtis wald concur with him, to ding the Romanis out of Albion : for the power of Romanis was daily wastit in Britane ; and sa gret rebellion maid aganis thaim in all partis, that thay micht send na support in Britane. Thus micht the Scottis and Pichtis have ane ganand time to ding the Romanis out of Britane, and to kepe him, thair native blude, in the empire thairof ; swa thay wald remove all hatrent and sedition risin amang thaim, and have peace with othir.

Craithlint thocht the kindnes of his eme Carance nocth to be refusit, seand him cuming in Britane with sa gret pissance, and reddy to support him in all dangeris ; and thairefore answerit to thir oratouris, that he, mony yeris gone, had foryet all offence, gif ony was maid to his fader, and rejosit nocth litill of the present felicite falling to his eme Carance ; and wald fulfil his desiris, sa far as he micht, at al pointis, aganis the Britonis, gif he micht have peace of Pichtis. And thocht he micht have nane, he suld send in his support, ane cumpany of chosin men ; bot his self behuvit to abide at hame, for defence of his realme aganis the said Pichtis.

Carance, glaid of this answer, stuffit al the strenthis of Westmureland ; and come, with ane cumpany of weill accuterit men, to the wattir of Esk, nocth far fra the wall of Adriane, quhare he met Craithlint, and fell on kneis at his first meting ; declaring him, be mony evident reasonis, innocent of Findokis slauchter : and desirit the king to have him in na suspitioun ; for thocht he was bannist, be invy and hatrent, among uncouth pepell, yit he behavit himself in sic maner, that he wes returnit in Albion, baith to the honour of himself and his freindis. Craithlint embrassit his eme Carance maist

tenderly, and prayit him to stand gud freinde, as he suld do to him ; and to leif na thing of his purpose, sen gret honour and proffet, gif fortoun war propiciant, micht succede be the samin : and promittit, gif the Pichtis weris war nocth impediment to him, he suld nocth fail to support him with his ute pissance. Carance, rejoising of the kingis benivolence, said, he had sufficient army to expell the Romanis out of Britane, and to transfer the crown thairof in the linnage of Scottis, gif Scottis and Pichtis wald assist to him.

Finaly, be prudent industry of Carance, baith thir two kingis war brocht togidder, accumpanyit with ane few nowmer on ilk sid. And to bring thaim to the mair sicker concord, Carance began to remembir thaim, how the auld affinitate betwix thaim was commodius : be contrar the violatioun thairof, full of dammage to thaim baith. And rememberit thaim of thair frequent chevelryis, sa lang continewing aganis the fury of Romanis and Britonis, in defence of thair realmis and liberteis, with sic amite and kindnes, that injuris done to ony ane of thaim war repute equale to thame baith. For thir reasonis, it was necessar to thaim othir to haif peace with othir for thair comoun weill, or ellis to perseveir in battail, to the distruption of thaim baith. Be thir and siclike wourdis, the two kingis war persuadit to haif peace, and to repair injuris on athir side.

Sone efter, viii newtral personis, of gret prudence, war chosin with baith thair consentis, be quhome the peace was finaly roborat, and al injuris plesandly redressit.

Chap. Eighth.

How Carance, be support of Scottis and Pichtis, slew Bassiane, Capitane of Britane, and tuke the crown thairof; and of his deith. And how the crown of Britane was restorit to Romanis.



OCHT lang eftir, Quintus Bassianus, capitane of Britane, rasit his camp to invade the said Carance: for he was cummin to York with thre gret buschementis of Scottis, Pichtis, and otheris, his freindis, and gottin the samin randerit to him but ony offence of the inhabitantis. Bassianus, nochtwithstanding the frequent rebellion maid aganis the Romanis in all partis, yit, to revenge the attemptatis done be Carance, rasit his army, and parkit the samin within the nicht, betwix two mossis, on ane strait ground. Carance, nocht x milis fra him, and weil advertist of his doingis, come forthwart in the samin maner to gif him battall. On the morrow, Bassianus arrayit his folkis, and exhortit thaim to remembir how thay war to fecht for defence of equite aganis certane fals conspiratouris; specially aganis the treasonabil murdresar, Carance, maist odius creatour to God for his detestabil offence. And forthir, prayit thaim to have respect to the Rōmane virtew, quhilk hes ben ay of sa gret estimatioun, baith afore immortall goddis and men; that thay micht have, be reward of victory, nocht only infinite riches, bot perpetuall loving be thair posterite.

On this othir side, Carance was na les diligent, exhorting his army to battal: saing, Thair ennimes had gret disavantage to fecht with thaim, becaus the maist part of thame wer Britonis, havand na les hatrent aganis Romanis than he hes, and wald leif thame quhen thay saw ony dangeir occurring: and thairfore, victory wes present in thair handis, gif thay, with manheid and prudence, ferslie ruschit on thair ennimes.

Als sone as baith the armyis, be blast of trumpat, junit, the Britonis left the Romanis, and went, as thay had bene fleand, in gud array to the nixt hill. The Romanis, seing thair sidis nakit be

fleing of Britonis, wer astonist, and more mindfull of thair singular weill, than ony glore of victory. Finalie, thay wer sa dejecket of thair curage, that thay wer put to flicht: on quhom followit Carance, with all his army, in maist hatrent; and slew thame ay, quhare thay wer tane, but ony miseratioun. Carance, seand sa huge slauchter maid be the chace, callit his folkis, be sound of trumpat, to the standart.

In this battall wer slane, Quintus Bassianus, capitane of Britane, and Hircius, procuratour, with mony othir nobillis and commonis of thair blude. The residew of Britonis, quhilkis wer eschapit fra this battall, wer randerit to Carance; and gaif pledgis of the noblest that wer in thair realme, nocth within xx yeris, nor above ix yeris, to be his trew subdittis in times cuming. Als sone as the praye of guddis falling be chance of battall wes devidit amang the victorius pepill, Carance past to London: quhair he wes resavit with gret reverence, and tuke the sceptour and diademe of Britane, contrar the empire of Romanis. Eftir that, it wes maid tributar to Julius, ccc.xlvii yeris.

Carance, crownit in this maner, held MM Scottis and Pichtis continewally about him, in maner of ane gard. The remenant Scottis and Pichtis returnit hame, richit with the spulye of this last battall. Than Carance, in more princely reward of thair laubouris, gaif all the landis lyand betwix the wall of Adriane and Yorke, namit Westmureland and Cumber, to thair perpetuall dominioun. And throw this liberalite, he come in gret hatrent, baith to Romanis and Britonis. And howbeit he wes oftmes assailyet be thaim with scharp battallis, yit he wes victorius at all jornays, and brukit the crown of Britane be crafty prudence; quhil at last he wes slane, the vii yeir of his regne, be Alectus, Romane capitane. This Alectus, eftir the slauchter of Carance, set his extreme besines, to bring the Britonis agane to Romane lawis. And quhen he saw thay might na wayis be brocht thairto, for the cruell hatrent thay had aganis Romanis, he maid laubouris to have thair benivolence, and finalie applaudit to thair opinioun, and tuk the crown of Britane contrar the auctorite of Romanis. And yit he rang with na better fortoun than did Carance; for he wes slane in the samin maner, be Asclepiadotus, the thrid yeir of his regne: eftir quhais deith, the crown of Britane wes restorit, as it wes afore, to the Romanis.

Chap. Ninth.

Of gret cruelte done be Dioclesian, Emprioure, aganis Cristin pepill. How Coell vincust the Romanis, and conquest the crown of Britonis. How he was alliat with Constantius, Empriour; and of the nativite of grct Constantine.

DIOCLESIANE, Emprioure at this time, be vassalage of Constantius, Maximianus, and Galerius, dantit the warlid with sindry chances of battall, and wes the first Romane Emprioure that wes adorit with kingly reverence; for, afore thay dayis, the Emprioure usit nocht bot salutationis. This Emprioure causit riche perle and precious stanis to be set in his schone, in mair taikin of insolence than ony ornament. Afore that time, wes na difference betwix Empriouris and uthir pepil, except the rob rial. This Dioclesiane wes sa odious and bludy tyrane, that xvii.m men and wemen wer martyrit be him, for defence of Cristin faith. This cruelte nocth onlie enragit in the eist and west partis of the warlid, bot als in Britane. And, above thir cruelteis, infinite nowmer of thame wer condampnit to the galionis, winning of querrellis and minis. Be him also wer brint, innouerable bukis of Cristin faith, contenand the evangellis of Crist, with the actis and epistillis of his apostollis; traisting thairthrow, that the faith of Crist suld all uterlie expire. Throw quhilk, the Cristin faith, ouirthrawin with new seurgis and perseverand cruelte, wes neir perist. Mony haly and relligious men, for feir of thir cruelteis, fled in desertis and elraige placis; quhair thay wer exonerit of all truble, and leifft ane haly life.

This dispitfull tyrane, Dioclesiane, eftir sindry his triumphis maid in Rome, for victoryis of divers pepill of the warlid, wes trublit, be punition of God, with mony uncouth infirmiteis, and for slauchter of sa mony innocent pepill. He become furious at Salonas, and slew himself be drink of vennomè, the xx yeir of his regne; to be

exampill, that na man put confidence of felicite and eternall live in vane favour and assentatioun of pepil. Qubil sic thingis wer done be Dioclesian, Coel, descending of the anciant and nobill blude of Britonis, wes solistit be thaim to rebel aganis the Romanis. Asclepiadotus, advertist heirof, met him with the army of Romanis, and othir that stude at his opinioun. Followit, ane aufull and dangerus battall, lang fochtin with doutsum victory : bot at last the Romanis wer discomfist, and Asclepiadotus, thair capitane, slane.

Coel, eftir this victory, wes maid king : and to stabill the realme to him in sicker peace, he commandit, be generall edict, all Romanis, and otheris of thair opinioun, to be slane, quhare ever thay mycht be apprehendit. Constantius, Emprioure, to meit this rebellioune, come in Britane with mony Romane legionis. Aganis quhome went King Coel, with ane army of Britonis, to defend his realme and liberte : nochtheles, he wes vincust, and his army put to flicht. On the mornow, Constantius wes informit be the Britonis, that King Coel wes native prince of Britane, and discending be lang progressioun of the blude riall thairof : and thairfore, be commiseratioun, he send ane herald to him, schawing, gif he wald be randerit, as othir Briton kingis wer afore, to Romanis, he suld be sufferit to remane in his auctorite. King Coel wes this time trubillit with gret infirmite, cumin be surfet cauld and walking, in his weris aganis the Romanis. Constantius, heirand of his infirmite, past to mak him consolatioun. Eftir maist tender embrasing, the said Constantius continewit King Coell in his auctorite ; and tuke his doucher Helene, ane virgine of maist excellent bewte, in mariage. This affinite maid Romanis and Britonis to beleve ane finall end to al thair weris. Sic thingis done, Constantius went to vesy the Romane strenthis in Britane ; and noct oulic reparit thame quhare thay wer ruinus, bot stuffit thaim with new provisioun of men and vittallis : syne commandit the cieteyanis of every town quhare he come, to be obeisant to King Coell during his life, becaus he wes freind of the senat and pepill of Rome. Schort time eftir, Constantius had ane sonne, gottin be this new affinite, namit Constantine ; quhilk, for his singulare manheid and prudence, succedit, eftir his faderis deith, to the diadem imperiall, and wes the first Empriour that gaif peace to the Catholike kirk ; and dotat it with mony riche templis, landis, and jowellis, be horta-

tion of the haly Paip, Silvester. Bot we will returne to the marciall dedis that Constantius did afore this time in Britane.

Constantius, eftir the deith of Dioclesiane, havand Britane, France, and Spanye, peacifyit to his empire ; gaderit ane army to expell the Scottis and Pichtis out of Westmureland and Cumber, quhilks wer gevin to thaim afore be King Carance. Eftir his cumming to York, he wes advertist, that Scottis and Pichtis wer stronglie gaderit to resist him. And becaus he knew thay nicht not abid lang togidder, he thocht best to brek thaim be lang tary. And, to the samin effecte, he abaid still with sindry Romanis at York, and commandit the Britonis to pas hame, and be reddy to return quhen thay wer chargit. Finalie, quhen he had remanit certane dayis in York, gevand his extreme deligence to brek the Pichtis fra the Scottis, he tuke sic malancholy, becaus he nicht nocht bring his purpos to gude fine, that he fel in ane hait fever, and, the vii day eftir, deceissit. Quhais powder wes gaderit in ane goldin veschell, with mony smell-and odouris, and brocht with funeral triumphe to Rome.

This Constantius, as we have schawin, wes richt thankfull to Cristin pepil. Nochtheles, sindry Britonis, traisting him to persew the faith of Crist with sic cruelte as Dioclesiane did afore, come in Scotland : quhare thay wer plesantly ressavit be Craithlint, and ordanit to maik thair residence in the Ile of Man, with kirkis ereckit to thaim in Catholik maner, for devine service. Thus wer the auld ritis and ceremonis of Gentilis, quhilks indurit to thay dayis, abrogat. The first bischop that wes amang thaim in this Ile, wes ane Briton namit Amphibolus : quhilk prechit the evangellis throw all the boundis of Scottis and Pichtis ; and nocht onlie removit al vane superstitionis, bot laid the sickir foundement of the Cristin faith. Craithlint, King of Scottis, dotat this kirk, be his singular devotioun, with mony jowellis and precious ornamentiis of gold and silver ; and maid ane alter of copper, craftely closit with lokkis, in quhilk wer gaderit, the rentis and malis of sindry landis, quhilks wer gevin be the king for sustentatioun of divine service. This wes the first kirk that wes dedicat amang us in Catholik maner ; and first sait of bischoppis callit Sodoren, howbeit the reason thairof be tint be roust of yeris, quhilk distroyis every thing. Craithlint, passing his time in this maner, with religious and civil materis, wes ane nobill

prince ; and finalie deceissit, the xxiv yeir of his regne : the first yeir of the empire of gret Constantine, Empriour ; fra the incarnationoun, cccxxii yeris ; fra the beginning of the warld, v.m.ccccxc yeris ; fra the beginning of the realme of Scottis, DCLV yeris.

Chap. Tenth.

How Fincormak was maid King of Scottis ; and Octavius, King of Britonis. How Herculeus, Romane Capitane, was slane be Octavius ; and the Romanis vincust. How the Scottis and Pichtis come in support of Octavius, and chasit Traherus in France.



RAITHLINT deceissit on this wise, succedit, his cosing, Fincormak ; for thay wer brethir sonnis. This Fincormake wes crownit in the first yere of gret Constantine. In quhais time rais gret trubil in Albion : for the commonis of Britane, havand extreme hatrent aganis the tyranny of Caius Herculeus, capitane of Britane, chesit Octavius, Prince of Walis, to be thair king. Caius Herculeus, to dant this rebellion, rasit his camp aganis Octavius ; bot at last he wes slane, and his army discomfist. Octavius, traisting na thing sa gud as to use his victory with maist rigoure, come to London ; and eftir that he had gottin all the strenthis thairof randerit to him, he slew sindry nobill men of Britane, for thair assistance to Romanis : syne persewit the Romanis to the deith, quhair evir thay nicht be apprehendit.

Constantine, Empriour, to punis this rebellion, send ane vailyeant capitane, namit Traherus, with mony legionis, in Britane ; be quhom Octavius wes put to flicht, and chasit anang the Scottis. Traherus, insolent eftir this victory, chargit Fincormak to send Octavius, the invasour of Romane province, bound to him, to be punist for his rebellion ; uthirwayis he suld be repute ennime to the senat and pepil of Rome. It wes answerit be Fincormak, that he resset nocht Octavius to be injurious to Romanis ; bot allanerlie, for the auld amite betwix Scottis and Britonis. Attoure, it nicht obscure his honour and majeste to condiscend to sa manifest prodition, and ran-

dir the man to his ennimes that socht refuge at him. Forthir, gif Traherus invadit him onelie for that cause, he suld resist the best way he micht; bot yit gud wer, afore he movit weir, to degeistely avise, quhiddir Romanis hes gottin mair schame or honour, mair proffet or skaith, in thair weris aganis Scottis in al times bygane.

Traherus, na thing satifit be this answer, come with al his ordinanee to York; quhair he wes advertist that Fincormak wes gaderit, with LX.M Scottis, Pichtis, and Britonis, in support of Octavius: nochtheles, he went forwart, quhill he come in sicht of ennimes. Fincormak, quhen baith the armyis wer arrayit in otheris sicht, send ane herald, inquiring Traherus, quhat movit him, but occasioune of injuris, to invaid the confederat pepil, as thay wer ennimes to Romanis. Traherus maid litill answer thairto, bot commandit the Scottis and Pichtis to pas haistely out of all landis pertenand to Romanis, and to pay ane yeirly tribute to thair procurator, as the senat and pepill of Rome thocht expedient; and, but ony more tary, deliver Octavius, to be punist for his conspiration: othirwayis, thay suld have sone experience, quhat foly is to contempne the empire of Romanis.

Fincormak, havand thir chargis at diffiance, come forthwart with his army. Followit sone, ane dangerus battall. Alwayis the Romanis had bene victoriis, wer nocht ane multitude of landwart men hapnit to come rinnand doun ane hil, drivand away thair bestial fra dangeir of ennimes; and apperit to the Romanis as thay wer cumin on thair bakkis: and so the Romanis wer finalie discomfist. In this battal wer slane xv.M Albianis, and xvi.M Romanis. The chace continewit be Fincormak and Octavius on the Romanis, quhill thay come to York; quhair the two kingis wer plesantly resavit be the nobillis of Britane, and Octavius restorit to the crown thairof.

The nobillis of Britane gaif to Fincormak, for his assistance to Octavius in the said feild, all the landis of Westmureland and Cumber, with clame and kindnes thairof perpetually, and sweir nevir to cum in the contrar thairof.

Traherus, knawing na place sicker to remane in Britane eftir this victory, fled in France.

Chap. Eleventh.

How Octavius was put fra the crown of Britane be Traherus, Romane Capitane. How the said Traherus was slane, and Octavius restorit to the croun; and of Fincormakis deith.



HE Romanis vineust on this wise, ane counsal wes set at York, in the quhilk the nobillis of Britane concludit to defend thair realme and libertie fra injure of Romanis, and to suffir na uncouth blude to beir auctorite, in times cuming, above thaim. Attoure, it wes concludit to extend the marchis of Britane to the wal of Adriane; and to expell the Scottis out of Westmureland and Cumber, nochwithstanding the aith and promise maid to thaim afore.

Quhil sic thingis wer done in Britane, Octavius come, with x.m Britonis, on the Scottis and Pichtis dwelling in Westmurland; bot at last he wes discomfist, and his army put to flicht.

In the mene time, Traherus, Capitane of Britane, quhilk wes chasit, as we schew afore, in France; returnit, with two Romane legionis and xx.m wageouris, in Britane: be quhome Octavius wes discomfist, and destitute of all support and freindis. Finalie, this Octavius, havand na confidence in the Scottis nor Pichtis, for violatioun of his faith; come to the mouth of Humber, quhair he pullit up salis, and went in Norroway.

Traherus, eftir this victory, ilk day incressit in sic pissance, that the Britonis wer randerit to him: nottheles, he exercit gret cruelties on al the nobillis and commonis of Britan; and finalie, restorit the crown thairof to Romane empire. And quhen he had stablit the realme in this maner; throw corruppit insolence efter sa hie felicite, he become the maist vicious tyrane that evir had ony charge afore in Britaue; and invadit the nobillis and commonis thairof with ithand heirschippis and slauchter. Throw thir tyrannis, followit sic rebellion aganis him in al partis, that he wes finalie slane.

Octavius, heirand the slauchter of Traherus, returnit fra Denmark in Britane; and persewit the Romanis with sic cruelte, that na kirkis nor sanctuaryis micht be refuge to thaim: and maid distributioun of his officis and auctoriteis to his freindis and nobillis, as he thocht maist expedient to keip his subdittis in justice, and to defend thaim fra injure of Romanis. And thought seindil ar found men but insolence, quhen they find felicite efter trubill; yit Octavius was alterit in sic maner, that quhare he was sumtime maist fals and treasonabill in his werkis, he become maist faithfull and nobill prince. And sone after, he send ambassatouris to King Fincormak, with sindry jowellis, desiring him to have na respect to the offence maid be him aganis the Scottis and Pichtis in times bygane, bot to leif in amite and freindschip with him and Britonis in times cuming: and to haif his sicker kindnes, he was content that Westmureland and Cumber war perpetually annixit to the empire of Scottis and Pichtis, on the samin maner as Carance gave thaim afore to King Craithlint. Mony yeris after, Octavius governit Britane in gud justice. Quhill at last he was sa brokin with frequent weris, that he randerit all the strenthis of his realme, to have peace with Romanis in his eld; and was content to pay the auld tribute.

Followit sicker peace mony yeris after, amang the Scottis, Pichtis, and Britonis in Albioun: in quhilk time, Fincormak, richt illuster in glore of chevelry and civil materis, be lang infirmite generit of catabare, decessit, the **XLVII** yeir of his regne; fra the incarnatioun, **CCCLVIII** yeris.

Chap. Twelvth.

How the heresyis of Arrius wes condampnit. How Ireland tuke the faith of Crist. How Romak, Fethelmak, and Angusiane contendit for the crowne. How Romak was maid King; and slane after, for his tyranny.



URING this time, the Cristin faith apperit to rise in gret dignite: nochtheles, the cursit heretik Arrius began to poison it with vennimus doctrine; saying, Crist was nocht the verray Sonne of God, coequall and ceternall to the Fader, bot different fra him in substance. Efter degeist consultatioun, all his opinionis war condampnit in Counsall of Nicia, with mony othir vane errouris, quhilgis I wil not rehers at this time: for I have maid this translation mair for plesair of lawit men, than ony vane curius clerkis, be quhom all heresyis beginnis.

Ireland, about this time, tuke the faith of Crist, be ane woman of the Pichtis blude, quhilke instruckit the Quene of Ireland in the faith; and scho instruckit hir prince, the king: and sa within schort time, all the regiou恩 thairof tuke the faith. Mony othir pepill, in the eist and west partis of the warlde, tuke the faith in the samin maner. Bot we will returne to our history.

Fincormak left behind him two sonnis, Eugenius, of xviii yeris of age, and Ethodius, nocht ane yeir of age. Thir sonnis of Fin cormak, for the lawis afore rehersit, micht nocht immediatly succee to the crown; and thairfore ane counsall was set in Argyle, to cheis the king: quhilke day, comperit Romak, Fethelmak, and Angusiane, contending for the crown; for thay war nepottis to Craith-lint, gottin on sindry lis brethir; al thre nere equal in yeris, freindis, and gudis. Romak clamit the crown as maist nobil; for he was not only cumin of the blude rial of Scottis, bot als of Pichtis, and had thairfore mony of the nobillis assisting to his opinion. Angusiane clamit the crown with consent of Fethelmak, and alledgedit he

wes ane man of more reason, experiance, and wisdome, than wes Romak ; and wes abillar, thairfore, for the ministracion of the realme.

In the mene time, Romak gaderit ane band of armit men, to sla his two cousins, traistinge the more esalie to succeed to the crown. Thus rais na thing bot ire and hatrent amang the thre cosingis ; every ane of thaim cruelle set in otheris slaunchter, and lauboring to draw moniest of the nobillis to thair opinioun. Alwayis the maist nowmer of nobillis assentit to Angusiane : for Romak wes ane man of mair ferocite than wisdome ; be contrar, Angusiane wes more reasonable, havand nocht sa mony subtel and fals slichtis as Romak had. The nobillis, seing thaim abil na wayis to be brocht to concord, tuke final purpos to devide the realme betwix thaim. Yit otheris, more prudent men, thocht the samin unprofitable ; for it micht rais perpetual seditioun, in dammage of thair commoun weil.

Finalie, Romak, impacient of lang tary, be birnand desire to have the crown, gaderit ane army of Pichtis ; and come with arrayit battall aganis Angusiane, and his othir cosing, Fethelmak. Than Angusiane send his oratouris to the King of Pichtis, praying him to foster na seditioun amang the Scottis and Pichtis, and to solist his cosing Romak erar to concord than battall, sen he micht have all thing according to reason, but ony plee. The King of Pichtis, thinkand thir desiris reasonabil, tuk purpos to returne hame : nochtheles, be evill counsall of freindis, he abaid, and gaif unpleasand answere. This unpleasand answer wes nocht onlie occasioun to the nobillis of Scotland to assist to Angusiane aganis Romak, bot als to have the Pichtis at extreme hatrent. Sone eftir, Angusiane, advertist that Romak lay in wait of his slaunchter, gaderit ane army, with purpos erar to end the mater be swerd, than ay to leif in dangeir of his life. Romak, impacient of lang tary, met him on the same maner. Followit ane sorowfull battall. Nochtheles, Angusiane wes discomfist, and baith himself and his cosing Fethelmak chasit in the Ilis ; and finding na securite thair, thay fled in Ireland.

Angusiane doung out of Albion in this sort, mony of the nobillis assistit to Romak ; and declarit him king. Yit, as the custom

of tyrannis is, he conquest the realme wekitlie, and governit it on the same maner; and had nane familiar with him, bot sa mony as wer ennimes to Fincormak and his sonnis. Sic thingis done, he maid him to vesy all boundis of his realme, doing justice in his manner. This tyranny of Romak beand divulgat throw the centre, causit Eugenius and Ethodius, the sonnis of Fincormak, to fle in Westmureland; and thair finding na securite, thay fled to the Ile of Man. Than followit gret truble in Scotland; as proscriptioun, slauchter, and oppressioun on all the nobillis that favorit Angusiane, but ony difference of age.

The nobillis, impacient to suffer sic cruell tyrannyis, convenit togidder, be secret writingis, to redres al oppressionis and wrangis done be him; syne gaderit ane army with sic diligence, that this tyrane Romak knew nocht of thair assemblance, quhill thay wer cuming on him in ane arrayit battall, within x milis.

Romak, astonist be thair cumming, fled in Pentland: nochttheles, he was sa ferslie invadit be ane buschement of Scottis that followit on him, that he was slane, with sindry otheris Scottis of his opinion, the thrid yeir of his regne; his heid borne on ane staik throw al the army.

Mony gentillmen of Pichtis war slane at this time with Romak, sic as favorit his governance, and causit him to rage with gret crunte on the Scottis.

Chap. Thirteenth.

How Angusiane was maid King of Scottis. How Maximus subdewit the Britonis be sindry victoryis. How Scottis and Pichtis invadit othir with set battall. How baith thair Kingis war slane, and the Scottis discomfist.



OMAK, the tyrane, slane in this maner, Angusiane returnit in Albion, and was maid king. Quhill sic thingis war done in Scotland, the Britonis grew insolent be slauchter of Traherus, Romane capitane, and restorit the crowne of Britane to Octavius, quhilk was than far run in aige: throw quhilk thay recoverit baith thair munitionis, landis, and liberteis.

Constantius, Emprioure, and sonne to the gret Constantine, send ane vailyeant knicht, namit Maximus, in Britane, to dant the Britonis. This Maximus, sone efter his cuming, faucht aganis the Britonis, and put thaim to flicht. Be this victory he was put in esperance to subdew the Britonis, as thay war afore, to servitude.

Octavius, King of Britonis, heirand thir tithingis, tuke sic malancoly, that he deceissit, the thrid day ester; and efter his deith, Octavius, his sonne, fled in the Ile of Man: quhare he remanit with Ethodius and Eugenius, unknawin quhat he was. The Britonis, nocht mekill astonist be this discomfitoure, gaderit ane new army, with mair pissance than afore: nochttheles, thay war vincust, and chasit on the same maner. Maximus, efter thir victoryis, past throw sindry boundis of Britane, and gat mony of the pepill randerit to his opinioun: otheris, quhilkis war repugnant, war put to wraik, and thair strenthis cassin down.

Quhill sic thingis was done in Britane, rais gret trubil in Scotland: for Nectanus, King of Pichtis, to revenge the slauchter of his cosing Romak, wastit the landis of Scotland be sindry incursionis. The Scottis, to resist this violent dereptionis, war constrainit to rise in battall aganis the Pichtis. Nochttheles, the Pichtis drew ane gret

nowmer of Scottis, quhilgis war movit for slauchter of Romak, to thair opinioun, and provokit the residew of Scottis, ilk day, to battal. Nochtheles, Angusiane send his ambassatouris to thaim, schawing him desirus of peace, and gevin to the weill of baith the realmes; and desirit thaim to devoid all injuris, and concur togidder in amite, as thair faderis did afore, for defence of thair realmis. At last, quhen Angusiane saw his desiris repellit, that his sleuth suld nocht be occasioune of insolence to his ennimes, he gaderit his folkis, and went furthwart in gud array. Efter mony singulare battallis of vailyeant men, baith the armyis junit, and faucht with gret ire and hatrent on athir side. At last, the Pichtis war discomfist, and mony of all thair nobillis slane. King Nectanus was chasit, quhill he come to Camelon; and sone efter his cumming thairto, he convenit the residew of his nobillis to ane counsall, and complanit, be lang orison, baith the slauchter of his eusing Romak, and the noblis of his realme that war slane with him; and desirit ane new army, to revenge the shameful injuris done laitly be Scottis. The Pichtis, mair set for the kingis foly and plesour, than for thair common weill, concludit ane new army to be rasit aganis the Scottis, out of all boundis under thair empire; and sone efter, thay come with the said army to the wod of Calidon.

Angusiane, richt provident in all his doingis, and knawing the Pichtis sa awfully gaderit aganis him, assemblit his folkis out of all boundis of his realme, erar to draw the Pichtis to concord, than to have battall with thaim; for he dred the Britonis, be perswasion of Romanis, to cum in support of Pichtis. And for that caus he send his plesand letteris to the King of Pichtis, praying him to remem-
ber the anciant amite and kindnes sa lang continewing betwix the two pepill; and to put end to thair weris, and to geif peace to Scottis, but ony battal, on that samin maner as he war victoriis above thaim, sen peace was necessar to baith thair armyis; for Maximus, Ro-
mane Capitane, was wirkand, ilk day, new attemptatis in Britane, and purposit, als sone as he hes subdewit Britane, to conques baith the realmes of Scottis and Pichtis, efter that thay have distroyit othir with civill weris.

The King of Pichtis, contempning this profitabil counsal, and havand na thing in les estimatioun than peace, rasit his army aganis

Angusiane. On the tothir side, Angusiane arrayit his army: and becaus it was necessar othir to jeopardre him to the chance of fortoun, or ellis to geif backis to his ennimes, with irrecoverable schame; he exhortit his men to have curage, and set asid al dredour, gif thay had ony; remembiring the gret spreit and manheid of thair eldaris, that thay may acquite thair deith; and thocht thay faucht with unfortunat chance of battal, that thay de nocth unrevengit of thair ennimes. Attoure, he prayit thaim to be nocth movit, thought thay be now to fecht aganis the pepill that was sa lang confiderat with thaim in amite and blude; sen thay gave na occasioune of battal, and hes left na thing undone, that micht have recousalit thaim to concord: for quhilk thay suld beleve, that God, the luffer of peace, suld favour thaim in thair just defence. On the tothir side, the King of Pichtis ceissit nocth to solist his army to battal. Incontinent, the archearis schot on all sidis; and efter thaim followit men with licht harnes, and schot incredibill nowmer of stanis and ganyeis, with corsbowis and slongis: incontinent, thay junit with speris, axis, and swerdis. Followit ane terribill battall, fouchtin lang time with doutsum victory. At last, Angusiane, seand the victory incline to Pichtis, raif of his coit armoure, and come amang the commonis, quhare he faucht with perseverant hatrent to the deith. The Scottis, traisting thair king erar fled than slane, gaif bakkis; otheris, perseverant with mair obstinat mind, faucht quhill thay war slane: and thocht the victory succedit to the Pichtis, yit it was unpleasand to thaim; for baith the kingis war slane in this feild, with infinite nowmer of nobillis and commonis slane on ilk side.

The residew of Scottis and Pichtis, quhilkis war eschapit out of this feild, returnit hame, and waryit thaim that was the first occasioune and motive of battal betwix the two pepill sa lang afore confiderit togidder in blude, amite, and freindschip.

Chap. Fourteenth.

How Fethelmak was maid King of Scottis; and how he slew Nectane, King of Pichtis; and was slane efter be thair treason. And of mony nobil Clerkis.



NGUSIANE slane in this maner, Fethelmak, the third nepot of Craithlint, was maid king. He gaderit the residew of Scottis togidder, with litill better fortoun than his two cosingis did afore: and in the secund yeir of his regne, he rasit his army to revenge the injuris done be Pichtis; and come in Angus, invading the inhabitantis thairof with gret heirschippis and cruelteis. The Pichtis, rageand in hatrent for thir extorsionis, ruschit in thair maist fury to harnes; and the Scottis, nocht abasit thairof, met thaim in the samin maner, and put baith thair wingis to flicht; sone efter, discomfist the middillward in the samin maner, with gret murdir maid on thaim in al partis. Nectanus, King of Pichtis, brothir to King Nectanus afore rehersit, was brocht out of the feild; and deceissit, the thrid day efter, be wound of ane arrow.

The Scottis, insolent efter this victory, waistit Angus and Fiffe with ithand incursionis. The Pichtis, brokin be this last discomfitoure, set thaim erar to stop the Scottis fra taking of thair munitionis and strenthis be licht bergenis, than ony set battal: and to do al thingis with mair prudence, thay chesit Hergestus, ane man of sle and fals ingine, to be thair king. This Hergestus, knawing his pepill sa brokin with continewal weris that he micht nocht revenge the injuris of Scottis, kest him to do the thing be slight, that he micht nocht do be force; and conducit two men of Pichtis to dissimil and fenye thaim Scottis, that thay micht mair esaly wait ane ganand time to sla the Kinge of Scottis. Thir Pichtis war crafty in casting of dartis; and becaus the King of Scottis tuke delectatioun in that game, thay war maid the mair familiar to him: nochttheles, thay socht ay ane ganand time and place for his slaunchter.

King Fethelmak hapnit to pas to Carrik, quihare he was in gret sollicitude all that day. At evin he went to his bed, and commandit ane harpar to sing ane soft sang, to draw him out of hevy materis on sleip. Als sone as he was fallin on sleip, the two Pichtis afore rehersit was convoyit be the harpar quhare he lay, and slew him sleipand in his bed, the thrid yeir of his regne. The wache herand the granis of ane deand man, enterit haistely in the chalmer quhare the king was liand bullerand in his blude : incontinent, thay followit on his slayaris sa scharply, that thay war all tane ; and quhen thay had confessit all the maner and circumstance of this treasonabill slauchter, thay war all punist maist cruelly to the deith, and drawin sindry with wild hors. This slauchter of Fethelmak hapnit in the fift yeir of Constantius, Emprioure.

About this time, war mony clerkis profound in every science : as, Victorine, oratoure ; Donatus, gramariour, and preceptour to Sanct Jerome ; Alcinus and Delphidinis, philosophouris ; with mony otheris, quhilkis war ouir prolixit to rehers.

Chap. Fifteenth.

How Sanct Reule brocht Sanct Androwis arme in Scotland ; and how the Kirk of Sanct Androwis was dotat be Hergest, King of Pichtis ; and of the loving thairof.

 ANCT REULE, the haly abbot, arrivit about this time in Albion, with Sanct Androwis arme. This Reule was ane monk of Grece, borne in Achaia, and abbot in the town of Patras, quhare mony religious men war obeisant under his cure. He was ane of thaim that was send be Constantius, Empriour, to vesy the blissit reliquies of Sanct Andro. And quhen the said Reule had done his devotioune with maist reverence, he was commandit, be ane hevinly visioun, to take the arme of Sanct Andro, with IIII fingaris, and IIII tayis of his fut ; and to pas with the samin in the far nuke of the warld, namit Albion. Reule, monist be this visioun, come, with the said reliquies, throw the seis Mediterrane to Portingale ; and with huge pine and trubil,

he come throw the Spanye, Franche, and Almane seis, and arrivit in the town quhilk is now callit Sanct Androwis: quhare thay war schipbrokin, and na thing savit except a few nowmer of haly men, quhilkis come with the said reliquies. Thir tithingis divulgat in the cuntre, causit the King of Pichtis and his pepill to cum with riche offerandis out of all partis, to adore the reliquies of the haly appostill, Sanct Andro. The King of Pichtis with his pepil war ressavit be Sanct Reule and his fallowis, in thair religious habitis, with sangis and ympnis, and othir divine ceremonyis, as afferit. Than Hergestus fell on kneis, and with maist reverence kist thir blisst reliquies, and gaif his palice riall, richely biggit efter the use of thay dayis, to Sanct Andro, Sanct Reule, and otheris his fallowis; and biggit ane kirk, nocht far fra the said palice, dedicat in the honour of Sanct Andro. Men sayis, it is the samin kirk that standis yit in the common kirk yard of the abbay, and was callit, in auld times, the kirk of Sanct Reule; bot it is now callit the auld kirk of Sanct Andro. Hergest dotat this kirk with cowpis, challicis, bassingis, lawaris, and sindry othir riche jowellis of gold and silver, to remane thair perpetually in the honour of devine service. The posterite of King Hergestus succeding efter him, and the Scottis, quhen the Pichtis was exilit of this realme, hes had Sanct Andro in maist reverence, as patroun of thair realme.

The abbay kirk was dotat efter be King Malcolme the madin, and King Robert Brus, with rentis, landis, and possessionis, mair largely. This abbay was in governance of ane nobil man, Johne Hebburne, priour thairof, in the time of the first compiling of thir croniklis. This priour was ane wise prelat, and decorit this kirk in with mony riche ornamentis. He biggit ane wall of square stanis about the kirk. This wall includis the kirk of Sanct Leonard, quhare the novicis of the said abbay, and uthir scolaris, lernis thair grammer, logik, theology, with mony othir science of naturall and morall philosophy; and hes sic continewal exercition, that mony resolute and profound clerkis risis daily in gret virtew throw the samin. In this kirk, war first preistis callit Culdeyis; bot now in it, ar Channonis Regular efter the institutionis of Sanct Augustine, gevand thair ingine in continewall exercitioun of letteris, and professioun of thair religiou. Heirfore, gif thou wil have respect to letteral exercition, thou sall find thair generall study in every science: gif thou will

be contemplative, thow sal find thair maist honorabill service of God, with hevinly and delitious sang in maist crafty music : gif thow wil have sicht to magnificence and curious biggin, thow sal find name of mair honestee nor admiration in Italy, France, or Almany, biggit curiously be this nobill man : quhilk deceissit the yeir afore the cuming of thir croniklis to licht, to na les dammage of commoun weill, than spreding of letteris in this realme. Amang mony othir his honorabill werkis, it is gretumly to be lovit, that afore his deith he maid his nepot Patrik, ane man of singular virtew and eruditiooun, his successoure, to compleit the magnificent werkis that he afore began. The yeir that Sanct Reule come with the reliquies of Sanct Andro in Scotland, was fra the incarnatioun ccclxix.

Chap. Sixteenth.

How Eugenius was maid King of Scottis. How Hergest, King of Pichtis, was confiderat with Romanis for distruption of Scottis. How Maximus, Capitane of Britane, invadit the Scottis with gret cruelteis and slauchter.



ETHÉLMAK, slane in maner afore rehersit, the nobillis brocht Eugenius and Ethodius, the sonnis of Fincormak, out of the Ile of Man, quhare thay abaid, eschewin the fury of Romak, Angusiane, and Fethelmak : and the eldest of thaim, namit Eugenius, the first of that name, was maid king. Maximus, capitane of Britane, knawing the hatrent betwix the Scottis and Pichtis, na les desirus to distroy thaim baith than to agment the glore of Romane empire ; devisit sic ane subtil slicht, that he might first distroy the Scottis, and syne the Pichtis. And to wirk this mater with mair crafty slichtis, he send ambassatouris to Hergest, King of Pichtis, schawing him richt sorrowfull for the injuris done to him be Scottis ; and desirit, thairfor, to be confiderat with the said King of Pichtis aganis the Scottis : quharethrow it might happen, that his pepil might rise in sic pissance, be support of Romanis and Britonis, that thay might othir thirll the Scottis to

maist vile servitude, or ellis expell thaim, gif thay plesit, out of Albioun, and conques thair landis and rowmes to thaim and thair posterite. King Hergest plesantly ressavit thir ambassatouris, and gave thankis to God, that send to him support, in sa extreme dangeir, aganis his cruell ennimes : and said, It plesit him weill to be confederat with the Romanis, sa thay wald concurre with him and his pepill to revenge the injuris done be the Scottis. Maximus condiscendit to thair desiris, traisting the samin to cum to hie felicite of Romane empire.

Nocht lang efter, it was concludit, be convention of Hergestus and Maximus at York, that Pichtis, Britonis, and Romanis, sal be confederat togidder in tendir amite, and the Scottis to be haldin as ennimes to thaim all. Efter this conventiouu, Maximus send ane herald to Eugenius, King of Scottis, chargeand him to redres all skaithis done to Pichtis, and deliver the misdoaris to King Hergest, to be punist at his plesour : uthirwayis, he and his pepill suld be reput as ennimes to the senat and pepill of Rome. Eugenius answerit, He nevir offendit the Romanis nor Britonis be injuris ; and thairefore, he belevit the Romanis wald nocht be sa wrangus, as to invade him with battall but reasonabill motive or occasioun. Forthir, he understude the Romanis has nocht gottin sic humanite and kindnes of Pichtis, to move ony weir aganis the Scottis than present, sen thay nevir offendit to Romanis. Alawayis, he was content baith to geif and take redres with the Pichtis ; and thay quhilkis invadis uthir with injuris in times cuming, to be punist as the crime requirit. Forthir, gif the Romanis, be advise of Pichtis, wald invade him but ony just occasion of battal, he micht do na thing les, than commend his gud actioun to God, the punisar of wrangis, and do the best he micht for defence of his realme and liberte : for the Romanis, as weill apperis, ar na les set for exterminioun of Pichtis, than of Scottis.

Maximus, efter this answer, assemblit ane large army of Romanis, Britonis, and Franchemen, and enterit in Westmureland, ceissing fra na maner of cruelteis on the inhabitantis thairof ; and garnist all the strenthis of that regiouн with Romane sodjouris. And sone efter, he come in Annandale, Galloway, and sindry uthir boundis, exercising gret cruelteis on the same maner.

The Scottis, herand sa huge multitude of pepill assemblit aganis thaim, war affrayit. Nnochtheles, seand na uthir remeid, thay come out of all partis of Scotland, be command of Eugenius, with na les manheid than ardent desire to resist thair ennimes, and faucht with Romanis beside the watter of Cree: quhare he was put to flicht, and his army discomfist. Sa gret slauchter was maid on the brayis of this rever, that the same was fillit full of deid bodyis. The Romanis followit sa fast on the chace of Scottis, quhill at last thay enterit in ane new bergane with the men of Argyle; for thay war cumin forthwart to support Eugenius army, knawing na thing of this discomfiture. And quhen thay saw the Romanis follow with sic cruelteis on the Scottis, thay ruschit with terribil vissage, noyis, and rummising, on the said Romanis; and maid sic undemus slauchter on thaim, that the residew of the Scottis, quhilkis war laitly diffait, returnit to battall, and chasit the Romanis agane to thair tentis, invading thaim with continuall slauchter, quhill the nicht put end to thair laubour. Thus was the chance of battall variant, the first day, betwix the Scottis and thair ennimes. The Romanis, nocht knawing the counsall of Scottis, howbeit mony of thaim war slane, stud in hovor, nocht knawing quhidder thay wald renew battal in the samin nicht, or abide the day. Yit, to have thaim reddy aganis all chance that micht follow, thay stufsit thair tentis with maist crafty ordinance. Eugenius seing, on the morrow, his pepill brokin with sic innoumerable slauchter, raisit his tentis within the nicht, and come to Carrik: quhair he tuk lang consultatioun, how he micht arme him best aganis al chance of battal that micht follow. Maximus, on the morow, intending to persew the Scottis with new battall, wes advertist of gret seditioun rising in Britane; speciallie amang thaim that dwelt within the Romane provincis. Thir novellis causit him to desist fra his purpos, and returne in Kent. Eftir that, he garnist all the strenhis of Galloway with men, munitionis, and vittallis. Thir wer the dedis of Maximus aganis Scottis in the first yeris.

Chap. Seventeenth.

How Maximus returnit in Galloway, to revenge the injuris done be Scottis aganis Pichtis. How Eugenius come with l.m men, to resist the Romanis, Pichtis, and Britonis. How he was slane, his brothir tane, and his army discomfist.

A **M**XIMUS, in the yeir following, wes sa ithandlie occupit with this trubill of Britonis, afore rehersit, that he nicht nocht retурne to the weris of Scottis. Nochtheles, mony frequent incursionis continewit al the said time betwix his wageouris and the Scottis. At last, quhen the Scottis had assailyeit lang time, howbeit it wes in vane, to recover the strenthis of Galloway; thay past throwe Menteith, Striviling, and Fiffe, and sindry othir boundis of Pichtis, invading the same with sic cruelte, that thay wer left desert. Maximus apperit richt hevy at thir offendis; howbeit na thing wes more plesand to him, than to heir the Scottis and Pichtis invading othir, to baith thair mischeiffis. Finalie, he come in Galloway, with purpos to pas throw all the remanent boundis of Scottis.

Than wes Eugenius nocht far fra the Romanis, abiding the cumming of his pepill: to quhom comperit, gret confluence of fensabil men and wemen, to the nowmer of fifty thousand pepil, richt desirus to fecht, and criand atanis with huge nois, othir to de, or ellis to have victory; for thay wer cruelly slane in al partis quhare thay nicht be apprehendit be Romanis, but ony mercy or ranson. And, nochwithstanding thair gret curage, thay wer sumpart astonist, herand the Romanis cumming in thair landis, with more multitude and pissance of pepill, than evir wes sene in ony of thair boundis afore. Yet, otheris havand the Romane tyranny at dispiste, wer rasit in maist fury, regarding na thing thair life in defence of thair liberte. Than Eugenius, with gret curage, dissimulit his contenance, as he wer affrayit of na thing les than of the Romanis; and devidit his army in thre battalis: the richt wing wes gevin to his

brodir Ethodius; the left wing to Doalus, capitane of Argyle; and in the middilward, wes himself. Thir battallis wer arrayit in sic craft, that in the place quhair the battall wes set, he belevit nocht onlie to have the river of Munda, deip but ony furd, on the bakkis of his army, that thay suld fecht but refuge: bot als to have ye sonne gangand to siclik on thair bakkis, that thair ennimes nicht nocht hald up thair ein for reflexioun of contrar beimis in thair sicht. Sic thingis done, Eugenius went to ane hie mote, and callit his army to the standart, and said in this maner: “ Our eldaris, “ that began this realm with continewall laubour, and brocht the “ samin with honour to our days, forcy championis, commandit thair “ posterite to defend thair realme and liberte, quhilk is maist dulce “ and hevinly treasoure in the erd, aganis al invasouris; havand “ esperance of victory, quhen time wes to fecht aganis thair en-“ nimes, in na thing more than in thair handis: and to be obe-“ sant to the wise and nobill capitaniis of this realme; quhais “ auctorite and prudence bene sicker targe, baith to thair guddis, “ landis, and liffis, aganis all preis and dangeir of ennimes. All “ our eldaris, that ar passit afore us, wer ay obedient to the com-“ mand of thair nobillis; and thocht thay have fouchtin oftimes, “ with sindry chancis of battall, aganis the dantouris of the wrold, “ yit thay wer finalie victouris. Nowe, mon we fecht, maist vail-“ ycant championis, with sic manheid and curage, as our eldaris “ faucht afore us; or ellis mon we tine oure realme and liberte, and “ be thirllit to maist vile servitude, at the will of oure ennimes. “ Now approchis Maximus, our cruell and unmercifull ennemy, to “ reif baith our landis and guddis, gif we support nocht oureself be “ grace of God and oure manheid. He is sa ful of fals ingine and “ slichtis, that he is now confiderat with Pichtis, als weill in perdi-“ tion of thaim as of us; intending thairthrow to bring the haill em-“ pire of Albioun, howbeit the samin wes nevir hard afore, under “ Romane obeisance. The Pichtis, be mischant foly, passis to bat-“ tall in support of thair profest ennimes, quhilkis ar richt desirus “ to reif fra thaim thair kingdome and honouris. Thay come “ aganis us, quhilkis wer ay thair protectouris, sen first thair realme “ beganne. It is uncertane be quhat mischeif thir Pichtis bene “ abusit, nocht knawing the irrecoverabill dammage that is to fal “ on thame, in eversioun of thair common weill and liberte: and

" thought thay knew the same, thay gif no attendance thairto. Yit,
 " sa far as pertenis to our actioun, consider that our ennimes ar to
 " fecht aganis us, quhome we nevir offendit with injuris: throw
 " qubilk, thair werkis sal be the more unchaney, and mair odious to
 " God. Be contrar, remember ye ar to resist thair invasioun; and
 " in your pure defence, ar to fecht for youre realme and liberte:
 " and ar the posteritie of thay forey championis that sumtime maist
 " gloriously chasit the Romanis out of thir boundis. Now it is
 " cumin to sic point, that we mon othir be vincust, and suffir ex-
 " treme miserie and servitude; or ellis to be victouris, and stabill
 " oure landis to us with glore, honoure, and permanent eis. I be-
 " seik yow, my gud companyeonis, for the unvincibill manheid,
 " faith, and virtew of your eldaris, and for thair paill goistis,
 " quhilkis defendit this youre realme in liberte to thir dayis; to suf-
 " fir nocht yow thair sonnis to be reft and spulyeit of your realme,
 " liberteis, and gudis; nor yit to be taikin, as cativis, to underly
 " thair tyrannyis. And gif it hapnis yow be advers chance, quhilkis
 " God defend, to de, than do, sa far as in yow, to acquit your deith;
 " and think, better is to de honestlie, than to leif in schame. Knawe
 " youreself dotat with incredibill manheid and virtew; and heri-
 " touris, be anciant linnage, als weill to your nobill faderis in wis-
 " dome and chevalrie, as in thair landis: nocht gaderit of divers
 " nationis, bot of ane pepill under ane mind: and servandis to the
 " Eternall God, that gevis victory to just pepill, in reward of thair
 " virtew; and to fals and wrangus pepil schame, discomfiture, and
 " slauchter. Belt yow, thairfore, lusty gallandis, with manheid and
 " wisdome, to have victory: quhilk soll nocht fail to succeid, gif ye,
 " with constant curage, have na thing bot schamful fleing in dre-
 " dour; and invaid your ennimes with sielik cruelte as thay in-
 " tend to invaid yow."

Skarsly had Eugenius rasit the spreit of his army be this hortatioun, quhen Maximus apperit in sicht, with all his army; and come forthwart with more diligence than wes beleivit: for he come sone
 eftir the sonne rising. The Scottis wer astonist be huge multitude
 of ennimes: nochtheles, seand na refuge, thay determit to assailye
 the extreme jeoperde of armis. Sone eftir, thay arrayit thaim, with
 thair bakkis to the sonne; that the glance and beinis thairof suld
 nocht be impediment to thair fechting: and skarslie wer thay weil

arrayit, quhen thay ruschit forthwart on thair ennimes. This feirs rinning wes impediment to Maximus to do his devore: nochtheles, seand the time sa schort, he exhortit his army to remember the Romane virtew, and to be not affrayit of barbar pepil, quhom thay recently discomfist. Incontinent, baith the armyis, be sound of trumpat, junit, with huge nois and clamour on all sidis. At the first contering, it wes so cruelly fochtin, that it wes uncertane to quhat party maist dangeir succedit: than followit sindry chancis of fortoun. For the Scottis that faucht in the richt wing under Ethodious, to win na les honour than glore, set on the Pichtis fornence thaim, and chasit thaim throw the watter of Dune; quhair mony of thame, ourset with slik and glar thairof, wer slane: than, be proud and insolent glore, as thay had bene sicker of victory, thay stragulit fra thair fallowis, cassin to spulye; throw quhilk mony of thaim wer slane eftir, be ane Romane legiouн that wes send be Maximus in support of the said Pichtis. In the last wing, quhair Doalus faucht, the Scottis met with Franchemen, Britonis, and Almanis: quhair thay wer slane, fechtand with perseverand manheid to the deith, for defence of thair realm. Than all the Romane army, be command of Maximus, ruschit on the middill warde, quhair Eugenius faucht with his nobillis, wery, and neir vincust be multitude of thair ennimes: howbeit, mony of thaim, feirsly repugnant quhil thay micht, failyeit na thing that pertenit to forcey campionis. The nobillis that faucht in Eugenius army, seing the victory incline to Romanis, desirit Eugenius to saif him be flight to better fortoun; and incontinent thay raif of his coit armoure par force, to mak him unknawin: nochtheles, he abaid, fechtand with perseverand malice aganis the Romanis; and wes slane, the thrid yeir of his regne.

Quhil sic terrible murdir wes maid in the army of Scottis, al thair careage men, that wer left to keip thair bestiall and vittallis, havand na armoure bot swerdis to defend thaim, and seing sa mony nobill men slane; be pietuous commiseratioun, ruschit on thair ennimes, and wer al slane, fechtand to the deith.

Quhill the Romanis wer following in the chace, be gret ire and hatrent, on this maner, thay fell in ane uncouth maner of bergane; for the agit and febill personis, that war left at hame as unfensabil

bodyis, richt desirus to heir quhat chance was fallin to thair sonnis, come to the place quhare the battall was: bot quhen thay saw sa pietuous and lamentabil slauchter maid on thair sonnis and freindis, thay ruschit on thair ennimes like furius creaturis, regarding nothir life, reason, nor aige. The wemen come efter, with terribill noysis, rummisching as wod rageand beistis, and set on the Romanis. Nochtheles, baith the aigit men and wemen war finalie slane. The Romanis passit the nicht following with sa huge feir and dredoure, that na trinchis nor walking micht be sufficient munitiou to thair army; for the hillis, valis, and lesuris resoundit all the nicht with maist terribil spraichis of yammering pepill in the deidthraw: for nocht was hard bot horribill murning of sobband and deand pepill, cryand ane vengeance on Romanis and Pichtis, be quhais treasonabill slichtis this huge murdir was maid on thaim. On the morrow, Maximus partit the spulye of the feild amang his army, and maid the deid bodyis to be buryit: and to schaw him nocht degenerat fra Romane mercy, he maid thaim that war left on liffe, and sair woundit, to be curit with maist crafty surrigianis: amang quhome was Ethodius, brothir to Eugenius, tane, and curit, be reuth of Maximus, of all his woundis.

Chap. Eighteenth.

*How the Scottis, be gret cruelte of Pichtis, war exilit out of Albion.
How the Abbay of Comkil was foundit.*

 HE Scottis discomfist in this wise, King Eugenius was found slane; quhome Maximus gart bury with funerall obsequies: syne went with his victorius army throw sindry boundis of Scotland, and gat mony of the inhabitantis thairof randerit as he plesit. The Pichtis, desiring the ute exterminioun of Scottis, tuke hie displesair, that the said Scottis war sufferit in this wise to leif in Albioun. Maximus maid him to meis thair indignatioun, saying, It pertenit to Romane majeste, to have na les mercy on thair subdittis, than ferocite above thair con-

spiratouris and rebellis. It was alsua propir to Romanis to conques pepill mair be benivolence than tyranny; for na thing might degraid mair the Romane glore, than to use cruelteis on thair subdewit pepill: and becaus the Scottis war sufficiently punist for thair rebellionoun, thair king slane, thair army discomfist, and thair strenthis tane; he wald invaid thaim with na forthir punitioun, les than thay conspirit with new rebellionoun.

The King of Pichtis and his nobillis, na thing satifyit of this answer, bot erar movit with mair indignatioun, desirit Maximus, be mony gret perswasionis, to sla all Scottis, in every part quhare thay might be apprehendit; saying, Thay war thair profest ennimes, borne in thair ute exterminioun, and rejoising onelie in murdir of Romanis: othirwayis, the Romanis and thair confederat freindis might have na sicker felicite in Albioun.

The Pichtis seing thaim frustrat of thair desiris, began to convert thaim to mair slight; and finalie, corruppit Maximus with large money, quhilk movis all mortall creaturis to maist terribill fellonyis; and purchest all Scottis to be monist, under pane of deid, to pas out of Albioun at ane prefixt day, that thair landis and rowmes might cum in pray to Romanis and Pichtis. The day byrunne, all Scottis war exilit, and commandit, under pane of maist cruell punitioun, nevir to returne in Albioun. Be this proscription, sum of thaim went into the Ilis; otheris in Ireland, Orkney, France, Italy, Norroway, and Denmark.

Efter proscription of the men, come sindry ladyis of Scotland, arrayit in thair dule habit, for doloure of thair husbandis, quhiliks war slane in this last battall; and desirit Maximus, with lamentabill regrait, to suffer thaim leif, as cativis, the residew of thair miserabill life within thair native land, to pray for thair husbandis, and finaly be buryit with thaim in graif. Bot thay couth purches nocth with all thair dolorus teris, bot plane repuls: and sa the ladyis and gentillwemen war exilit on the samin maner as the men. Thir doingis war occasiou to Maximus to detest the inhumaniteis and cruell maneris of Pichtis. The Pichtis, rageand ilk day in mair cruelte; efter the day of generall proscription, murderit all Scottis, quhare thay might be apprehendit, but ony piete, ransoun, or miseration of thair estatis.

Quhill sic diligent serching was maid in all partis, Cartandis, Quene of Scottis, with two madannis and ane servand, was found at the sepulture of hir husband Eugenius, neir consumit with murning and teris: and becaus scho was the Prince of Walis doucher, scho was brocht to Maximus but ony displesoure. Maximus than remembiring the unsicker stait of man, and havand compassioun of hir sorrowfull chance, met hir in his honest maner, and maid hir al the consolatioun he micht; and prayit hir to be of gud confort, for he suld treit hir as his sister in times cumming. Sone efter, he cloithit hir with honest and semely abulyements, and gaif hir the town of Carrick, with sindry rentis and possessionis, to sustene hir rial estait: nochtheles, Cartandis, nocht unknawand fra quhat hie felicite scho was dejeckit, plesandly ressavit the yok of servitude. And quhen scho was returnand to the said town of Carrick, scho was tane, be the gait, be ane company of Romanis and Pichtis; and nocht onelie spulyet of hir hors, clething, money, and jowellis, bot als hir servandis slane, and hir madannis fulyeit.

Maximus advertist of this outrage, ceissit nocht quhill the misdoaris war punist, and hir guddis restorit; syne preservit hir, mony dayis efter, fra all injure of ennimes. On the morrow, the Pichtis come to Maximus, complaning hevaly that thair men war slane be perswasioun of ane cative woman, ennemy to thaim; and said thay deservit othir kindnes of Romanis, fechtand to the deith for ampliation of thair empire, aganis the pepil with quhilgis thay war confederat to thay dayis: and desirit, thairfore, that Cartandis suld be exilit in Britane, amang hir freindis.

Cartandis heirand thir wourdis, said, Scho was bot ane miserabill creature, nakit of hir husband and freindis; and wald be mair miserabill, gif scho, beand dejeckit fra hie felicite, was repute sa unworthy, that scho micht nocht be sufferit to leif amang hir ennimes, bot commandit to leif in daily schame amang hir freindis: howbeit it war mair plesand to hir to be in Scotland, praying for the vailyeant pepil that was slane with hir husband, during hir sobir life, than to leif in honoure of ony princely estait. Finaly, quhen scho had desirit outhir to be put haistely to deith, or ellis to be sufferit to leif, as scho desirit, in Scotland; sic commiseratioun rais amang the Romanis, movit be hir comploratioun, that scho was licent, con-

trar the mind of Pichtis, to remane in Scotland, quhare scho list, with rentis and possessionis effering to hir estait.

Sic thingis done, all preistis, monkis, and religious personis of Scottis blude, war exilit on the same maner out of Scotland: throw quhilk mony of thaim come in Ilis, and biggit the abbay of Colmekill, quhare mony devoit personis remanis yit to oure dayis. Uncertane quhidder the samin be mair plentuous of haly wemen or men, quhilkis leiffis devoutly in thair secret housis. Quhare throw it happenit that this abbay, howbeit it began soberly, be devotioune of pepill, and princely rewardis, was maid the commoun sepulture, mony yeris efter, of all Scottis kingis.

And thocht Ethodius, brothir to Eugenius, with otheris presoneris of Scottis, war evill woundit in this battal; yit thay war exilit, efter thair curing, on the samin maner; and sworne nothir to pas in Ireland, Orknay, nor Ilis, and constrainit thairfore to pas in Norroway.

The yeir that Scottis war exilit out of Albion be the weris of Romanis, was fra the beginning of the world, **v.MDXLVII** yeris; fra the incarnation of God, **ccclxxix** yeris; fra the beginning of Scottis in Albioun, **DCCXII** yeris: in the secund yeir of Juliane, Emprioure, quhilk was namit Appostita, becaus othir Empriouris afore him war Catholik princis, and he ane heretike,

Chap. Nineteenth.

Of sindry marvellis sene in Albioun. How the Scottis that fled in Ireland and the Ilis, returnnit in Scotland with gret power; and how thay war discomfist and slane.



N the yeir that Eugenius faucht with Romanis, war sene mony uncouth marvellis in Albioun, to the gret terroure of the pepill. In the nicht, apperit mony swerdis and wappannis birnand in the air; bot at last thay ran al togidder in ane gret bleis, and evanist out of sicht. The watter of Dune ran full of blude, and the brais of it schane all nicht,

as it had bene full of ithand firis. Mony small foulis fell out of the aire, in maner of ane schoure; and incontinent come ane huge multitude of ravinnis, and devorit thaim all. Howbeit the devinouris and wod wemen schew that thir uncouth and wonderfull prodigies signifyit the exterminioun of Scottis; yit thay war haldin in derisioun to the pepill, and inhibit to geif faith to sic fretis.

Sic felicite succeeding to Roimanis, and the Scottis beand exilit out of Albion, Gillo, Capitane of Ilis, advertist of the proscription of Ethodius in Norroway, but esperance of his returning; had sic desire to recover his realme, that he come with ane gret power in Argyle. In the mene time, his folkis, wide skatterit at thair incursionis and spulyeis, hapnit, be adventure, to cum on ane army of Pichtis, laid for defence of the cuntry; be quhome thay war finally chasit and slane. All thair schippis and galyeonis war brocht to the nixt port, to resist the residew of Scottis, gif thay happinnit to returne with ony new army.

The men of Ilis, brokin on this wise with dowbill calamite, baith with slauchter and tinsall of thair schippis, had na pissance to persew thair ennimes with ony forthir battal. The residew of Scottis, to eschew the ire and hatrent of Romanis, fled in Ireland, and pietuusly complanit afore the King and Princis thairof, that thair King Eugenius was slane, and all thair freindis, sumtime maist vailyeant in marciall dedis, banist out of Albion, be tyranny of Romanis, Britonis, and Pichtis; quhais cruelteis war sa odiously schawin on thaim, that na estait nor aige war savit, bot drevin be preis of battall in uncouth realmis, to leif in poverte and servitude: Thus was thair nobill and anciant realme, sa lang defendit be vailyeant championis to thay dayis, brocht to ute exterminioun be insaciabill avarice of Romanis, and gevin as pray to Britonis and Pichtis, in reward of thair falset and treason: And desirit, thairfore, for the luf and tendernes that Nature, the crafty modir of all creatouris, hes ordanit the parentis to haif to thair children, to support thaim aganis thair unmercifull ennimes; that the Scottis, sumtime descending of thair blude, and rejoising the realme of Scotland above ccc yeris, be nocht brocht to ute confusioun be Romane weris; sen thay ar cuming to thaim as to thair sicker anker, and last refuge in that extreme neid.

The princis of Ireland, movit be commiseratioun of this sorrowfull chance falling to Scottis, thair native pepill, send x thousand Irelandmen with thaim in Albion, to recover thair realme. This army come in Carrick, Kyle, and Cunningham, and ceissit fra na maner of cruelte on the Britonis and Pichtis that war found in thay boundis. Herdurstane, brothir to Hergest, King of Pichtis, afore rehersit, hering sa gret cruelteis done to Pichtis, come haistely, with ane army, to invaid the Scottis: nochtheles, he was put to flicht, and his army discomfist. Than the Scottis tuke advisement, quhat wes to be done. Sum allegit, howbeit victory succedit, to assailye nocht the chance of fortoun ony forthir: bot, efter this plesand victory, to returne in Ireland with the riche spulye of men and guddis, takin be thaim in the said battal; and erar to kepe thaim to ane better fortoun, than to abide, be manifest foly, the Romane pissance: quhilk had sa hie and singulare preeminence, baith in riches and chevalry, that na pepill micht resist thairto. Otheris said, Best was to follow fortoun, and recover the remanent landis reft fra thaim. Sen thair beginning succedit with sa happy chance, thair end suld follow with the mair prosperite; for it is oft times sene, that gret multitude of pepil bene vincust be few men: and, thairfore, in esperance of better fortoun, best was to rais thair curage, and outhir recovir thair native realme, or all atanis to de. This last opinoun was apprisit. Than the Scottis and Ireland men tuke full purpos to recovir all the remanent landis that pertenit to thaim be ony titill or law, in Albion. At last, quhen thay had fochtin with maist rageand fury aganis thair ennimes, na better fortoun succedit to thaim, than succedit afore to the men of Ilis; for few of thaim eschapit untakin, or slane with Romanis.

The princis and nobillis of Ireland, richt affrayit of thir tithingis, convenit to ane counsall, to have consultatioun how the Scottis micht be restorit to thair realme, and the Romanis best resistit. And quhen thay saw na sufficient remeid for the samin, thay set aside all othir materis; and concludit, to send thair oratouris to have peace of Romanis. The ambassatouris, that come to this effect, war reprovit be Maximus, quhy thay supportit the Scottis aganis the Romanis, considering na realmes in erd, saif Ireland, war fre of Romane weris to thay dayis. Yit peace was grantit to thaim under

thir conditionis : The princis and nobillis of Ireland sall resset na
ennimes of Romanis within thair realme, in timis cuming ; and thay
sal make na support to thaim that movis ony weris aganis the Ro-
manis or thair confederat freindis. Na theiffis, nor limmaris of Ire-
land, sal cum to do erandis, in timis cumming, in Albioun. The
peace ratifyit in this maner, followit na trubill efter in Albioun be
Ireland.

And sa endis heir, the Sext Buke of thir Croniklis.

The Sevint Buке.

HEIR BEGINNIS THE SEVINT BUKE

OF THE

CRONIKLIS OF SCOTLAND.

Chap. First.

*How Maximus conquest, be his liberalite, the crown of Britane.
How he slew Gratiane, Emprioure, and was slane be Theodosius.*



AXIMUS, havand trubill of ennimes dantit in all partis, with sicker peace; to make his prudent maneris mair patent, schew him sa benivolus to the pepil, that na man was denyit his presence; and had with him, in daily fallow-schip, mony of the gret nobillis of Britane; and tretit thaim sa plesantly, that sindry of thaim war drawin to his favoure. For quhen he ceissit fra publict materis, he gaif his ingine to tornamentis, warsling, and othir knichtly exercitioun, with Britonis; and become sa liberall, that he gave, on ane day, amang thaim, mair than all the tribute of Britane micht extend to for ane yeir. All the weirmen and knichtis in his campe, war perswadit to take his part, be his liberalite, aganis quhatsum-

evir jeoperdeis that micht fall. Maximus, knawing the mindis of his army gevin with sic fervent amite to him, set ane conventioune at York, and partit all the landis partenand sumtime to Scottis, amang the Pichtis and Britonis. Sic thingis done, he garnist al the strenthis of Britane with men, munitionis, and vittallis : syne callit afore him all his freindis and men of armis, quhom he knew maist favorable to his desiris ; and demandit thaim, be quhat ingine or wayis he micht maist easely conques the crown of Britane. The Britonis, knawing his imperial linnage and liberalite, with hic manheid, and craft of chevalrie, creat him king. Thocht Paulus Diaconus writtis, that he wes maid king contrar his will, I will follow my auctouris afore rehersit, erar than uncouth historianis. Valentiniiane, Empriour, knawing that Maximus had usurpit the crown of Britane, send divers capitaniis and armyis, to dant his rebellioun. At last, quhen he persavit the said Maximus invincibill in battal, and mony of his capitaniis and armyis discomfist and slane, he condiscendit lightly to have peace with the said Maximus.

Thus wes Maximus sufferit, be the Empriour, to rejose the crown of Britane ; quhilk he governit xvii yeris after but truble, havand the hale empire of Albion under his dominion : quhilk hapnit nevir afore to levand creature. He had the Pichtis in sic familiarite, that the strangest of thaim wer chosin capitane in his army, and other maid sodjouris in sindry castellis of Britane. And quhen he come in thair landis, he cloithit him with mantil bordorit with gold and silkin flouris, cfir thair gise ; and of thaim desirit noct bot ane smal tribute, to be ane memorial that thay wer tributaris to him in name of Romanis. The Pichtis and Britonis, deliverit thus of al deidly feir of Scottis, had Maximus in na les luf than vehement affection ; and rejosit, that the Scottis, thair auld ennimes, wer exilit out of Albioun, and put to ute rewine. Quhen Maximus had governed the crown of Britane certane yeris with gret manheid and prudence, he began, be insaciable avarice, to covate the haill empire of the warlde : and to conquerir the samin, he went in France, cfir that he had stoffit all the strenthis of Britane with strang munition and wageouris. At his cunning in France, he wes tenderlie ressavit be certane legionis of Romanis, quhilkis wer ennimes to Graciane, Emprioure, and bure him in deidlie hatrent, becaus he

had uncouth and barbar pepill in more reverence than Romanis. Maximus, favorit, be this mene, be the Romanis in France, gaderit ane army, with al pissance that he nicht assemble; and be suddane incursionis, slew Graciane, Empriour, the xxix yeir of his empire. Eftir this slaunchter, Maximus went throw Almany and Italie; and be feir of his onlie fame, he constrainit the peple to pay him tribute: nochttheles, he wes finalie slane be Theodosius, Emprioures.

Als sone as the Romanis quhilkis wer left in France knew the slaunchter of Maximus, thay tuke incontinent his sonne, namit Victour; and spulyeit him baith of his auctorite and life: as Paulus Diaconus writis at lenth, in the life of Graciane and Theodosius, Empriouris.

Chap. Second.

How Octavius was maid King of Britonis. How Mercius and Victorine wer send in Albion, to dant the Britonis. How the Pichtis war thirllit to gret servitude; and how thair King slew himself.

 HE Romane princis beand devidit on this maner amang thaimself, Octavius, sonne to Octavius, King of Britane, afore rehersit, returnit in Britane; for he fled, as we schew, in France, to eschew the tyranny of Maximus, quhen he subdewit Britane to his opinion; and clamit the crown to pertene to him as just heritoure, discending of the blud riall thairof be lang progression: and promittit, gif thay condiscendit to his opinion, to deliver thaim of Romane servitude, and to suffer nane bot thair native blud to regne above thaim in times cuming.

The Britonis, movit be his reasonis, and richt desirus to recover thair liberte, maid him king. The Romanis, quhilkis kept the strenthis and munitionis of Britane, wer repugnant to thir doingis. Thus apperit gret contentiououn: the Britonis set to defend Octa-

vius, and the Romanis to keip Britane under the empire of Theodosius, Empriour.

This rebellion of Britonis wes occasion to the Empriour to send new capitanis, with mony Romane legionis, to dant the Britonis: bot quhen he fand thay micht nocht be ouirthrawin be force of armes, he gaif thaim peace under thir conditionis: Octavius sall remane King of Britane, during his life, and amite with Romanis; the munitionis and strenthis of Britane to be kept be the Romanis; the administratioun of justice to be at the will of Theodosius, quhome he list depute for the samin: paying siclike tribute to the Empriour as thay payit afore to Maximus. Thus wes Britane maid tributar, as aforc, to Romanis.

Nocht lang eftir, two capitanis wer send, with mony legionis, in Britane: that ane, namit Marcius, to mak his residence at Londoun; and this othir, namit Victorine, to remane at York. Be governance of thir two capitanis, followit, mony yeris eftir, gret affliction to the Albianis; for Victorine convenit the Pichtis to ane counsal, and repruvit thame for using of thair awin lawis, in contempnioun of Romane auctorite, as thay had bene fre pepil, nocht astrickit to the Empriouris servitude. Efter sindry consultationis, he maid actis, That name of Pichtis sall regne eftir Hergest; na ministratioun of justice to be maid be thair awin lawis, bot onlie be Romanis; and the said Romanis to have above thaim, in times cuming, the auctorite of life and deith: and gif thay wer found repugnant to thir constitutionis, to be punist to the deith.

Hergest, King of Pichtis, thirllit thus to vile servitude in his latter age, wes penitent of the weris maid afore aganis the Scottis; seing, eftir thair proscripsioun, sa intollerable calamiteis appering, baith to his peple than present, and to thair posterite: and becaus he couth nocht put remeid thairto, for vehement dolour, he slew himself.

Victorine, knawing this unhappy end of Hergest, commandit that na Pichtis blude usurpe the crown in times cuming; and that name of thame beir office nor auctorite, under pane of deith; with all other chargis to be observat, quhilkis thay wer thirllit to be Maximus, quhen he exilit the Scottis. Thus wes the realme of Pichtis

spulyeit of thair native lawis, and subdewit to Romanis in maner of province, siclik as the realme of Britonis.

The Pichtis, havand the chargis of Victorine in derisioun, wer richt impacient to suffir the crown be reft fra thair native blud; and maid Durstus, the son of Hergest, to be thair king. Victorine, movit for thair rebellion, thocht best to dant thame afore thay gaderit ony more pissance, and come haistely in Pentland with gret ordinance.

The Pichtis in Camelon, with thair new king, heirand the cuming of Victorine, began to garnis thair town with all provisioun: nochtheles, soner than thay traistit, the Romanis beltit thair town with strang seige, and tuke it finalie be force of arms. In this towne wes tane King Durstus, and send to Rome, to underly the judgement of Romane senatouris. The principal movaris of this rebellious wer scurgit with wands throw the town of Camelon.

The Pichtis, dantit be Victorine in this maner, wer commandit to pay yeirlie to the Romane thesaurer, the fourt part of all the frutis growand on thair landis, with the feird part of thair bestial, under pane of deith; for he thocht the Pichtis sa insolent eftir the ejecition of Scottis out of Albion, that, gif thay wer nocht dantit in time, mony hie offendis nicht rise be thaim in Albion. And by all thir importable chargis, he thirllit thain to maist vile servitude; and send thaim in Britane, and othir realmes, to win mettellis, querrellis, and to mak tild. And above all thir calamiteis, thair come to thaim ane mair insufferable injure, devisit in finall distruption of thair realme: for within schort time eftir, thay wer commandit to pas, with thair wiffis, children, and guddis, under pane of deith, beyond the watter of Forth; and leif behind thame Mers, Berwik, Pentland, Galloway, Striveling, Carrik, Kyle, and Cunninghame, and mekill of all the wod of Calidon; that the samin nicht be perpetually inhabit, in times cumming, be Britonis. Attoure, thay wer commandit to big ane heich dike, fra Abircorne to Dunbriton, to devide thaim fra Britonis; and gif ony Pichtis transcendit this dike, to be punist na les than thay had offendit aganis the majeste of Romanis.

The Pichtis, grevit with thir and mony othir intollerabill injuris, began to lament thair sorowfull chance, fallin to thaim be thair

awin offence ; and rasit thair ein to the hevin, humily praying the mercifull God to deliver thame of Romane tyranny.

Chap. Thirđ.

Of Ethodius, brothir to Eugenius afore rehersit. Of his governance in Denmark; and of his successiou. How Rome was tane be Gothis; and how sindry spulyeis thairof fell to Fergus the Secund.



UHILL the Pichtis wer punist with thir and mony othir afflictionis, the Scottis wer vagabound, and banist in uncouth realmes, with thair wiffis and children ; sum of thaim levand on the laubour of thair handis ; otheris beand wageouris, and men of armis, under sindry princis and capitaniis of the warld.

Ethodius, brothir to Eugenius, banist, as we have schawin, with his wife, out of Albioun, wes plesantly tretit be the King of Denmark ; and gat certane landis, quhair he remanit with his wife : on quhom he gat ane sonne, namit Erthus. This Erthus, eftir the deith of his fader Ethodius, maryit ane nobill lady, namit Rocha, douchter to Rorik, quhilke wes gretest prince of Danis, under the king ; and gat on hir ane sonne, namit Fergus the Secund : quhilk recoverit the realme of Scotland, as we sall now schaw. This Fergus, in his flurisand youth, past, be command of the King of Danis, with ane cumpany of chosin and vailleant men, to Alarike, King of Gothis ; quhilk at that time wes passand, with huge army, to confound and distroy the empire of Romanis. Fergus wes richt glaid of this voyage ; for he bure extreme hatrent aganis the Romanis, becaus thay slew his eldaris, or ellis banist thaim fra thair native realm in uncouth regionis. Finalie, eftir mony battallis, fochtin be sindry chancis of fortoun, betwix the Romanis and Gothis ; Radagasus, principal Capitane of this army, beand slanc, with infinite nowmer of pepill, and the Romanis siclike brokin, with thair army and pissance ; ane strait seige wes laid about Rome, be the said

Alarik, King of Gothis. The Romanis debaitit the town lang time, be sindry jeoperdyis; quhil, at last, thay laikit vittallis: throw quhilk wes sic hunger amang thaim, that thay abhorrit noctt to eit the flesche of men, with othir sindry forbodin metis. "In deploratiooun of this calamite, my voce," sayis Sanct Jerome, "astonishment, and the sobbing cuttis my wourdis. The town is tane, that tuke al the warld, vincust more be hunger than swerd; and few found on live within the samin. Sa far sprang the hungry raige, that it constrainit the pepill to eit abhominable meitis: the moder sparit noctt to swelly the frute of hir awin bowellis."

Thus wes Rome finalie expugnant be Gothis, the first day of Apprile, fra the beginning of it be Romulus, MCLXIV yeris; fra the incarnation of God, ccccxii yeris.

Als sone as Rome wes tane, the Gothis ceissit fra slauchter of the pepill, and fra spulyeing of the tempillis of the Appostillis Peter and Paule: throw quhilk mony pepill that fled thairto, wer savit of thair guddis and livis.

Rome, sumtime the Lady of the Warld, wes spulyeit thus be cruelte of Gothis; and the spulyeis of it devidit, be rite of armes, amang the Gothis. It is said, that beside mony riche jowellis and precious geir that fell to Fergus the Secund be the said spulye, ane kist wes gevin to him, full of bukis; quhilkis he brocht out of Italy, with incredibill laubour and deligence, in Almany; and send it to remane in Colmekill, with mony othir Cronikillis and Historyis of Scotland; uncertane be quhayis impulsioune this procedit. It is said that Eneas Silvius, quhilk wes send as legat fra Eugenius the Fourt, Paip, to King James the First, tuke purpos to pas in the Ilis of Scotland, to se gif he might find ony of the werkis of Titus Livius, quhilkis wer destroyit at this time be cruell weris of Italy; for man notabil thingis bene destroyit be battall, than be roust of yeris. Nochtheles, fra the said Eneas knew the passage dangerus, becaus the king wes slane, he left his purpos. And we, of that samin maner, richt desirus to knaw quhat bukis thir bene, quhais fame wes sa divulgat in all partis; maid sic diligence, that at last five auld bukis, writhin in Romane letteris, war brocht to us at Abirdene, be industry of ane nobill man, Maister Johne Campbell, thesaurer to the King, the yeir of God ane thousand, v hundredreth, xxv yeris: in

the quhilkis war nocth bot brokin leiffis, and few of thaim braider than the palme of aie mannis hand, writtin craftly on rude and hard parchment; bot thay wer sa blind, we nicht nocth reid ilk tent wourd. And quhiddir thir bukis wer ane part of thaim that wer distroyit be the said weris of Italie, or gif thay wer brocht to the said Abbay out of uncouth and strange placis, it is uncertane; yit, be testimoniall of thaim that red the samin, we find thay soundit mair to the eloquence of Salustius than of Livius. Forthir, at this same time, wes brocht to us, be the same messengeir, the werkis of Veremund, Archedene of Sanctandrowis; contenand the historie of this realme, fra the first beginning thairof, to King Macolme Canmores time: quhilkis authouris we have followit, with the maist wise Bischop William Elphinstoun, to the end of this our quhatsumevir werk. Bot we will retourn to our historie.

Fergus, the sonne of Erthus, departit out of Rome, with Alarik, thre dayis eftir it wes put to sakke; and went with him to the ex-pugnation of sindry othir townis in Italie. Nocht lang eftir, he wes ordanit to pas, with certane schippis, in Sicil; and in the mene time, rais sa unmerciful tempest on him, that he wes drevin, be force of contrarius windis, agane in Italie, and narrowly eschapit of his life.

At his retourning, Alarike wes deceissit, and Athalphas maid King of Gothis, and generall capitane of thair army: with quhome Fergus become sa beluffit for his singular manheid and virtew, that als sone as Italie wes dantit be the Gothis, he wes sufferit to returne hame, with mony Danis, in Denmark; full of riches and treasure, gottin the said weris.

Chap. Fourth.

Of sindry Clerkis and Sanctis flurising in the warld. Of the first message send be Pichtis to Scottis.



ONY nobil clerkis flurist at this time in the warld: as, Claudian, poete, writtar in sum part of our historie; Apollinaris, confoundar of the heritikis that wer empsonit be Porphirius; Martin, Bisshop of Turuin, in France; with mony resolute and haly men. Amang us wes in thay dayis, Sanct Niniane, the first Bisshop of Galloway; quhair he biggit ane kirk in the honour of Sanct Martine, his eime. In thay dayis wes als Sanct Ambrose, Bisshop of Millane, quhilk brocht Sanct Augustine to the faith and sacrament of baptisme. This Augustine was the first beginnar of Channownis Regular, of quohom ar now mony abbayis erekit in the warld be magnificence of sindry princis. Of this ordour bene xxx Papis, beside mony biscoppis and nobill prelatis, quhais nowmer may not be comprehendit. Be imitation of this ordour, rais the Eremitanis; quhilkis ar incressit to so incredibil nowmer, howbeit thay sufferit gret afflictioune of Gentilis, that thair is of thaim this day in Europe above two thousand and III hundred abbayis, beside thaim that ar in Affrik and Egypt. This Augustine was nocht onely commendabill in his institutioun of religious maneris, bot als for his singulare eruditiooun in every kind of science: for he had skars xx yeris in age, quhen he red rethorik in Cartage; and lernit baith his philosophie and mathematik but ony preceptoure. Efter this, he come to Millane, quhare he, be preching of Sanct Ambrose, ressavit the Cristin faith; and was sa proffitabill thairto, that he vincust and put down ane c sindry opinionis of herisis, and wrait sa huge nowmer of bukis, that na age of man may suffice to reid thame: and deceissit, the LXXX year of his age. And in thir dayis was als Basilius, the first beginnar of monkis; Cyrillus, Bisshop of Jerusalem; and Sanct Jerome, the Pape, quhilk translatit the Bibill out of Ebrew in Latine, with

mony othir volomes in that samin maner. His werkis was haldin in sic reverence be the Pape Damasus, that thay war commandit to be red amang othir devine service. Bot we wil returne to our history.

The Pichtis, seing thaim ilk day mair tormentit with Romane injuris, and irkit with importabil servitude, send thair secret messengeris to the Scottis quhilkis war exilit in the Ilis, Ireland, and Norway; desiring thaim to returne in Albion, to recover thair realme: and promittit, be thair gret aithis, othir to restore the Scottis to thair realme and landis, or ellis to fecht in thair support to the deith, aganis the Romanis and Britonis.

Quhen Fergus had hard thir desiris of Pichtis, he send, be advise of the King of Denmark, his traist servandis in al partis quhare ony Scottis war, to explore thair mindis toward him. And quhen he fand thaim all of ane mind, to recover thair realme, and revenge the injuris done to thaim be Romanis and Britonis; he conductit ane gret nowmer of schippis and weirmen, part with the riches he wan in the weris of Italy, and part be support of his gudschir Rorik, to cum in Albioun.

Chap. Fifth.

How Gratiane, King of Britonis, and Mercius, Romane Capitane, war slane, and Constantine put in Mercius place; and of his deith. Of the secund message send be Pichtis to Fergus; and how he come in Albioun, and was aggreet with Pichtis, and recoverit his realme.



URING this time, Gratiane, Britone, be consent of Mercius, Romane Capitane, tuke the crown of Britane. This trubil was sone pecifyit; for sic contention rais betwix thaim, that ilk ane of thaim slew othir.

The Romanis, richt sorrowful for the deith of thair capitane, chesit Constantine, but advise of Honorius, Empriour, to succeede in Mercius place. This Constantine was nocht ane man of nobill

blude, nor yit of mercial werkis. Als sone as he was chosin capitan, he went in France, with ane army, to deliver the samin fra injure of Gothis and Swissis; quhare he was vincust be ane nobil knicht, namit Constantius, and slane.

Als sone as Victorine knew the slauchter of Mercius and Constantine, he went to London, and garnist all the strenthis of Britane with strang munition and weirmen; and set his ingine mony wayis to hald the Britonis at the opinoun of Honorius, Empriour: for the empire of Romanis was invadit with grete rebelloun in al partis. The Pichtis, seing the Britonis haldin with gret difficulte at the opinion of Romanis, belevit fermely, gif the Scottis war brocht agane in Albion, and concurring to thair support, to recover thair liberte. And for thir causis, thay send thair secund message to Fergus, schawing sa gret trubil in Britane amang the Romanis, that na time micht cum sa ganand as than to recover his realme.

Sone efter, Fergus pullit up salis, and arrivit in Murray, quhare he set his army on land. The fame of his cuming divulgat throw Albion, causit the Scottis out of all partis to convene to him, with thair wiffis and children, on the same maner as thair ennimes had bene chasit and vincust, and as thay war to remane perpetually in thair native landis, but ony forthir trubill. Than come sindry Pichtis, in gret cumpanyis, to Fergus; thanking him, that he, for singulare lufe to recover his native realme, was cumin in Albion, nocht astonist of the winter stormes nor dangeir of seis, quhen passage bene maist parellus; and desirit him to set on side all injuris, gif ony war in times bygane, betwix Scottis and Pichtis, that thay micht be new confiderat, efter the tennour of the auld peace: and prayit him to imput na falt to thaim for the wekit offendis committit aganis the nobill King Eugenius, his progenitour; bot to imput the same allanerly to thair fore eldaris, quhilkis culd nothir, for that time, have experience of the dissait of Romanis, nor yit understand quhat vengeance and calamite was appering to thaim be the weris maid aganis the Scottis; quhen thay, beand dissavit be plesand wordis of Romanis, in dammage of thair communweill, brocht thaimself to intollerabil servitude: throw quhilk thay war sa cruelly punist, that every kind of deith wes to be preferrit to Romane dominion.

To this answerit Fergus, He wald gladly have peace and amite with Pichtis, with siclike condicionis as thay war afore confiderat with his progenitouris; and wald jeoperde himself with thaim in battall, contrar Romanis and Britonis, thair auld and perpetual ennimes; and fecht to the deith for thair commoun weil, to revenge the injuris done to thaim: swa that the said Pichtis wald plesantly depart, with thair wiffis, children, and guddis, out of the landis quhilkis war treasonably reft afore fra the Scottis. As to the auld injuris of the said Pichtis, he thocht thaim sufficiently punist, be just punitioun of God, for thair offence; sen thay war nocth onely reft and spulyeit of thair native landis, bot thirllit to maist vile and intollerabil servitude.

The Pichtis, content of thir desiris, creat ane king, and set ane day to meit Fergus. At the day affixit, the Scottis and Pichtis war confiderat togidder, efter the auld band, in maist sover way that might be devisit. Sic thingis done, Fergus ressavit al the landis and strenthis that war reft fra his progenitouris afore be Romane weris; and sone efter, he past with ane honest cumpany to Argyle, quhare he was crownit in the fatale chiar of merbill.

The yeir that Fergus recoverit his realme, was the **xlv** yeir efter that the Scottis war expellit out of Albion; fra the incarnation, **ccccxxii** yeris; fra the first beginning of Scottis, **vii** hundreth **lv** yeris; in the **xviii** yeir of Honorius, Emprioure.

Chap. Sixth.

How the Romanis, fechtand aganis the Scottis and Pichtis, war severit be ane schoure of haill. Of sindry vassalage done be the vailyeant Grahame at the Wall of Abircorne. Of his linage, and allia with King Fergus.



ICTORINE, commovit that Scottis war brocht agane, on this maner, in Albion; assemblit ane army, and come to York. Efter his cumming, he send ane herald to the Pichtis, solistand thaim, with mony large promissis, to dissolve the band maid laitly with Scottis. At last, seing his purpos cum to litill effect, he began to hait the Pichtis, as fals and mainsworne pepill; and to be wrokin of thair rebelloun, he come, with ane army of L.M men, throw Kendell, Mers, and Pentland, to the gret dammage of the pepill thairof; and set down his tentis nocht far fra Camelon.

Fergus, advertist of the cuming of Romanis in this maner, for baith he and the King of Pichtis war gaderit with ane gret army, come ouir Forth; and within the nicht set down his tentis nocht far fra his ennimes, with deliverit mind to assailye thame in the brek of the day. The Romanis, on the tothir side, knew weil the ordinance of Scottis and Pichtis; and at the thrid vigill maid thaim reddy to battall, and faucht with the considerat kingis beside the watter of Carron. This battall was richt cruelly fochtin, and sa gret multitude of pepil slane, that the said watter ran mony milis with purpoure stremis to the seis. Quhill thir armyis war fechtand on this maner, with uncertane victory, come suddenly ane scharp schoure, sa full of haill and sleit, that nane of thaim nicht knaw ane othir: throw quhilk thay war constrainit to sever, mair irkit than saciat of otheris slauchter. Thus war baith the armyis sa brokin, that mony yeris efter, nane of thaim nicht invaid othir be battal.

Victorine, on the morrow, seing his army brokin, returnit in Kent, and left behind him mony sodjournis in Pentland, to kepe the samin,

in maner of province, aganis the Scottis and Pichtis. The confederat kingis commandit the residew of thair pepill, quhilkis war left on live, to returne hame: and becaus thay fand thameself unabill to renew battal, thay set thair ingine to saif baith thaimself and thair landis to ane better fortoun. Sone efter, thay convenit in Argyle, to se quhat wayis thay mycht best resist thair ennimes, revenging the injuris be thaim done, and to lerne thair pepill the art of chevalry; for thay war mony yeris abusit, but ony exercition thairof. Efter sindry consultationis, the Scottis, seing the Pichtis of mair nowmer than mycht be nurist in Angus, Fiffe, Strivelin, and Stratherne; sufferit thaim to remane in Athole, beyond the hillis of Granyeben, quhill thay mycht, be sum better fortoun, recover the residew of thair landis, quhilkis war reft fra thaim be tyranny of Romanis. The Pichtis spred fast in Athole, and maid sindry strenthis and polecyis in it.

In the mene time, Victorine, Capitane of Britane, commandit the Britonis, be general edict, to big the wal betwix Abircorne and Dunbritane, with staik and rise, in thair strangest maner, to saif thaim fra invasion of Scottis and Pichtis: and to big this dike war assemblit mony craftsmen out of al partis, with sindry weirmen, to saif thaim quhil the dike was biggit.

In the mene time, quhen thay war biggand it maist besaly, come the vailleant Grahame, quhais dochter was maryit on King Fergus, and slew ane gret nowmer of thir weirmen at the bigging of this dike, and the remenant put to flicht: and incontinent, be fers incursion, he brocht ane huge pray of men and gudis fra the Britonis in the Scottis landis. This Grahame was discendit of ane anciant hous of Denmark, and gottin on ane nobill lady of that samin cuntry be ane of the Scottis that was banist with Ethodius out of Albion; and efter the proscription of Scottis, he maryit ane virgine of the blude rial of Denmark, on quhom he gat ane dochter of maist excellent bewte, quhilk was gevin to Fergus in mariage. Fergus gat on hir III sonnis afore his cuming in Albion, quhais names war Eugenius, Dongarus, and Constancius; of quhome sal be our history follow-ing. Uthir sayis, this Grahame was ane Briton, quhilk eschewing the Romane tyranny, fled amang the Scottis, and was efter banist with thaim in Denmark; for he was gret ennime to Romanis, seing

thaim regne with sic tyranny and avarice above thair subdittis. Always, of quhatsumevir hous or linnage he was discendit, treuth is, he was ane man of hie curage and spreit, baith in weir and peace, and strangest ennime to Romanis and Britonis. Of this Grahame, discendit the surname of Grahamis.

Chap. Seventh.

Of sindry consultationis maid be the Scottis for thair defence aganis the Romanis and Britonis. How Victorine conquest the crown of Britane; and how he was punist thairfore to the deith.



HE Britonis, brokin with sindry battallis in this maner, ceissit mony yeris efter fra battall, content to defend thair awin landis. At this time come infinite nowmer of Scottis out of France, Spanye, Almany, Italy, and othir partis, quhair thay war wageouris, to King Fergus; traisting, becaus sa huge rebellion wes maid in all realmes aganis Romanis, to recover thair landis in Albion.

Fergus, rejoosing of thair cuming, went with thaim in Carrick; quhare he faucht with the Romanis, and gat na les displesair than he gat afore: throw quhilk he was constrainit to leif Carrick, and returne to Argyle, quhare he remanit all the winter following. Ane conventioun was maid be him in the nixt simer; in quhilk sindry of his noblis perswadit him to rais new army to resist Victorine, for he was cumin than in Galloway, and erar to jeoperd him to extreme dangeir of battall, than daily to leif in sic afflictiou: otheris said, Best was to tary, and nocht to fecht with the Romanis, becaus thay war twyis discomfist; in adventure, gif thay war discomfist the thrid time, thair realme suld be pray to thair ennimes. Best was, thairfore, to ceis fra battall, quhill thair pissance war convalescit, be quhilk thay micht be the mair abill to resist. Attour, sa frequent rebellioun was maid aganis the Romanis in all partis, that Victorine micht nocht lang abide in Britane: and thairfore, sen the empire of Romanis apperis sa manifestlie to decline, it may happen that Vic-

torine be constrainit to fle out of Britane, and than the Scottis and Pichtis may have ane ganand oportunito to recovir thair realme, but ony gret dangeir. This last counsall was apprisit; and sa it was concludit, that Scottis and Pichtis sall invaid thair ennimes mair be scarmussing than plane battall.

In the mene time, Honorius, Emprioure, tuke gret suspiciooun aganis this Victorine, traistint that he suld usurp the crown of Britane. Thus was it demit be mony pepill, that the Empriour suld exoner Victorine of al auctorite in Britane. Als sonne as Victorine wes advertist thairof, he tuke the crown of Britane, with incredibill favoure of his army: part of Britonis assistit to him, bot otheris followit the opinion of Dioneth, sonne to King Octavius afore deceissit. Apperit thus gret seditioun in Britane. Nochtheles, Honorius, Empriour, seing sa gret trubill rising in Britane, send ane vailyeant knicht, namit Heraclius, to dant thair rebellioun; quahis cumming maid the Britonis, and otheris that assistit to Victorine, sa astonist, that thay brocht Victorine bound to this Heraclius, with mony otheris quhilkis war movaris of thair rebellioun. Sone efter, Victorine was send to Rome, with mony otheris of his opinioun, and punist to the deith.

Thus was Britane brocht agane be Heraclius to Romane empire.

Chap. Eighth.

How Placidus, Romane Capitane, was discomfist, with his army, be Scottis and Pichtis. How King Fergus recoverit all his landis, be conditioun of peace, fra Romanis. Of his civil and religious industry for the weil of his pepill.



ERACLUS, quhen he had brocht Britane on this maner to Romane opinioun; be command of Honorius, he returntit to Rome, and went in Affric, to dant the rebellion of Athalus, tyranne; and left behind him in Britane ane man of febil curage, namit Placidus: quhilk, throw his avarice, was found richt unabill to governe ony province.

Fergus, knawing weill the febill curage of Placidus, thocht the time ganand to recover the landis reft fra him afore be Romane weris. And sone efter, he come with ane army in Carrik, abiding the cumming of the King of Pichtis with his army. Als sone as the Scottis and Pichtis war met togidder, thay went throw Carrik, Kyle, Cuninghame, and Galloway, ceissing fra na maner of cruelte on thaim that obeyit to the empire of Romanis: and on the same maner, thay come in Pentland, Mers, and Berwik, and left nothir Romanis nor Britonis in the same.

Placidus, Capitane of Britane, herand thir attemptatis, come with ane huge army in Pentland. The Scottis and Pichtis, nocht af-frayit of his cuming, met him with gret fury. Followit ane terribill and sair battall. And first the horsmen of Romanis war discomfist; and sone efter, the remanent legionis war sa opprest with ithand schot of arrowis, that thay gaif bakkis on the same maner. Than was ane sorrowfull slaughter maid on the fearlis. Placidus, narrawlie eschaping of his liffe, fled to York.

The confederat pepill, insolent efter this victory, tuke purpos to sege York: nochtheles, thair army was sa brokin, that thay war constrainit to desist.

Placidus, na les astonist be mony othir afflictionis falling to Romanis in sindry partis of the warld, than be this last discomfitoure, dred that Britane suld pas fra Romane dominiououn, gif the Britonis movit ony new rebellioun; and, thairfore, he began to seik peace with Pichtis and Scottis. Than was peace finaly tretit under thir conditionis: Al landis and munitionis reft afore fra Scottis and Pichtis, be Romane tyranny, sal be restorit to thaim agane; na incursionis nor heirschippis soll be maid, in times cuming, be Scottis and Pichtis, in the Romane landis; the Romanis soll stand content with the landis conquest on the Britonis, and soll nocht invaid the Scottis nor Pichtis with ony weris in timis cuming.

Als sone as the confederat kingis had ressavit thair landis and rowmes be this maner, thay gaif thair exact diligence to instruct thair pepill in plesand and civil maneris, but ony thirllage of ser-vitude. Than Fergus, to incres the Scottis, Danis, and otheris that come with him to recover thair realme, under ane freindschip and blude; gaif sindry landis of his realme amang thaim: throw quhilk,

mony landis of his realme tint thair auld name, and was callit efter the name of the new possessouris. And becaus the name of every land in Scotland ar weill knawin to all Scottis, I will schaw na thinge thairof.

Than Fergus reparit all the kirkis that war failyeit be negligence of the pepill, and feft sindry preistis with rentis and possessionis to do devine service. He brocht all the monkis that war banist, agane to his realme; and tretit thaim, with gret reverence, to instruct his pepill in the faith. He biggit the Abbey of Colmekill, and dotat it with sindry landis, rentis, and possessionis; and commandit the samin to be, in times cuming, the commoun sepulture of all kingis succeding after him. He feft als certane funerall obsequies to be done yeirly for thair saulis.

This Fergus was gevin als weill to civil as religious maneris; for he reparit all the strenthis liand on his bordouris fornentis the Britonis, quhare he ordanit his agit sodjouriis to remane perpetually for defence thairof, on the commoun purs.

Chap. Ninth.

Of the deith of Placidus. Of the message send be Castius, Capitane of Britane, to Fergus; and of Fergus answer. How the Romanis war discomfist, and Castius slane.



WHEN Fergus had recoverit his realme in this maner, and restorit his pepil to thair anciant honouris and dignite, deceissit Honorius, Emprioure: efter quhom succeedit Theodosius; quhilk send ane nobill man, namit Valentianie, in Italy, to repare all dammagis done be civil weris. And in the mene time, Placidus, Capitane of Britane, deceissit.

The Scottis and Pichtis, traistint to have gud occasion, be deith of Placidus, to invaid the Britonis, (for peace was dissolvit be his deith;) come in Westmureland, Cumber, and uthir regionis that war tane fra thaim afore be Romane weris, and ceissit fra na maner of cruelte on thaim that obeyit the Romanis. Mony of the Britonis

fled to Castius; for he was maid Capitane of Britane efter the deith of Placidus. This Castius, dredand, the thing that come efter, that Dioneth, sonne of Octavius afore rehersit, suld usurpe the crown of Britane be assistance of Scottis and Pichtis, for he maryit Fergus sister; send to Fergus, chargeand him be ane herald, gif he desirit peace, and to leif on the auld landis and marchis pertenand to his eldaris, to invaid na otheris: and gif he desirit nocht bot battall, he maid him to understand he had the samin ennimes that dang his eldaris out of Albioun, and thirllit the Pichtis to servitude. To this charge was answerit be Scottis and Pichtis, Thay wald have na peace with Romanis, quhill Westmureland and Cumber war restorit to thaim, with all the munitionis and strenthis thairof.

Castius, grevit with this answer, come forthwart with his army: and quhen he was cumin throw the Romane provincis nochlit far fra Westmureland, he was advertist that Dioneth was cummand, with ane gret power, out of Walis, in support of Scottis and Pichtis. The Britonis, knawing the feirsnes and cruelte of Welchemen, war astonist be thir tithingis: nochwithstanding, be hortation of Castius, thay rasit thair spreit, and come the thrid day efter, richt desirus of battal, in thair ennimes sicht. Now was Dioneth and the confederat pepill mengit with thair oistis togidder, and weill arrayit for battal, quhen suddandy baith the armyis junxit, and faucht lang with doutsum victory; quhill at last the wageouris that faucht in the wingis with licht armour, gaif bakkis. Followit ane huge affray amang the Romanis; and the samin was the mair eikit be slaunchter of Castius, thair capitane: and incontinent the mid battall fled; on quhome followit the Scottis, Pichtis, and Welchemen, with lang chace and murdir. Yit, becaus thay keipit na ordoure in thair chace, thay gat mair skaith than thay did to thair ennimes.

The Romanis discomfist on this wise, colleckit the residew of thair army togidder, and past in Walis; and left behind thaim al the strenthis of the cuntry, but ony defence.

Chap. Tenth.

How Maximiane, Capitane of Britane, come with huge army aganis the Scottis and Pichtis. Of Fergus orison to his army; and how baith the Kingis of Scottis and Pichtis war slane, and thair army discomfist be Romanis.



IONETH, efter this discomfitour of Romanis, tuk the croun of Britane, and invadit all the pepil thairof with gret cruelte and slauchter, that obeit to Romanis. Thus apperit Britane, bot gif this trubill war the mair haistely dantit, to pas fra dominion of Romanis.

At this time was in France ane nobill man, namit Etius, general Capitane thairof, be auctorite of the Emprioure. This Etius, hering that Britane was nakit of support, send, be desire of Britonis, ane vailyeant knicht, namit Maximiane, to dant all this trubill appering be Welschemen, Scottis and Pichtis. Maximiane come sone efter with ane army in Albion; quhom the Britonis ressavit with gret triumph, and prayt God to send him ane gud fortoune aganis his ennimes.

Maximiane, knawing mair trubill appering by rebellion of Dioneth, than be ony uthir danger occurring, for he was of the blude rial of Britane; thocht lang tary impediment to his weris, and come with his army in maist diligence to York; and sone efter, he come in Westmureland.

The confiderat kingis hering his cuming, come with thair armys in the same maner: and in the mene time come to thaim Dioneth, King of Britane, with all his power, out of Walis. At the spring of the day, quhen al thair power was mengit togidder, Fergus callit thaim be sound of trumpat to his standart, and said on this wise: “ I wald, wise freindis, that this battall, quhilk we ar now to leid “ aganis oure maist dangerus ennimes, war fochtin with sa huge “ manheid, curage, and spreit, that the samin may be to your ho-“ nour and proffet, and to my hie pleseir and glaidnes. Suthly,

“ will ye ponder this mater wisely, youre mindis, that bene sa lang
“ distractit fra eis, and sa occupyit with ithand exercitioun of che-
“ valry, suld be erekit in gret esperance of victory, seing your en-
“ nimes in sicht, quhom ye sa oft afore discomfist and chasit. It
“ semis all forcey championis evir to beleif the best, and haif excellent
“ fortitude aganis quhatsumevir adversete that may occurre: for
“ fortitude is so hie and soverane virtew, that it perswadis every
“ nobill man, be impulsioune of nature, to resist adversete. This
“ virtew is mair renownit, to resist the injure of ennimes, than to
“ invaid thaim with ony injure. For he that is wrangusly injurit
“ hes ay gud esperance of better fortoun to follow: thus incressis
“ he strang be esperance, and be his just querall he growis prudent.
“ Be contrare, he that dois wrang is injurius to himself, and hes na
“ esperance of gud fortoun to follow. Maximus, sumtime Capitane
“ of Britane, be his treasonabill slichtis was confederat with Pichtis,
“ na les for the extermision of thaim than of Scottis: as the end
“ thairof schew. Thay slew my gudschir Eugenius, with mony of
“ your nobill eldaris; and put thaim to sic affliction, that thay war
“ mony yeris exilit this regioune: throw quhilke he conquest the
“ haill empire of Albion; and nocht content of that felicite, he
“ thirllit the Pichtis, our auld confederat freindis, contrar his band
“ and promes, to vile servitude. Nochtheles, the end of this alli-
“ ance schew to the said Pichtis, quhat dammage cummis to be
“ confederat with treasonabill pepill, in contemption of thair trew
“ freindis. Bot at last the Pichtis, penitent of the importabill in-
“ juris done to us, began, thought it was to lait, to be prudent, and
“ brocht us agane in this realme; and sone efter our cumming, we
“ vincust oure feirs ennimes with small difficulte. Now ar thir vin-
“ cust tyrannes returnit to invaid us, be advise of Maximiane, thair
“ capitane; as he wald restore thaim to thair curage, quhilke thay
“ tint afore be slauchter of thair capitane Castius. Thay charge us,
“ as we war under thair dominioune, to pas out of Cumber and
“ Westmureland, quhilkis pertenis to us be just tilil. For thir rea-
“ sonis, I think we suld not only be repugnant to thair chargis, bot
“ als perseg oure just action aganis thaim with al pissance. Heir-
“ fore, be awalknit, vailleant championis, and tak your wappinnis
“ with gud curage and spreit: think na gret difficulte occurris to

“ vineus thay febill creaturis, quhilkis sa cowardly gave place afore
“ to youre armoure. Pas forthwart, joly companyeonis, and have
“ na les memory to your honour, than to the injuris done to your
“ ennimes; and conques sic glore, that your posterite, be imita-
“ tioun of youre virtew, may lerne to fecht vailyeantlie for thair
“ realme.”

Als sone as Fergus had said thir wourdis, he gave ane signe, be sound of trumpat, to june. The tothir two Kingis of Pichtis and Britonis usit na les hortatioun to thair armyis. Incontinent, baith the armyis junxit. At the first counteringe, the Romanis wer neir discomfist; for sa huge nowmer of arowis and ganyeis come on thaim, that the lift might skarslie be sene above thair heidis. Maximiane, seing the first bront of Romanis in dangeir, send, haistelie, ane legioun of fresche men in thair support. Thus wes the battall renewit and cruelly fochtin; quhill at last the outwingis of Romanis, be multitude of pepil, ouirset thair ennimes fornens thaim. The confederat pepill, and Britonis that faucht under Dioneth, maid lang debait; bot at last the wageouris, that faucht in the uter skirtis of Romane wingis, come in the same battall quhair thay wer fechtand, on thair bakkis. The confederat peple, howbeit thay wer affrayit with this suddane terrour, ruschit all togidder in ane knot, with stout curage, to fecht to the deith. The maist forey and strang capitaniis of our pepill, richt desirus to revenge thair deith; becaus thay saw na othir remeid, maid thaim, with maist violent force, to rusche throw thair ennimes: quhair thay wer all slane, to the gret murdir of thair ennimes. Quhill the Romanis wer besalie gevin to stop this forey irruptioun of the nobillis forsaid, mony of all the remanent Scottis come feirsleie throw thair ennimes, and wer savit be thair flicht; and yit the chais followit sa cruelly be Romanis, that few wer savit quhome thay nicht apprehend: bot at last the nicht put end to thair laubouris.

In this unhappy battall wer slane, Fergus, King of Scottis, the xvi yeir of his regne; and Durstus, King of Pichtis; with all the nobilitie of baith thair realmes. Dioneth, Prince of Walis, evil woundit, wes brocht to the seeport, nocht far fra the feild; quhair he gat ane bait, and fled in Walis.

Chap. Eleventh.

How the Romanis wrocht gret injuris on Scottis and Pichtis. How Maximiane was alliat with Dioneth, Prince of Walis; and tuk the crown of Britane, contrar the auctorite of Romanis.

 FTIR this mischevous battall, sic terroure rais throw all the landis of Scottis and Pichtis, that nocht wes traistit bot uther exterminioun of baith thair realmes: and becaus thay had na esperance of support, thair maist forcey campionis beand slane, thay thocht na thing sa gud as to fle in uncouth realmes.

Maximiane, thinkand best to use the present fortoun as it occurrit, ceissit fra na maner of cruelte that might be devisit, in Galloway, Annandale, Mers, and Pentland; with sic rage of fire and swerd, that na estait wes savit fra his fury. The pepill that fled to kirkis and sanctuaryis, wer slane, but ony sicht to God. The town of Camelon, with mony othir nobill cieteis and townis of Scottis and Pichtis, wer tane, and cassin down to the ground. This cruelte ceissit not, quhil at last the Scottis and Pichtis war drevin schamefully ouir the wal that rinnis fra Abircorn to Dunbriton, and sworn nevir to returne beyond the samin.

Ane part of Romanis gaif counsall to Maximiane, sen the Scottis and Pichtis wer sa brokin at this time, and micht be haldin with na pepill in faith and peace, to distroy thaim all uterly, or ellis to banis thaim out of Albion; utherwayis na thing micht be done effering to the common weill of Romanis. Maximiane refusit this counsall; for the winter wes approcheing, throw quhilk his army behuvit to rest in thair winter schelis; and becaus na vittallis wer amang the Scottis and Pichtis to sustene his army, and sic vehement cauld into thair montanis, that na craft micht withstand the samin; for it wes for the weil of thair army to abide the nixt simer. Attoure, becaus Welschemen, his nerrast nichtbouris, rebellit aganis him, it wes necessar to dant thaim first; in aventure, gif he persewit the

Scottis and Pichtis, levand behind him sa perrellus ennimes, more dammage than profit micht cum be his weris. For thir causis, he returnit with his victoriis army to Yorke, quhair he remanit all that winter; and brocht vittallis out of all partis to sustene the samin.

At the spring of the yeir he rasit his tentis, and come with displayit baner aganis Dioneth, in Walis; for he wes haldin King of Britonis formentis the Ireland seis. And in the mene time, this Maximiane wes advertist be writtingis, that Bonifacius had slane twa Romane capitanis in Affrik, and thair army discomfist: throw quhilk Affrik wes loist fra Romane dominiououn, and the said Bonifacius maid king thairof. Attoure, Franchemen, quhilk wes that time ane pepil of Almany, wes cumming ouir Ryne, and entrit in Gallia, quhilk wes callit eftir France, with more cruelte than evir wes hard afore; and conquest the landis of Orliance and Paris, and maid ane king of thair awin blude: throw quhilk it apperit, that all the landis callit, that time, Gallia, suld cum under the dominiououn of Franchemen.

Maximiane, knawing sa mony rebellionis in all partis aganis Romanis, thocht best to rebel in the samin wise; and tuke the crown of Britane, contrar the Romane auctorite: and to pecify the realme to him of al debaitis, that he micht be the more strang aganis the Romanis, gif thay list invaid him, he tuke the eldest douchter of Dioneth, namit Othilia, in mariage; for Dioneth gat on King Fergus sister two doucheris, but ony mail childrin. The secund douchter, namit Ursula, wes maid ane nun, to that fine, that scho suld have na succession. Be this affinitate sic tendernes incressit betwix Maximiane and Dioneth, that the said Dioneth wes sufferit to haif gretest empire, nixt Maximian, in Britane.

Chap. Twelfth.

Of King Eugenius the Secund. Of gret vassalage done be Maximian in Britane and France. How Ursula and hir followis war maryit.

 Ic thingis done in Britane, the residew of Scottis, quuhilkis wer eschapit out of the feild afore rehersit, convenit in Argyle; and maid his sonne, Eugenius the Secund, king: fra the incarnation, cccccxxv yeris; fra the beginning of the realme of Scotland, DCCLX; in the feird yeir of Valentiniiane, Empriour.

Eugenius began the administration of his realme be piete; and tuke the bonis of his fader fra the place quhair thay wer beryit be Romanis, and beryit thaim, with funerall triumphhe, in the Abbey of Colmekil. Fergus wes the first King of Scottis that wes beryit in Colmekill; and, thairfore, it wes callit, eftir, the common sepulture of al Scottis kingis, unto King Macolme Canmoris dayis, quuhilk biggit the Abbey of Dunfermeling, be perswasioun of Sanct Margaret; quhare mony of all the Scottis kingis bene beryit sen syne.

King Eugenius, richt desirus to recover the landis reft fra his fader be Romanis and Britonis, wrait all the names of his pepill, fra sexte to sextene, in ilk town, that micht beir armour and wappinnis. Nochtheles, seing thaim, quhen thay wer gaderit, of small nowmer and pissance, he supersedit his purpos quhill ane time more ganand. And thought the Scottis and Pichtis wer brokin on this wise, and feblit in thair pissance, yit Maximiane send thaim peace undesirit. And becaus this Maximiane saw the empire of Romanis persewit on al partis, he set his besines to have ane part thairof; and tuke the crown of Britane, with favour and benivolence of all the pepil. Sone efter his coronation, he past in Bertanye, and left behind him his gudfader Dioneth, with ane legion of pepil, to governe Britane. Finally, he dantit the Bertonaris with sic importabil affliction, that

thay wer randerit to his dominion. Than Maximiane tuke, be scharp segeing, sindry townis, sic as lay on the seecostis of Bertanye. And sone after, he come, with al his army, to ane strang town of Bertanye, namit Redoun, quhilk was kept be Sulpicius, in the name of Valentiniane, Empriour. Quhen Maximiane had seigit this town lang time, and micht get it na way be force of armis, he kest him to invad the cuntry, mair be rubbery than be honest weir.

In the mene time, the Bertaneris gat sic perswasion be Etius, Capitane of France, that thay rebellit aganis Maximiane, and not only recoverit all thair strenthis and townis, bot slew al his weirmen quhare thay war apprehendit. Maximiane, movit be thir injuris, returnit, with al his army, to the said town of Redoun. Efter mony scharp assaltis, it was be him tane, and every pepil found in it, but ony miseration, slane, or banist the cuntry; for he tuk extreme ire aganis thame for violation of thair faith.

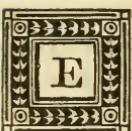
Etius, seing France ithandly invadit be the Burgundianis, send in Britane, to bring the legion that was left thair be Maximiane, to support him in his weris. Thus was Britane left nakit of support; and gaif occasion to Scottis and Pichtis to invade the Britonis, becaus thay abaid at the opinion of Maximiane. Finaly, quhen this Maximiane had conquest Bertanye, and slane the maist part of al the pepil thairof; yit, that it sal not be ane pray to Franchemen, thair nixt nichtbouris, he brocht ane gret nowmer of pepil out of Britane, to inhabit the said cuntry. Sum authouris writis, thair come ane c. m men out of Britane, to inhabit the land of Bertanye, with Conanus. This Conanus was ane tender freind to Dioneth, and maid King of Bertanye; and sa this land tint the auld name Armorica, and was callit Bertanye, fra thir Britonis that come to inhabit the said land.

Than Conanus, King of Bertanye, knawing that every pepil failyeis within the age of man gif thay have na succession, send his ambassatouris in Britane, to have wemen to be thair wifis. The ambassatouris that come for this effect, gat consent, be the nobillis of Britane, that al the dochteris, sisteris, and antis pertenand in blude to the Britonis that war than in Bertanye, suld pas to thame en haist, togidder with Ursula the Nun, quhilk was tane out of the

abbay quhare scho was profest, and put in schip, with the remenant hir fallowis, that the linage of Dioneth suld not faill; becaus hir othir sister Othilia, quhilk was maryit on Maximiane afore, was deceissit but ony childrin. And thocht the passage of thir wemen was unpleasand to the Britonis, yit it come, efter, to the gret felicite of Ursula and hir cumpany; for quhen thay suld have passit to Bertanye, be tempestious streme of seis, thay war drevin, with na litil dangeir of thair livis, in the mouth of Rine, quhare thay landit. And becaus thay had sic trubill be the seis, thay tuk purpos, than, to pas in Bertanye be land. Othiris authouris says, thay tuke thair voyage to Rome, be perswasion of this haly nun, Ursula, and war tane be the Hunnis; be quhom thay war al slane, becaus thay wold not consent to the polution of thair bodyis. The kirk, thairefore, singis, yeirly, divine ceremonyis, in thair glore and loving.

Chap. Thirteenth.

*How the confiderat kingis come with gret armyis aganis the Britonis.
Of Eugenius orison. Of the gret heirschippis maid on Britonis.
How Gallio Revennas was send in support of Britonis; and of
his vassalage.*



UGENIUS, knawing Britane, be continewal weris, destitute of Romane sodjouris; convenit with Durstus, King of Pichtis, to ane counsal: in quhilk, efter lang consultation, was concludit to maik weir aganis the Britonis, with sic providence, that na advertence suld be maid thair-of, quhil thay war arrayt within thair realmes. Sone efter, ane day was assignit to baith thair pepil to convene, with xl dayis vittallis, and uthir necessaris, in thair best maner. At the day prefift, come gret multitude of pepill, out of all boundis of his realme, to the wod of Calidone.

Eugenius, seing his freindis and subdittis gaderit in this maner, said as fallowis: “ Nane is amang yow, vailyeant championis, that “ will degestlie consider baith the materis pertenand to us and our

“ennimes, bot he sall think all tary unprofitable to us this day ;
“considering the hie and importable injuris done, thir mony yeris,
“to us, be Romane tyranny : my vailyeant and nobill fader, the
“recoverar of this realme, slane ; above infinite calamiteis sufferit
“be us. Ye se Carrik, Kyle, Cunningham, and Galloway, with
“mony othir landis of our realme, fallin in pray to Romanis. And
“thought the battall, strikin afore be my fadir aganis Maximiane,
“wes infortunat to us, it wes nochtheles richt unpleasand and sorow-
“ful to our fais. Forthir, the calamiteis falling be this battall hes
“nocht, as I beleif, feblit your eurage ; bot more enkendillit the
“samin to revenge the auld injuris done, sa mony yeris, aganis us
“and our progenitouris, be Romanis and Britonis. And under-
“stand, als mekil as our pissance is minist be Romane weris, sa far
“ar the Romanis brokin in thair pissance be hatrent of fortoun,
“quihilk intendis to bring thair empire to nocht : throw quihilk
“thay ar nocht onlie odius to all pepil, bot als invadit with cruell
“weris, and thair provincis falling to praye of ennimes in all partis:
“for the Vandalis hes tane fra thaim, all Affrik ; the Visigothis, all
“Spanye ; the Franchemen and Burgundianis hes tane the maist
“part of Gallia, now namit France ; the Hunnis hes won Panno-
“nia, Mysia, Thracia, and Macidon : all pepill that is in the eist
“partis of the warld hes recoverit thair liberte, or ellis randerit
“thaimself to ennimes of Romanis : Rome, sumtime the Lady of
“the Warld, hes bene twis tane be the Gothis, heryit and brint.
“Forthir, the Romanis ar brocht to sic calamite, that thay have na
“landis nor empire this day, saif only in Italy and Britane ; the
“quihilk is now nakit of all garnison and weirmen, be weris of
“Maximiane. Forthir, thair is na Romane capitane that will or
“may bring ony support aganis us. Now is Britane drery, and
“nakit of al support ; and sa disparit, that it sall be erar ane pray
“than obstakill to your weris. It nedis nocht, heirfore, vailyeant
“capitanis, to exhort yow to battall, sen knightly eurage mair
“aboundis than failyeis in yow ; for, sickerly, thair is ane mair
“huge pray abiding yow, than evir was appering afore, be chance
“of fortoun, to ony of your eldaris. Occasioun, the moder of all
“werkis that ar to be done, offeris hir wilfully to yow, perswading
“all impedimentis and tary of battall to be set aside ; and exhorts

“ yow to follow hir, in adventure, gif ye tine hir be your febill
 “ curage, ye sall nocht win hir agane, howbeit ye wald. Be not
 “ movit, I pray yow, to ceis fra your honest vassalage, for ony
 “ band that ye haif maid with Maximiane; for thir Romanis and
 “ Britonis hes invadit us with mony cruel injuris sen the said band
 “ was maid. And sen our ennimes hes not ceissit to invaid us, in
 “ breking of the said band; how may we do ony thing les than in-
 “ vaid thaim on the same maner? Belt yow, thairfore, lusty gal-
 “ landis, with manheid, and tak your wappinnis to this honest in-
 “ terpris: follow the spreit and curage of your eldaris, and ye sal
 “ nocht faile the glore of victory.”

The army, be thir wordis, war inflammit to battall; and promittit to jeoperd thaimself to al maner of dangeir, that thay micht revenge the injuris done to thaim; for the affliction of Romanis, quhilk was richt patent, maid the remanent wordis of Eugenius to have the mair credit. Than ilk man, with schill noyis, bad rais thair ansenyenis, and proeid forthwart. The Pichtis, in the saman maner, war inflammit to battal be exhortation of thair king. Incontinent, the confederat pepil invadit the Britonis with fire and swerd, in all partis quhare thay come; and chasit the Britonis out of Pentland, Mers, Berwik, Galloway, and Annandale; and, thairefter, thay past to Kendale, Cumber, Westmureland, and York, and tuke all the munitionis and strenthis of the centre: and quhen thay had spulyeit the townis, thay slew al the cieteyanis thairof, and left na Britonis on live, except thaim that war savit be flicht. Apperit, thus, all Britane to cum haistely under the empire of Scottis and Pichtis, gif the saman war not mair haistely resistit.

The Britonis, impacient to suffer thir displesiris, send thair oratouris to the Empriour Valentiniane; and promittit thair perpetuall subjection to him, sa that he wald support thaim aganis thair unmercifull and cruel ennimes. Valentiniane, richt desirus to keip Britane under his empire, send ane nobil capitane, namit Gallio Revennas, with mony legionis of pepill, in thair support. The Scottis and Pichtis, knawing the cumming of this new army, left all the landis in Britane quhilk war laitly heryit and distroyit be thaim: syne returnnit hame; for thay thocht not profitabill to jeo-

perd thaim aganis the Romanis, knawand, be frequent battallis afore past, thair gret manheid and chevalry.

The Romanis, at thair cuming in Albion, followit be lang chace on the Scottis to the watter of Forth, and mony of thaim slew, be haisty scharmising. And becaus thir Romanis micht not mak lang tary in Albion, for extreme dangeir appering to France be invasioun of sindry pepill; thay gart repare, haistely, the wal afore rehersit betwix Abircorne and Dunbritane, with gret expensis; and rasit the samin, with faill devat and stanis, XII cubitis of hicht, and VIII cubitis of breid, with mony strang touris rising on all sidis. Thir touris and bastailycis war doung, togidder with sic thingis as wald nocth birne, to saif the Britonis fra thair ennimes. On the hicht of thir touris thay set fire pannis, to advertis the cuntry quhen dangeir occurrit; and thay that come not to the defence heirof, quhen the fire was sene, war punist to the deith.

Chap. Fourteenth.

How the Scottis and Pichiis kest down the Wal of Abircorne, and wrocht gret cruelteis on the Britonis. Of the message send be Britonis to Etius; and of his answer.



RITANE brocht be this maner to Romane servitude, Gallio Revennas returnit in France; quhais departing gaif occasion to the confederat kingis to invaid the Britonis with mair cruelte than afore. Than King Eugenius assemblit all his pepill afore him; and sumtime inflammit thaim with huge ire aganis thair ennimes, and sumtimes provokit thaim, be esperance of pray and riches to be gottin on thair ennimes. And the King of Pichtis ceissit not to exhort his pepill on the same maner; and promittit, be publik edict, to geif the capitanry of Camelon to him that first past ouir this wal of Abircorn.

The Britonis, knawing weill the assemblance of Scottis and Pichtis, come arrayit, in thair best maner, to defend this wal afore rehersit; and put ane gret nowmer of weirmen in the bastailycis

and touris thairof, to resist the invasioun of ennimes : aganis quhom was send the vailleant Grahame, with ane cumpany of Scottis and Pichtis, armit with corsbowis, slenges, and handbowis. Als sone as this Grahame had doung the Britonis fra this wal, incontinent come masonnis, wrichtis, and mony otheris craifiismen, with sindry instrumentis, and kest down the dike unto the ground. Ane gret band of Britonis maid thame to withstand the eversion of this wal ; bot thay, be obstinate fechting, war all slane. Otheris, that knew the cruel furie of considerat pepill, gaif bakkis, confiding in na thing mair than in thair flicht.

Quhill sic things war done at the wal of Abircorn, thair come ane othir cumpany of Pichtis out of Fife in Pentland, and did mair eruelteis to the Britonis, quhare thay come, than did thir Scottis and Pichtis that come afore thaim. Als sone as baith thir cumpanyis war assemblit togidder, nocht was but fire and slauchter quhare thay come.

The inhabitantis, affrayit be thir eruelteis, fled, with thair wiffis, barnis, and guddis, beyond the watter of Tyne. Incontinent, all gudis betwix Tweid and Tyne, be general proclamation of the two kingis, war denuncit frely eschetit and pray to thair army. Followit mony schamefull and abhominable dedis, be persuasion of ire, hatrent, and avarice. The skry and terrible ioyis arrayis, be furie of weirmen ceissing fra na maner of eruelte, throw all the landis betwix the Ireland seis on the ta side, and the Almane seis on the tothir.

The Britonis, for feir of thir importable terrouris, reparit the wall of Adriane, with huge lauboure and expensis. The considerat pepil, knawing, becaus the winter wes approc'eing, their army nicht nocht abide togidder ; ceissit fra seging of the said wal ; and sat down, with thair wiffis and children, in al the landis that wer conquest at this time be richt of battall.

The Britonis, dreidand the Scottis and Pichtis, at the cuming of the nixt weir, to invaid thame with more eruelte than afore ; send thair ambassatouris to Etius, quhilk wes Capitane of France, as said is, and desirit support aganis the considerat pepill. Alwayis this Etius send na support to the Britonis : unicertane quhidder he wald send nane, becaus he favorit nocht the Emprioure Valenti-

niane, as he that purposit to usurpe the crown of France; or gif he nicht nocht mak support to the said Britonis, for feir of the scharp battall that his ennimes had aganis him.

Chap. Fifteenth.

How Conanus, Prince of Walis, exhortit the Britonis to tak peace with Scottis and Pichtis; and was slane. How the Britonis, after his slauchter, faucht amang thaimself.



Ow wer the oratouris of Britonis returnit, with this repulse of Etius, in Britane. Followit sindry consultationis amange thir Britonis. Sum gaif counsall to invaid the Scottis and Pichtis, als weil be see as land; and to defend thair liberte, quhilk wes laitle recoverit, to the deith: and nocht onelie to bring men, bot all fensabill wemen, for defence of thair realme; and to convene, with all diligence, at the wal of Adriane: and erar to jeoperd thaim to extreme daungeir, than to suffer sa continual heirschippis and slauchter; or to tak peace, howbeit it wer necessar, with ony dishonest conditionis.

In the mene time, Conanus, Prince of Walis, discending, be lang progressioun, of the native Kingis of Britane, said to the Britonis in this maner: “ It is necessar to all pepill, wise faderis, gif thay intend othir to mak conques, or to keip thair awin rowmis fra injure of fayis, to have respect baith to thair pissance, and the seasoun, as occurris for the time. Sa lang, suthlie, as we wer supportit be Romanis, and wer sufficient to defend this realme aganis our unmerciful fayis, we socht na peace with the treasonable Scottis and Pichtis: bot now, allace! oure realme abidis ane othir chance; for we ar attenuat and brokin be tyranny of the proud Maximiane, quhilk hes bene more noisum to us than ony ennimes nicht haif bene, quhen he, be avarice, socht the empire of the warld; and we ar sa waistit be the same, that we maye haif na confidence of victorie, gif we fecht be our awin pissance. Now we have na esperance be support of Romanis; and sen we

" ar insufficient, be our awin power, to resist our ennimes in times
 " cuming, how may we plesantly debait in sic perrellus aventure?
 " Thir cruell tyrannis our ennimes, nocht brokin with lang weris,
 " laubour, nor distres, hes nothir dreid of God, man, nor of deith,
 " to be revengit of the injuris done to thaim, sa mony yeris afore,
 " be us. Amang thaim is na deference of age, nor of kind; man
 " and wife equale rageand in battall, but ony mercy. Thair che-
 " valry is nocht bot wod fury; for thay rejoise in na thing sa mekill
 " as in murdir of agit men and barnis, and sielik febill personnis,
 " with sic insacieble thirst, that thay eschame nocht to drink the
 " blud of thair ennimes; and delitis in nocht bot in thief and slaugh-
 " ter. Thairfore, we mon othir have peace with thame, or ellis
 " suffer, at thair will, ma importable cruelteis than afore: and
 " thocht peace be richt schamefull to us, yit better is to have pa-
 " cience for ane time, than to lois our realme and liberte, with more
 " shame. I say thir wourdys for na desire of conques or honouris,
 " bot onlie for the singulare affection that I beir unto your common
 " weill. Avise, thairfore, quhidder the samin be mair frutefull or
 " noisum thairto."

The Britonis war richt commovit that Conanus persuadit thame to peace; and said, Thay wald have na amite with Scottis nor Pichtis, for the sindry cruelteis done be thame. Thay knew als, said thay, how he spak nocht for thair commoun weill, bot onlie to find sum occasioun, be his slightis, to usurpe the crown of Britane. At last, quhen the nobillis had tane lang consultatioun in this mater, oftentimes lamentand thair unhappy chance, and knawing the estait of man sa miserable, that it tendis more swiftlie to ruine than to ony hicht; be counsall of obstinat and inopertune pepill, thay finalie concludit to assemble thair ordinance, baith of men and fensable wemen, to invaid the Scottis and Pichtis; and to convene at ane prefixit day and place.

Conanus, richt sorowful for thir doingis, ischit fra the counsall; saying, " I tak the Eternall God in witnes, I assent nocht to this furius sentence; and belevis na thing mair, than the anciant and noble realme of Britane to cum to irrecoverable dammage, throw sic fuliche counsal, in our dayis."

Ane certane of Britonis, heirand Conanus regrait thair doingis on this sort, said, “ Thy auctorite soll nocht be of pissance to stop “ this sentence:” and efter that thay had pullit furth thair swerdis, thay drove him throw the body. The skry arrais haistelie efter his slauchter, be freindis of Conanus, and socht his slayaris in thair maist furie: throw quhilk the peple wes devudit in twa partis, and nicht nocht be pecifyit be auctorite of the nobillis, quhill ane huge nowmer wer slane on athir sidis.

Chap. Sixteenth.

Of gret vassalage done be the nobil Grahame, at the Wallis of Abircorne and Adrian; and how the Scottis conquest al landis betwix Tyne and Humber. Of the Epistill send be Britonis to Etius; and of his answer.



L sone as the fame wes brocht to London, that the Scottis and Pichtis had maid cruell incursionis in the landis of Britonis, ane huge feir and terroure went throw all the ciete. And quhen the Britonis wer takand thair consultatioun, thouht it wes in vane, how thay suld dres al materis; come the vailycant Grahame, with anc company of chosin men, to the wall of Abircorne, and brak doun the same in all partis so halelie, that he left na thing thairof standing, more than remanis nowe, in thir dayis: and for that cause this wall wes callit, efter, Grahamis Dike.

Sic thingis done, Grahame went to the wall of Adriane, fornens the Ireland seis, and kest it down on the samin maner; and slew al the weirmen that wer laid for defence thairof. The residew of Britonis, heirand nocht bot murdir and rummissing of deand pepill, savit thaimself be flight.

The wall of Adriane bet doun to the grond in this maner, the Scottis, desiring na thing mair than to revenge the injuris done afore be Britonis, proclamit, be generall edict, na fensabill, bot agit

and febill personis, to be saiffit. Bot this edict wes nocht observat. So far enragit wes the army in cruelte, that thay past, with fire and swerd, throw all the boundis liand betwix Tyne and Humber ; and wrocht on the inhabitantis thairof sic heirschip and slauchter, that thay wer othir slane, or chasit out of the centre.

Thir tithingis schawin to the nobillis of Britane at London, movit thaim to seik new remeid aganis thair ennimes. Finalie, quhen thay had lang avisit in this mater, it wes concludit to send two sindry ambassatouris, for expedition of thair materis : ane of thaim to pas to the confederat Kingis of Scottis and Pichtis, and to gif thaim frelie all the landis liand beyond Humber, with large soumis of money ; swa thay wald condiscend to peace, and desist fra truble of thaim in times cuming : the secund ambassat to pas to Etius, Capitane of France, deplorand thair calamiteis ; with this epistill :

“ To Etius, thryis Consul, the regrait of Britonis.

“ QUHEN our forbearis first randerit thame to Romanis, thay
 “ traistit, be mony reasonis, that the senat and pepill of Rome wes
 “ the port and sicker refuge of all pepill cuming under thair empire.
 “ Bot we, thair posterite, be tresonable slight of Maximiane agane
 “ our common weill, ar sa brokin in our strenth, be our continewe-
 “ ance at thair opinioun, that we ar bot ane facill pray to our enni-
 “ mes : throw quhilk it apperis, that othir the Romanis ar degene-
 “ rat fra the manheid and illuster dedis of thair eldaris ; or ellis
 “ thair braid empire, be vengeance of God, beginnis to decline, and
 “ gevin be pray to every pepill. Nochtheles, gif the fatale chance
 “ of time and weirdis covatis this our realme to be dissolvit fra
 “ amite and freinschipe of Romanis, constrainig us to servitude of
 “ othir barbar peple ; we cure nocht quhat pepill have dominiouin
 “ of us, sa that we eschew the tyranny of Scottis and Pichtis :
 “ quhais bludy swerd lies wrocht on us sic heirschip and calamite,
 “ that we knawe nocht quhat way our miserabill livis sal be savit,
 “ sen all our guddis ar lost and tint. Thay have nowe bet doun
 “ the wallis and strenthis quhilkis suld have defendit us fra thair

“ cruelteis: syne entrin in the Romane province, with al maner of
“ cruelteis; waistit our landis; brint our townis and castellis; bet
“ doun our wallis to the ground; and slane our wiffis, childrin, and
“ agit personis: beside infinite othir displesairis, quhilkis we may
“ nocht writ for doloure. We, the residew of thaim, ar chaist and
“ drevin to the seis: and becaus we may nocht have passage throw
“ the samin, we ar drevin agane in our ennimes handis; quhair-
“ throw, na esperance apperis of releif, bot othir to be slane, or
“ peris in the fletand scis. Beseikand the, heirefore, gif thou re-
“ gardis othir our faithful kindnes, or yit the glore of Romane
“ majeste; to quhilk we bene sa mony yeris obeisant, to suffer nocht
“ us, the freindis of the senat and pepill of Rome, to be thirllit to
“ sic undantit cruelte of ennimes; bot send us support in haist, that
“ we be nocht mair cruelly betrasit be Romanis, than tint be bar-
“ bar pepill: othirwayis sic thingis sall be ane perpetual memory
“ to our successouris, to have na confidence nor societe with Ro-
“ manis.”

Etius answerit, That he was richt sorrowfull that the Romane empire was persewit sa on every hand, that he nicht skarsly defend France fra invasioun of barbar pepill; and, thairefore, he nicht send na support in Britane. Nochtheles, he exhortit thaim to maik the best defence thay nicht, in esperance of better fortoun; for quhen the Romanis had pecifyit all trubill, the Scottis and Pichtis suld be condignely punist for thair attemptatis.

Chap. Seventeenth.

How the Britonis war vincust, and maid tributar to Scottis and Pichtis; and of the conditionis of peace gevin to the said Britonis.

IN the mene time, quhen this awnswere come fra Etius, the ambassatouris returnit fra the Scottis and Pichtis; and schew, that the petitionis of Britonis war na thing plesand to the said Scottis and Pichtis: for thay wald not ceis fra ithand slauchter and heirschip of Britonis, quhill othir thair realme was conquest, or ellis frely randerit to thaim. The Britonis war richt affrayit be thir wourdis: nochtheles, thay enforceit thaimself to curage, and ruschit haistely to harnes; detesting thair effeminate sleuth, be quhilk thay gaif audacie to thair ennimes, and tint the victory be thair cowartry, that thay conquest afore with thair victory and manheid.

The Scottis and Pichtis, weil advertist that the Britonis war repulsit be Etius of thair desiris, gaderit thair pepil out of all boundis under thair dominion; and come, with displayit baneris, aganis thair ennimes. The Britonis, in the samin maner, war advertist be the exploratouris, how thair ennimes war cumand on thame, with sic pissance, that thay micht not be resistit. Bot than thay began to curs and wary thaim that gaif thaim counsall to fecht aganis sa pissant ennimes, in dammage of thair common weil. Yit, to saif thame fra mair displesour, thay send othir ambassatouris to the confiderat kingis, desiring peace, as afore: and becaus thay culd purches na peace, bot gif thay war randerit, with wiffis, childrin, and guddis; throw extreme ire on the ta side, and disperation on the tothir side, thay maid thame all, with ane consent, to battal. Incontinent, be blast of trumpat, baith the armyis junxit. Followit ane maist terribill bergane; for the Britonis, deliverit to revenge thair deith, and to de for defence of thair realm, set on thair ennimes with gret preis,

and mony of thaim bure unto the ground: than ilk ane, desiring to support othir, ruschit togidder with sa obstinat mind, that thay semit na thing to regard thair deith: throw quhilk mony of the Scottis and Pichtis quhilkis faucht in the first battal, war neir discomfist. Graham, the vailleant capitane, seand his freindis in extreme dangeir, send ane gret cumpany of Ilis men, fra the carage, in thair support. Incontinent, the Scottis and Pichtis, that war afore woundit and discomfist, renewit battal: than the Britonis, ouerset with multitude of ennimes rusching apon thaim on all sidis, and disparit of victory, fled to ane mos, nocht far fra the feild. The cariagemen, seing the battal discomfist, left thair cariage, and slew thair ennimes heir and thair, quhare thay war tane, ouerset in the mossis. In this battall war slane **iv.m** Scottis, and of Britonis **xv.m**.

The princes and nobillis of Britane war sa halely slane in this battall, that the residew of Britonis nicht mak na defence for thair realme; and thairfore, be generall consent, thay send thair oratouris to the victorius kingis, humely desiring peace under quhat conditioun thay plesit.

The confederat kingis, na les movit be the sorrowfull chance falling to Britonis, than with the present calamite falling to thaimself, condiscendit to have peace under thir conditionis: The Britonis, in times cuming, sall ressave na Romane capitane with armyis above thaim in Britane; and sall suffer na Romanis, Gallis, Saxonis, nor yit na othir pepill that ar ennimes to Scottis and Pichtis, to pas throw thair landis. Thay sall nothir treit peace nor alliance, nor yit make weiraganis ony pepill, but command of the confederat kingis. Thay sall fecht, quhen thay ar chargit, in support of Scottis and Pichtis, aganis all pepil. Al the landis liand beyond Humber sal remane perpetually under the empire of Scottis and Pichtis; and the Britonis to pas out of the samin, with thair wiffis, childrin, and gudis, but ony tary. Finaly, thay sal pay **lx.m** pundis amang thair weirinen; and yeirly, in times cuming, **xx.m** pundis to the confederat kingis, in maner of tribute: and for securite heirof, thay sal geif ane c men in oistage, at the will of the confederat kingis; ilk man na eldar than **xxx** yeris, and na youngar than **xviii**

yeris. Gif ony of thir pointis war brokin, the peace to be dissolvit in the self.

The peace ratifyit on this maner, the ile of Albion was brocht to better quiet than afore. Britane was tane fra the empire of Romanis in this maner, and maid tributar to Scottis and Pichtis. ccccxcvi yeris efter that Julius Cesar maid it first tributar to Romanis, quhilk was in the vii yeir of King Eugenius; fra the incarnatioun, ccccxxxvi yeris; fra the empire of Brutus, the first King of Britane, ane M DCIII yeris. Fra thens the Britonis began to decline, baith in thair manheid, landis, and honouris.

I knaw weil this history that I have schawin, of Maximus, Romane Capitane in Britane; and of Octavius and Dioneth, Kingis of Britane; and als of the cuming of Saxonis in Albioun, quhilk I intend now to schawe; is richt discrepant fra the Croniklis of Britonis, maid be Galfrede. And yit thair suld nane have admiration thairof; for the authouris that I follow, as Eutropius, Paulus Diaconus, Beda, Veremundus, with othir mair recent and expert historianis, concordis with this Galfrede, nouthir in the narratioun of the historie, nor yit in the dait of yeris. We think, thairfore, it is mair sowndand to the verite, to follow mony provin and attentik authouris in descriptioun of oure historie, concurring with the historie of Romanis baith in narratioun and dait of yeris, than to follow the said Galfrede, writand but ony testimoniall of othir authouris, and singular in his awin opinioun.

Chap. Eighteenth.

*Of mony nobill Clerkis and Sanctis in sindry partis of the Warld ;
and of sindry prodiges and mervellis sene in Albion ; and of
Fynmakcoule.*

ONY nobil men war in thir days ; as, Anselmus, Philippus Hilarius. Amang us wer in thay days Palladius, quhilk was send be Celestine, Pape, to confound the heresy of Pelagius, risin than in sindry partis of Albion. This Palladius was the first bischop that bure authorite amang the Scottis, and was creat be the Pape. The bischoppis afore him warcreat be votis allanerlie of the monkis and preistis, namit Culdeis. This Palladius purgit the Scottis and Pichtis of mony vane superstitionis and ritis of Gentilis, usit in thay dayis ; and, thairfore, he was callit the Apostill of Scottis : and deceissit in ane town of Mernis, namit Fordoun : quhare his blissit body restis yet, haldin in gret veneration amang the pepill. His banis war laitly translatit be ane nobil man, William Scheves, Archebischop of Sanct Andros ; and put in ane silver cais, with mony solempne ceremonyis : fra the incarnation of God, ane M ccccxciv yeris. This Palladius maid Sanct Serf bischop, and send him in Orknay, to instruck the rude pepill thairof in the faith ; als, he gaif the sacrament of baptem to Tervanus, and maid him Archebischop of Pichtis.

About this time was send fra Pape Celestine, Sanct Patrik in Ireland, to defend the samin fra heresy of Pelagius : throw quhilk the Cristin faith began to incres in Ireland and Albion.

Mony mervellis war sene in sindry partis of Albion, afore the Britonis faucht aganis the Scottis and Pichtis. The mone beand in opposition, quhen it is maist round, apperit suddanly as it war foure nukit. In York war mony schouris of blude. The branchis and levis of treis war strokin with thonder, and wederit, in mony partis of Albioun. The merkat gait of London raif with ane huge

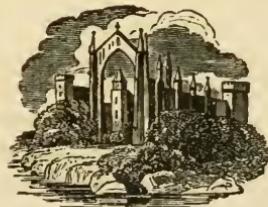


gaip, and mony housis beside sank. The pepil preichit, thir signs to cum in dammage of the Britonis: nochtheles, the same wes mesit be the preistis, quhilk commandit na credence to be gevin to sic fantasyis.

It is said that Fynmakcoule, the sonne of Coelus, Scottisman, was in thir days; ane man of huge statoure, of xvii cubitis of hicht. He was ane gret huntar, and richt terribill, for his huge quantite, to the pepill: of quhome ar mony vulgar fabillis amang us, nocht unlike to thir fabillis that ar rehersit of King Arthure. And becaus his dedis is nocht authorist be autentik authouris, I will rehers na thing thairof; bot declare the remanent geistis of King Eugenius, and othir nobillis.

And sa endis heir, the Sevint Buke of thir Croniklis.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.





COLUMBIA UNIVERSITY LIBRARIES

This book is due on the date indicated below, or at the expiration of a definite period after the date of borrowing, as provided by the rules of the Library or by special arrangement with the Librarian in charge.

C28(1140)M100



0035524197

941.01

B633

Boece

History and chronicles of Scot-

941.01

B633

1

DEC 1

